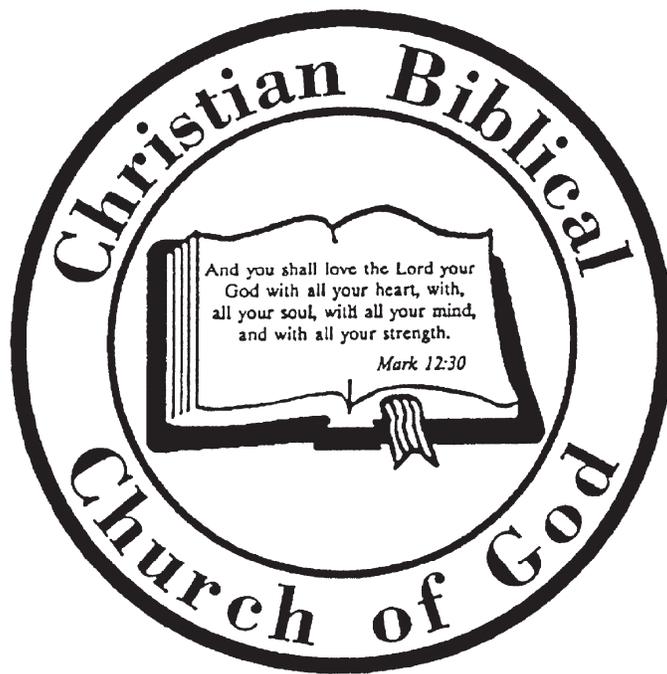


Refuting Sunday Keeping



Transcript Book

By Fred R. Coulter

© 2012, 2016
Fred R. Coulter
Christian Biblical Church of God
P. O. Box 1442
Hollister, California 95024-1442

All rights reserved. Except for brief excerpts for review purposes, no part of this publication may be reproduced or used in any form or by any means without the written permission of the copyright owner. This includes electronic and mechanical photocopying or recording, as well as the use of information storage and retrieval systems.

DOCUMENT *of* COMPLETION

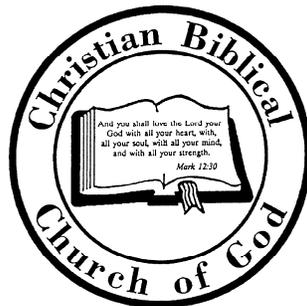
THIS ACKNOWLEDGES THAT I



HAVE SUCCESSFULLY COMPLETED

Refuting Sunday-keeping

Series of 16 sermons by Fred R. Coulter



Signature

Date

- | | |
|---|----------------------|
| <input type="checkbox"/> Refuting Sunday-Keeping I | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Refuting Sunday-Keeping II | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Refuting Sunday-Keeping III | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Refuting Sunday-Keeping IV | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Refuting Sunday-Keeping V | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Refuting Sunday-Keeping VI | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Refuting Sunday-Keeping VII | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Refuting Sunday-Keeping VIII | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Refuting Sunday-Keeping IX | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Refuting Sunday-Keeping X | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Refuting Sunday-Keeping XI | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Refuting Sunday-Keeping XII | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Refuting Sunday-Keeping XIII | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Refuting Sunday-Keeping XIV | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Refuting Sunday-Keeping XV | Date completed _____ |
| <input type="checkbox"/> Rome's Challenge | Date completed _____ |

Contents

Booklet

	PAGE
Refuting Sunday Keeping I -----	1 – 12
Refuting Sunday Keeping II -----	13 – 25
Refuting Sunday Keeping III -----	26 – 41
Refuting Sunday Keeping IV -----	42 – 53
Refuting Sunday Keeping V -----	54 – 67
Refuting Sunday Keeping VI -----	68 – 79
Refuting Sunday Keeping VII -----	80 – 91
Refuting Sunday Keeping VIII -----	92 – 103
Refuting Sunday Keeping IX -----	104–115
Refuting Sunday Keeping X -----	116–127
Refuting Sunday Keeping XI -----	128–139
Refuting Sunday Keeping XII -----	140–151
Is the Death Penalty Wrong? XIII -----	152–161
What is the Administration of Death? XIV -----	162–173
What Happens to the Uncalled? XV -----	174–183
Rome’s Challenge XVI -----	184–196

Compact Disc #1

[When included]

Tracks 1 & 2 Refuting Sunday Keeping I

Tracks 3 & 4 Refuting Sunday Keeping II

Tracks 5, 6, 7, 8 Refuting Sunday Keeping III

Tracks 9 & 10 Refuting Sunday Keeping IV

Tracks 11 & 12 Refuting Sunday Keeping V

Tracks 13 & 14 Refuting Sunday Keeping VI

Tracks 15 & 16 Refuting Sunday Keeping VII

Tracks 17 & 18 Refuting Sunday Keeping VIII

Tracks 19 & 20 Refuting Sunday Keeping IX

Compact Disc #2

Tracks 1 & 2 Refuting Sunday Keeping X

Tracks 3 & 4 Refuting Sunday Keeping XI

Tracks 5 & 6 Refuting Sunday Keeping XII

Tracks 7 & 8 Is the Death Penalty Wrong XIII

Tracks 9 & 10 What is the Administration of Death? XIV

Tracks 11 & 12 What Happens to the Uncalled? XV

Tracks 13 & 14 Rome's Challenge XVI

Refuting Sunday Keeping

Foreword

This book contains the transcripts of sixteen sermons delivered by Fred R. Coulter on *Refuting Sunday Keeping*. They provide the spiritual tools needed by a Christian to explain the truth about why we should observe the Seventh Day Sabbath rather than Sunday. This series is even more meaningful when used in conjunction with the Holy Sabbath Series.

Satan has deceived the whole world and that has put a barrier between man and the true God. This study explains that Christ was not resurrected on Sunday as many have falsely believed and why people say they are 'allowed' to keep Sunday rather than the Sabbath God instituted. It also discusses the Code of Jewish Law and hedge put around the traditions of Judaism. You will study about the administration of death and what happens to the uncalled. The use of Sunday as the Sabbath of God is thoroughly refuted in this book of sermon transcripts. The main points brought out about the Sabbath in each transcript is listed as follows.

Refuting Sunday-Keeping I Christ Was Not Resurrected on Sunday

This transcript explains the actual time of the resurrection of Jesus Christ. Also covered is the topic of what sin is along with the meaning of the Passover Day in the New Testament. Another topic spoken of is exactly how God the Father and His Son Jesus Christ want the Passover to be kept.

Refuting Sunday-Keeping II Why They Say "They're allowed to Keep Sunday"

This transcript explains how so many teachers of the Bible have wrongly twisted the Word of God so that it seems to say things that it really does not say. The truth that Sabbath-keeping by those who keep Sabbath is not a means of justification in place of the sacrifice of Jesus Christ, but all too many want to claim that is what Sabbath-keeping is.

Refuting Sunday-Keeping III New Testament Command for Sabbath-keeping

This transcript is a continuation of Refuting Sunday-Keeping II. It shows, from the Bible, that there is a command to keep the Sabbath in the New Testament. God has absolutely decreed that His Sabbath Command was continued beyond the Old Testament Covenant.

Refuting Sunday-Keeping IV The Law of God vs the Law of Judaism

This transcript shows more of how a distorted understanding of God's Word has come about through emphasizing some of the scriptures while ignoring others. Also noted and explained is how the Law of Judaism is but the teaching of men as a substitute for the teachings of God.

Refuting Sunday-Keeping V
The Burden of the Code of Jewish Law

This transcript gives the truth about the commandments and the laws of God: They were given to mankind because they were and are for the good of mankind. Never were they a yoke of bondage as the Code of Jewish Law was. The differences between the commandments and statutes of God versus the Code of Jewish Law is revealed to the reader.

Refuting Sunday-Keeping VI
Spiritual Circumcision of the Heart

This transcript deals with the heart of man being spiritually circumcised. It shows that a person with the Spirit of God in their hearts seek to obey God's every Word and that those without God's Spirit cannot teach or do obedience to God.

Refuting Sunday-Keeping VII
Did Jesus Really Cancel the Sabbath?

This transcript thoroughly researches out and with proof shows that in no way did Jesus Christ, the Son of God, teach not to obey the Sabbath of God. It proves that loving God is the keeping of His commandments.

Refuting Sunday-Keeping VIII
Handling the Word of God Deceitfully

In this transcript the reader comes to understand that if you do not obey the Word of God and do what God says to do that you are trying to sit in the seat of God. Those that do this also, in addition to setting their own standard, try to corrupt the Word of God and also handle the Word of God deceitfully.

Refuting Sunday-Keeping IX
Sabbath Observance Before Mt. Sinai

This transcript goes deeper with the history of observance of the Sabbath. It shows that the Sabbath was being kept before the law was given to Moses on Mount Sinai. The Sabbath itself is part of the Creation of God.

Refuting Sunday-Keeping X
"You'll Know Them by Their Fruits"

This transcript deals with knowing the people of God from those who say they are of God but follow their own understanding. When people try to come to God while justifying their own ways they will never be able to be at one with God.

Refuting Sunday-Keeping XI
Never on a Sunday

This Transcript emphasizes that God made the Sabbath holy—and the will of God will be accomplished in creation. It is noted that Jesus Christ, the apostles, believers, and the New Testament Church kept the Sabbath and the Holy Days. Proof is given that in all the scriptures no basis is found for Sunday-keeping at all.

Refuting Sunday-Keeping XII
Administration of Death Vs Administration of the Spirit

This transcript deals with the administration of death as written in II Corinthians Chapter 3. It also deals with how the Spirit of God inscribes the Word of God to the hearts of men. Explained is how the Law itself is not an instrumentality of death.

Refuting Sunday-Keeping XIII
Is the Death Penalty Wrong?

In reading the transcript it will be found what Jesus Christ said about the death penalty for murder. It is clearly shown, through this detailed study of what the Bible says about murder, that God mandates and practices the death penalty for sin. Yet it is shown that God also believes in repentance by sinners for sin. A good understanding will be found regarding killing versus the subject of murder through reading this transcript.

Refuting Sunday-Keeping XIV
What Is the Administration of Death?

Here a study is found regarding the administration of death that God covenanted with the nations that sovereign nations were to administer. It is not the Law that the nations were responsible for but rather they were to be responsible before God to physically carry out the administration of death. It shows how the Old Covenant with the Covenant between God and the nation of Israel that the sovereign nation of Israel was to practice the administration of death. But the New Covenant with the New Testament Church of God did not give the administration of death to the church: The Church of God is not a sovereign nation on earth.

Refuting Sunday-Keeping XV
What Happens to the Uncalled?

This transcript answers questions such as what happens to people who know some of the truth of God but yet don't know all the Truth of God or reject the Truth of God. The Bible emphasizes that what God created is not going to tell God what to do and how to do it.

Refuting Sunday-Keeping XVI
Rome's Challenge

In this transcript there is a study of Satan's lies regarding the Will of God and how Christ rejected Satan's lies and did what God said to do in His Word. An in-depth discussion is found regarding Protestants accepting the authority of the Catholic Church and rejecting the authority of the Bible through their observance of the Catholic Sabbath Day over the Bible Sabbath Day

Special thanks goes to Nancy Spaller, Laila Patterson and Bonnie Orswell for transcribing the sermons.

Refuting Sunday-Keeping I Christ was not Resurrected on Sunday

Fred R. Coulter

This is number one in a series which is an extension from the Holy Sabbath series. This will cover the reasons why Sunday-keeping is not Scriptural. In other words, what we will do in this series, we will refute Sunday-keeping from the Scriptures.

As we saw last time in going through the first day of the week there were no meetings whatsoever that were held on Sunday as a church meeting, with the exception of Acts 20, where we saw that it was really a Sabbath night, first day of the week affair that they were doing there. It was an extension of the Sabbath and not the first day of the week.

I have a book and it's called *Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction, Twenty-Five Reasons Why Christians Keep Sunday* by Dr. Russell K. Tardo, and we're going to cover every one of these 25 reasons. I don't know how long it's going to take us, but I tell you what, in that are all of the militant objections that the Sunday-keepers have and where they are striving to make a case for the first day of the week.

Some of the things are so outlandish that they really need to be answered directly. We'll start out and we're going to do number one, which *they claim Jesus rose on Sunday*. So, therefore, since Jesus rose on Sunday it's okay to keep Sunday. That has nothing to do with the fact that it's okay to keep Sunday and [it was] never authorized it out of the Scriptures.

Let's begin here with this and let's just begin from just a little bit different point of view. Let's understand something that's very, very important.

1. All through the New Testament we know that *sin is the transgression of the Law and the wages of sin is death*.
2. The Law is that which then shows us what we need to do, shows us what sin is, and that is how we understand that we need to keep the Sabbath in the New Testament.

We will thoroughly go through every one of these things to see exactly how these things are done.

First of all we need to understand something very important which Christians do not understand, that is Christians in the world. I will call them 'professing Christians,' or 'worldly Christians,' that is *those who claim that they are worshiping Christ, who keep Sunday and Easter and Christmas*.

Because they keep those days, they do not understand anything concerning

- the Passover
- the Feast of Unleavened Bread
- the Day of Pentecost
- Trumpets
- Atonement
- Tabernacles
- the Last Great Day

Those are the only Holy Days that are in the Bible which we are to keep. Let's start with the one concerning Christ, which has to do with His sacrifice, because it's very important that we understand *exactly when Christ was crucified*. That is so important because it's basic to understanding when, He was resurrected.

Let's go to Matthew 26, and let's see what Jesus Himself said. Then we will understand: ***Jesus was crucified on the Passover Day!*** That's *important to understand*. So let's see what He says here in Matthew 26:2: "You know that after two days the Passover takes place, and the Son of man is delivered up to be crucified." On the Passover Day was when He was betrayed and when He was crucified. Now we're going to see some very important things concerning why then it was on that day.

Let's go to 1-Corinthians 5, and let's understand what Jesus is called. Many people, not knowing that He was crucified on the Passover Day, the fourteenth day of the first month according to the calculated Hebrew calendar, so they do not understand that He is called 'our Passover.' As a matter of fact, we are going to examine this from a little bit different point of view, and we are going to see that here is a direct command by the Apostle Paul to Gentiles that they are to keep the Feast of Unleavened Bread.

We need to understand that the Passover is on the fourteenth day of the first month and the Feast of Unleavened Bread begins the very next day. We'll see that command in Lev. 23, but what is important here is what is said in the New Testament. A lot of people say, 'Well, all of that was nailed to the cross and we don't have to keep those days.' We will answer that in this series about the *Twenty-Five Reasons Why Christians Keep Sunday*. When we are done, we are going to see that it will amount to twenty-five reasons why Christians ought to keep the Sabbath.

Now let's begin right here in 1-Corinthians 5:6: "Your glorying *is* not good.... [They were glorying in sin. There was a man there who was actually committing incest with his stepmother.] ...Don't you know that a little leaven leavens the whole lump?" That may sound strange to people who have never kept the Feast of Unleavened Bread, but leaven during the Feast of Unleavened Bread is a type of sin, and how it comes into our life and it grows and it multiples and it increases. So God wanting us to live sinless lives, God wanting us to be aware of what sin is that we won't transgress the Law, therefore we have the Feast of Unleavened Bread.

Verse 7: "Therefore, purge out the old leaven, so that you may become a new lump, *even* as you are unleavened. **For Christ our Passover was sacrificed for us.**"

That's why the Passover is so important. If you don't have the book, *The Christian Passover*, you write in for it and we'll send it to you. It goes through and shows every detail of the Passover, all about the various facets of it, beginning with the covenant that was with Abraham all the way down through the children of Israel and on into the time when Christ was crucified. He was crucified on the Passover Day; therefore, He is called our Passover. Because of what He did, God passes over our sins. Just like on the Passover Day God passed over the firstborn of the children of Israel in Egypt before He led them out of the land of Egypt.

Verse 8: "For this reason, let us keep the Feast... [This is not referring to the Feast of Passover, this is the Feast of Unleavened Bread, which follows the very next day after Passover.] ...not with old leaven, nor with *the* leaven of malice and wickedness, but with *the* unleavened *bread* of sincerity and Truth." That's the whole reason for Christianity that *inside* there is the change—*inside*!

- Christ is in you
- the Truth of God is in you
- the Holy Spirit is in you

that you become a new person through conversion.

Let's understand something else before we get back to the Old Testament. Let's come to the Gospel of John, the very first chapter, and let's see that Jesus is called the Lamb of God. You put the two Scriptures together.

- Christ our Passover is sacrificed for us.
- Therefore, let us keep the Feast, that's the Feast of Unleavened Bread.

What we're really dealing with here is not an endorsement of Sunday at all. ***No, there is no endorsement of Sunday at all!*** What we're dealing

with is the Scriptural endorsement of the Passover and the Feast of Unleavened Bread, which we will see is both Old Testament and New Testament.

It's not just that these things were done away. We'll see a little bit later they never were done away, but the meaning was added to, and ***the sacrifice of Jesus Christ superseded all of the animal sacrifices.*** John 1:29, this is John the Baptist talking: "On the next day, John sees Jesus coming to him, and he says, 'Behold the Lamb of God, Who takes away the sin of the world' He is the Lamb of God, Christ our Passover, so you combine the two together and Christ is our Passover Lamb.

If you want your sins taken away, you have to keep the Passover; you have to keep the Christian Passover. Easter comes from Babylon. Easter is pure paganism and should never have anything to do whatsoever with Christianity. How that lie got into the Church is another whole story, but we won't cover that at this present time.

I know a lot of people are going to say, 'Well, that's the Old Testament. That's the old law and we have been delivered from that.' Well, no we haven't! God is going to judge the whole world by His commandments. As a matter of fact, God is going to judge your life by how you keep the Ten Commandments, including Sabbath-keeping. And also then including if you keep Sunday, Sunday is the day that *God never authorized* at all for anything except one Feast day, called Pentecost, which we'll cover a little later.

Let's concentrate here on what God says right here. I want you to understand something that's very important: The weekly Sabbath is that which gives overarching structure to the Holy Days, which follow. Leviticus 23:1: "And the LORD spoke to Moses, saying, 'Speak to the children of Israel and say to them, "*Concerning* the appointed feasts of the LORD... [The Sabbath is a Feast of God and it belongs to Him—the *Feast of the Lord*. He owns it.] ...which you shall proclaim *to be* holy convocations, even these are My appointed Feast. Six days shall work be done, but the seventh day *is* the Sabbath of rest, a Holy convocation. You shall not do any work. *It is* a Sabbath to the LORD in all your dwellings'" (vs 1-3).

As we've seen—the admissions of the Catholics, the admissions of the Protestants—that you search the Bible from Genesis to Revelation and ***there is not one single word authorizing the keeping of Sunday.*** Everywhere it enforces the Sabbath and that is Old Testament and New Testament. Some are going to say that these are ceremonial laws and that the ceremonial laws were those laws which were the rituals of the priesthood. Well, these are ***not*** ceremonial laws. These are

Feasts of God on which some ceremonial laws were added.

Verse 4: “These are the appointed Feasts of the LORD, Holy convocations which you shall proclaim in their appointed seasons.... [It does not include Christmas, and it does not include Easter. It does not include any other of the pagan days that are now called ‘Christian’ whatsoever.] ...In the fourteenth *day* of the first month...” (vs 4-5).

That’s according to the calculated Hebrew calendar. Because the way God has set His Feasts in season, are according to His calendar. That calculated Hebrew calendar—we can go back and prove that clear back in 538_{B.C.}, 515_{B.C.}, 5_{B.C.} when Jesus was born, and 30_{A.D.} when He was crucified—is accurate to the very day as substantiated and evidenced in the Scriptures; no other calendar system is authorized by God. The Roman calendar we live by, we have to coordinate the calculated Hebrew calendar with it so we can understand it in terms of today’s day. But the first month generally in God’s calculated Hebrew calendar is in March and April, just depending on how it falls.

“...the fourteenth *day* of the first month, between the two evenings, is the LORD’S Passover.... [*The Christian Passover* book explains everything concerning this.] ...And on the fifteenth day of the same month... [the very next day] ...is the Feast of Unleavened Bread to the LORD. You must eat unleavened bread seven days. On the first day you shall have a Holy convocation”” (vs 5-7). Meaning, *it is a Sabbath*.

We’re going to see something very important concerning the crucifixion of Christ, because that has a bearing as to when He was resurrected. We will understand that the three days and three nights cannot bring you to Sunday. Furthermore, we need to understand that in 30_{A.D.} the calculated Hebrew calendar shows that the Passover, the fourteenth day of the first month, was on a Wednesday. Of course the days in the Bible begin at sunset, so sunset to sunset—Tuesday sunset to Wednesday sunset.

Now,, in line with this, I have a sermon that I gave, *Which Came First, the Day or the Sacrifices? You will see that the day came first!* The Sabbath Day, as we saw, was given at creation. The Sabbath was given before any of the sacrificial laws were given. It’s the same way here with the Holy Days, because, the Passover in Egypt for Israel was on the fourteenth. And on the fifteenth they came out of Egypt, beginning the first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread. Those are the days and the time in which Jesus was crucified.

Let’s go back to the New Testament and come to Matthew 26:18, because we’re going to see

that Jesus and the apostles kept the Passover. There is where Jesus changed the meaning of the symbols from the roasted lamb and bitter herbs to the unleavened bread and the wine. That’s important to understand. Now let’s also realize this: Since God gave the laws, which He did, and God gave the commandments, which He did, if there is going to be any change in the meaning or there’s going to be a fulfillment of that day as Jesus said He came to fulfill—He came to fulfill the Passover to be our Passover—*then God is the One in the person of Christ Who gave us the new meaning of the Passover Day*. Not just passing over the firstborn in the land of Egypt, as God did in Exo. 12, but now it is Christ our Passover, and *Christ passing our sins*, as those who are the called and chosen of Christ.

Let’s begin in Matthew 26:18 after the disciples asked: Where will You that we prepare the Passover?: “And He said, ‘Go into the city to such a man, and say to him, ‘The Teacher says, ‘My time is near; I will keep the Passover with My disciples at your house.’”” Now let’s just stop here and emphasize something very important:

- Jesus kept the Passover.
- The apostles kept the Passover.
- Paul commanded them in 1-Cor. 5 & 11 to keep the Passover and Feast of Unleavened Bread.

That’s after Christ was already resurrected and ascended into heaven. Those were the days that were being kept.

“Then the disciples did as Jesus has directed them, and prepared the Passover.... [not an inkling of Easter] ...And after evening had come, He sat down with the twelve. And as they were eating, He said, ‘Truly I say to you, one of you shall betray Me.’.... [Remember, He said that the Feast of the Passover was coming when the Son of man would be betrayed and crucified, all done in that one single day.] ...And being sorely grieved, each of them began to say to Him, ‘Am I *the one*, Lord?’ But He answered and said, ‘He who dipped *his* hand with Me in the dish, he shall betray Me. The Son of man indeed goes, as it has been written concerning Him...” (vs 19-24). {see sermon series *The Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament*}

You will be absolutely amazed how down to the very words of Christ, while He hung dying on the cross, were recorded in the Old Testament. Everything concerning what Christ would do and what He would be was prophesied in the Law and the Prophets and the Psalms. They are so specific. What is in the Old Testament is not to be rejected—*no way!* The Old Testament and New Testament come together as one book. Most people who are professing Christians do not understand that. Most

of them have never read the first five books of Moses to understand what the Law is, to understand about the Feast days of God. But here is Jesus keeping the Feast days, the disciples keeping the Feast days.

“...as it has been written concerning Him, but woe to that man by whom the Son of man is betrayed! It would be better for him if that man had not been born.’ Then Judas, who was betraying Him, answered and said, ‘Am I the one, Master?’ He said to him, ‘You have said it’” (vs 24-25). Then John 13 records that he took the sop and left.

Another thing that is accompanied with the Passover ceremony, there are three things. John 13 shows that there is foot-washing, and we are to do the foot-washing. Let’s go to John 13 and let’s see what Jesus said concerning foot-washing. How many of the professing Christian churches have foot-washing? Even if they keep their communion service, and you will learn and see that communion service and Eucharist are not from God. You need the book *The Christian Passover* so that you can read and know and understand it. If you think that you understood about Christianity in the past and if you’ve been a professing Christian and a Sunday-keeper, you’ve got so many things you need to learn, it’s absolutely going to be an amazing thing for you to understand.

When you get into the Scriptures and you study the Scriptures and you study the Word of God, and you put it together as the Bible says, ‘line upon line, here a little, there a little, precept upon precept,’ to put it together, and when you understand how profound it is and what God did to send Jesus Christ to be our Savior, to be our sacrifice, then you will understand and realize that ***you can’t take this lightly***. You can’t just flippantly say, ‘Oh, well, we’ll keep Sunday because Christ rose on Sunday.’ *No! He didn’t rise on Sunday at all whatsoever!*

Let’s read it here concerning foot-washing. John 13:2: “And during supper... [not ‘ending’ (KJV)] ... (the devil having already put into the heart of Judas Iscariot, Simon’s son, that he should betray Him), Jesus, knowing that the Father had given all things into His hands, and that He had come from God and was going to God, rose from supper and laid aside His garments; and after taking a towel, He secured it around Himself. Next, He poured water into a washing basin and began to wash the disciples’ feet, and to wipe them with the towel which He has secured. Then He came to Simon Peter; and he said to Him, ‘Lord, are You going to wash my feet?’ Jesus answered and said to him, ‘What I am doing you do not understand now, but you shall know after these things.’ Peter said to Him, ‘You shall not wash my feet...’” (vs 2-8). ‘That’s too demeaning for you, Lord.’ There’s a great lesson.

When you begin to analyze ‘what should I do as a Christian,’ where will you find a true Christian church? One that keeps the commandments of God, a true Church of God:

- that believes in Jesus Christ
- that believes in His sacrifice
- that believes in the grace of God
- that believes in the imputed righteousness which Christ gives to us

—and yet, still keeps the commandments of God, that’s what you need to investigate.

That’s why you also need to get our booklet, *The Beliefs of the Christian Biblical Church of God*. In that you’ll really see they’re not what we believe aside from the Bible, ***it is what the Bible tells us that we should believe in***. There’s a vast difference. People can believe things and they can believe it intently. They can even believe a lie so intently that they will die for it, but you have to believe the Truth. You have to believe God’s Word.

- Do you think that God the Father and Jesus Christ would ever tell us a lie?
- Do you think that They would come and do away with the righteousness that God has established?
- Do you think that God is going to take the sacrifice of Jesus Christ lightly?

No, but there are some people who do. Then they do that with foot-washing and they say it’s too demeaning. One person said, ‘Well, we don’t do foot-washing today, because we don’t walk on dusty roads.’ That’s a carnal excuse, not asking what is the Truth of Scriptures, not asking what did Jesus command, what did Jesus do. So, foot-washing becomes a very important thing.

Verse 7: “Jesus answered him, ‘If I do not wash you, you have no part with Me’.... [Jesus said this, ‘If you do not participate in foot-washing, you have no part with Me.’ That means you have no eternal life and to Peter, you have no apostleship. So, it’s pretty serious.] ...Simon Peter said to Him, ‘Lord, not my feet only, but also my hands and my head’ ... [He thought, ‘Well, let’s do it like the priests did.] ...Jesus said to him, ‘The one who has been washed... [or that is bathed, and that refers to baptism, as you’ll see when you read in *The Christian Passover* book.] ...need to wash anything other than the feet, but is completely clean; and you are clean, but not all.’ For He knew the one who was betraying Him; this was the reason He said, ‘Not all of you are clean’” (vs 7-11).

Verse 12: “Therefore, when He had washed their feet, and had taken His garments, and had sat down again, He said to them, ‘Do you know what I have done to you?.... [He wanted to teach a lesson.

And here's the great lesson, brethren]: ...You call Me the Teacher and the Lord... [That literally means in Greek 'the Master' or 'the Teacher' and 'the Lord,' which is profound in itself, because that means there is none other.] ...and you speak rightly, because I am. Therefore, if I, the Lord and the Teacher, have washed your feet, you also are duty-bound to wash one another's feet" (vs 12-14).

The word 'ought' (KJV) in the English comes from the Greek which means you are obligated or duty-bound to wash one another's feet. How many Sunday-keeping churches do you know actually obey the command to wash one another's feet? They may take the communion, but as you will see in the Passover book, communion is not the Passover. That's a substitute for it. Just like Sunday is an illegal substitute of Sabbath, communion is an illegal substitute for the Passover. Or 'the Lord's Supper,' as they call it, is an illegal substitute for the Passover. This happened on the Passover night. He washed their feet and He says, 'You are duty-bound to do so.'

Verse 15: **"For I have given you an example, to show that you also should do exactly as I have done to you....** [Wherever there is a true Church of God who believes in keeping the commandments of God, who believes in the Passover and Holy Days, will be washing each other's feet as Jesus said. That is important and that is profound.] (Here's the lesson): ...Truly, truly I tell you, **a servant is not greater than his lord, nor a messenger greater than he who sent him.** If you know these things, blessed are you **if you do them**" (vs 16-17). And the Greek is *to practice* them.

Verse 16 again. "Truly, truly I tell you, a servant is not greater than his lord..." Any minister, or any servant, who claims that he represents God, if he says you don't have to wash feet, he is making himself greater than Christ, because Christ said you are duty-bound to wash one another's feet. This becomes very important, because we're going to see the other things concerning the Passover.

On Jesus' last Passover, He instituted the New Covenant, which we are under, and He instituted it with the Passover. That becomes important because Christ is our Passover, He is the 'Lamb of God, slain from the foundation of the world, that takes away the sins of the world.' It's only through the Passover sacrifice of Christ that you and I have forgiveness of sin. We can't take that lightly. We can't go ahead and add things to it that Christ never said we should do, that God never gave us permission to do. We can't arbitrarily change the commands of God, because then we make ourselves greater than Christ.

Let's pick up the rest of it here; let's see what Christ did after the foot-washing. Matthew

26:26: "And as they were eating, Jesus took the bread... [unleavened bread] ...and blessed it; then He broke it and gave it to the disciples, and said, 'Take eat; this is My body.'.... [It says in another place, 'which is broken for you.' In order for you to have the sacrifice of Christ applied to you, you must participate in the Passover, the New Covenant Christian Passover. There must be the foot-washing, then the unleavened bread.] ...And He took the cup; and after giving thanks, He gave it to them, saying, 'All of you drink of it; for this is My blood, the blood of the New Covenant... [Now the King James says 'testament,' but the Greek there is 'diatheke,' which means *covenant* and should be so translated as covenant.] ...which is poured out for many for the remission of sins'" (vs 27-28). That is so important.

The reason I'm bearing in on this, is because I want you to understand the profound significance of the fact that Jesus, as He said, would be betrayed, and He would be crucified on the Passover Day. I want to emphasize something also very important concerning that: ***The day following the Passover is a Sabbath day, the first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread.***

So, when you have the Passover beginning Tuesday sunset to Wednesday sunset that makes the day portion in the middle of the week. That makes Thursday a Sabbath, from Wednesday sunset to Thursday sunset. In the week that Jesus was crucified we have Wednesday, Thursday, Friday, Sabbath. Thursday is called a *high day*, a Sabbath Day. Then there was Friday, which was the day in-between in preparation for the weekly Sabbath. Now when we get that, then we will examine the three days and three nights to see when it was that Jesus was resurrected. This is so basic and profound and important, because Jesus was not resurrected on Sunday. He had to be resurrected just as the weekly seventh day Sabbath was ending.

Let's come here to John 18. I want you to try and figure this out. We'll cover some other Scriptures concerning the three days and three nights here in just a minute, but I want you to see if you can figure from Friday evening to sunrise on Sunday three days and three nights. If you can figure that, you are slick. But I want to tell you something about that slickness—liars figure, but figures never lie. *Jesus never lied!*

Let's understand one other thing that's important here. I need to make this clear to you, also, and this is well explained in *The Christian Passover* book. That's why it's so important that you get it. The Jews keep their Passover a day late. They have combined the first day of Feast of Unleavened Bread and the Passover together, and they keep that on the fifteenth. Whereas we saw the command by God was on the fourteenth. Now the book *The*

Christian Passover explains all about that. So that will help you understand a little bit here.

John 18:28—Jesus was led away, He was taken to trial: “Now then, they led Jesus from Caiaphas to the judgment hall, and it was early. But they... [That is the religious leaders] ...did not go into the judgment hall, so that they would not be defiled, but that they might eat the Passover.” Jesus already ate the Passover the evening before. The Jews were going to eat a day late, but the reason that they would be defiled by going there is because they knew that murder brought blood guiltiness. They didn’t want to be there to judge Him, so that the guilt would be upon them. They didn’t go into the hall, rather they let Pilate do the judgment, thinking that the blood would not be upon them.

Let’s come over here to John 19:13, and we’ll see a little bit more concerning that Passover Day. He was brought in early in the morning to Pilate, and He was tried by Pilate after the Sanhedrin already tried Him before that. They tried Him actually during the night leading up into what we call the morning hours.

John 19:13: “Therefore, after hearing this say, Pilate *had* Jesus led out, and sat down on the judgment seat at a place called *the* Pavement; but in Hebrew, Gabbatha. (It was *the* preparation of the Passover... [the Jews’ Passover] ...and about the sixth hour)... [Six o’clock in the morning. John wrote figuring it by Roman time. Six in the morning was at the sixth hour, because Romans calculated time from midnight, so that was right at sunrise.] ...and he said to the Jews, ‘Behold your King!’ But they cried aloud, ‘Away, away *with Him!* Crucify Him!’ Pilate said to them, ‘Shall I crucify your King?’ The chief priests answered, ‘We have no king but Caesar’” (vs 13-15).

Now we’re coming up to a point that’s going to be very important to understand. Verse 28 goes through the whole thing, the sacrifice of Christ. “After this, Jesus, knowing that all things had now been finished, so that the scripture might be fulfilled, said, ‘I thirst.’ Now a vessel full of vinegar was sitting *there*. And after filling a sponge with vinegar and putting *it* on a *stick of* hyssop... [a long stick] ...they put it up to His mouth. And so, when Jesus had received the vinegar, He said, ‘It is finished’.... [He died] ...And bowing His head, He yielded up *His* spirit” (vs 28-30). That’s important to understand, when He died. We’ll see a parallel account here in just a minute, to show exactly when He died, and this time then is calculated according to Hebrew time rather than Roman time.

Now let’s come to the Gospel of Mark; Jesus died at the ninth hour, which is approximately 3 p.m. in the afternoon, our time today. Mark 15:33: “Now

at *the* sixth hour... [In this case noon, Hebrew time. Sixth hour Roman time is in the morning.] ...darkness came over all the land until *the* ninth hour; and at the ninth hour, Jesus cried with a loud voice, saying, ‘Eloi, Eloi, lama sabachthani?’ which is, being interpreted, ‘My God, My God, why have You forsaken Me?’.... [The very words prophesied in Psa. 22 that David recorded for us.] ...And after hearing *it*, some of those who were standing by said, ‘Look, He is calling for Elijah.’ Then one ran and filled a sponge with vinegar, and after putting *it* on a stick gave *it* to Him to drink, saying, ‘Let *Him* be. Let us see if Elijah comes to take Him down.’ And after crying with a loud voice, Jesus expired. And the veil of the temple was split in two from top to bottom. Then the centurion who stood facing Him, witnessing *the words* that He cried out as He was dying, said, ‘Truly this man was the Son of God’” (vs 33-39). Christ died at 3 p.m. in the afternoon on the fourteenth day of the first month, as our Passover sacrifice.

John 19:31: “The Jews therefore, so that the bodies might not remain on the cross on the Sabbath, because it was a preparation day (**for that Sabbath was a high day**).” And a *high day* means a Holy Day and that means that this Sabbath was not the seventh day weekly Sabbath, but this Sabbath was the first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread, being a Holy Day. Most people don’t understand that there were two Sabbaths in the week in which Jesus was crucified. That’s profound and important to understand, because most people know nothing about the fact that He was our Passover, but they understand He was crucified.

Most people think He was crucified on a Friday, and rose Sunday morning. That’s why I’m going through this in detail, so you can see the whole flow of things is entirely different from what the professing ‘Christian’ world believes. And what they believe is a lie.

- Do you want to believe a lie?
- Do you think that people can receive salvation when they believe lies?
- Do you think that the God of Truth is going to be worshiped with lies?
- Do you think that God is going to honor that lie?

No, the truth is:

- there was the Passover on the fourteenth
- the first day of the Feast of Unleavened on the fifteenth, which then was a Wednesday and a Thursday
- then you have Friday, which is preparation for the regular weekly Sabbath
- then you have the regular weekly Sabbath

That’s important to understand.

In a book that I've written, called *A Harmony of the Gospels*, I've got that all charted out and laid out so you can see it step-by-step-by-step. Remember the profound thing that's so important: ***Christ is our Passover, the Lamb slain from the foundation of the world, which takes away the sins of the world.*** So therefore, that's why He was crucified on the Passover Day.

Let's look at some of the things concerning how long He would be in the tomb, how long He would be there. Let's look at what Jesus said so that we can understand how we can come to the three days and three nights. First of all, begin in the Gospel of Matthew. We'll just sort of take these rights in a row. We're going to see some statements that Jesus made, and we will put them all together so that we understand concerning exactly when He was resurrected from the dead.

We're also going to learn something very important. Let's come here to Matthew 16:21. I'll tell you what it is right now.

- Jesus Christ was the only One Who prophesied how long He would be in the tomb.
- He was the only One Who prophesied when He would be resurrected.

None of the prophets of the Old Testament testified how long, some of them testified that He would die. Some of them testified that He would live forever, but none of them prophesied concerning the resurrection except in one of the Psalms where it says there, Psa. 16, that 'You shall not leave My soul in hell, or that is in the grave, and You will not allow Your Holy One to see corruption.' But that doesn't settle the three day and three night controversy that most people go through.

(go to the next track)

Now let's come to Matthew 16:21 and understand something that you will see here. The disciples didn't understand this, and when Jesus was raised from the dead at first they didn't really believe it, because no one has been raised from the dead other than Christ.

Matthew 16:21: "From that time Jesus began to explain to His disciples that it was necessary for Him to go to Jerusalem, and to suffer many things from the elders and chief priests and scribes, and to be killed, and to be raised the **third day**.... [Peter didn't believe it] ...But after taking *Him* aside, Peter personally began to rebuke Him say, '*God will be favorable to you, Lord. In no way shall this happen to You*'.... [In other words he's saying, 'Lord, You're so good. This won't happen to you and we aren't going to let it happen. We'll fight for You so

it won't happen.'] ...Then He turned and said to Peter, 'Get behind Me, Satan!.... [That's quite a statement—isn't it? In other words, Peter was tuning in to the things of Satan and Satan was right there.] (That's why He said): ...Get behind Me, Satan! You are an offense to Me, because your thoughts are not *in accord* with the things of God, but the things of men'" (vs 21-23).

Christ had covenanted that He would die. The whole covenant with Abraham is based upon the fact that He would die. And the whole New Covenant is based upon that. That's why we are called 'Abraham's seed and heirs according to the promise.' There are some people who don't like the fact that Jesus died.

Let's come to Matthew 17:22: "And while they were dwelling in Galilee, Jesus said to them, 'The Son of man is about to be betrayed into *the* hands of men, and they shall kill Him; but the third day He shall be raised up.' And they were exceedingly sorrowful" (vs 22-23). How many times must you tell someone before they believe it? Well, that's kind of true of all of us. That's why:

- we are to prove all things
- we're to search the Scriptures whether these things be so or not
- we are to hold fast that which is good

Sometimes there are things that we have to be told over and over again, so we can really get the point.

Matthew 20:17: "And while they were going up to Jerusalem, Jesus took the twelve disciples aside in the way and said to them, 'Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man shall be betrayed to the chief priests and scribes, and they shall condemn Him to death; and they shall deliver Him up to the Gentiles... [He's revealing that He would go from the religious authorities of Judaism to the Roman authority, which was actually the conquering ones who occupied the land. The Jews were actually subservient to the Roman authority.] ...deliver Him up to the Gentiles to mock *Him*, and to scourge *Him*, and to crucify *Him*; but He shall rise again the third day'" (vs 17-19). He told them that.

Let's look at another one. Let's come to Luke 9:22 ^[corrected]. Let's see here another account where He told them: "Saying, 'It is necessary for the Son of man to suffer... ['must' (KJV) means *ordained, destined, necessary or obligatory*] ...to suffer many things, and to be rejected by the elders and chief priests and scribes, and to be killed, and to be raised the third day.'" So He's really getting to it here—isn't He?

Let's come to Mark 9:31, and let's see where the account is given, where He told them: "Because He was teaching His disciples; and He said to them,

‘The Son of man is delivered into *the* hands of men, and they shall kill Him; but He shall arise on the third day after He has been killed.’ They did not understand the saying, but they were afraid to ask Him *about it*” (vs 31-32).

Mark 10:33—we’re going to see the same thing again: “‘Behold, we are going up to Jerusalem, and the Son of man shall be delivered up to the chief priests and the scribes; and they shall condemn Him to death, and shall deliver Him up to the Gentiles; and they shall mock Him, and shall scourge Him, and shall spit on Him, and shall kill Him; and on the third day He shall rise again’” (vs 33-34).

We find, if we look at the Greek, that we’re talking about a couple of very important things: it is

- *on* the third day
- *in* the third day
- *after* three days

So that gives a very close timeline, because there’s only one moment in time when it can be *in*, *on*, and *after*, to all fit. We will see when that occurs.

Let’s come to Matthew 12 now and let’s see something that’s very important. Here is one where again most professing Christian ministers do a sleight of hand, or they try and tell you something to kind of make it appear acceptable that you can get a Friday crucifixion and a so-called Easter sunrise resurrection. But they’re stuck with this verse. They do not know how to explain it, because it literally means what it literally says.

Matthew 12:38: “Then some of the scribes and Pharisees answered, saying, ‘Master, we desire to see a sign from You.’ And He answered *and* said to them, ‘A wicked and adulterous generation seeks after a sign, but no sign shall be given to it except the sign of Jonah the prophet. For just as [exactly as] Jonah was in the belly of the whale three days and three nights, in like manner the Son of man shall be in the heart of the earth three days and three nights’” (vs 38-40).

That’s very clear. It is generally explained by professing Christian ministers that this means *parts* of three days and three nights, but notice it says ‘three days and three nights He will be in the heart of the earth.’ I read one example where one man said, ‘Well, the darkness that covered the land from the sixth hour to the ninth hour, that was the first night.’ But you have one big problem: Jesus was not yet dead, because He didn’t die until the ninth hour. And He was not yet put in the tomb, but He was still on the cross, so you cannot count that dark part of that day as one night. But that’s a sleight of hand that ministers who believe the lies that they have been taught about an Easter resurrection try to

justify with a Friday crucifixion. You stop and think of it: a Friday crucifixion, you have

- one night, which is Friday night
- one day, which is Saturday day
- second night, which is Saturday night

—and you don’t even have a day portion on Sunday, because He was resurrected supposedly on a Sunday. But if you go from Friday you have

- Friday night
- Saturday day
- Saturday night
- Sunday day
- Sunday night
- Monday day

—and then just before Monday ends at sunset, that’s when He would be resurrected *if* there was a Friday crucifixion. ***But it doesn’t work.***

Now let’s go back to the book of Jonah, the prophet Jonah, and let’s see what it means here, because they will go back there and they will say this was an ‘idiomatic expression,’ meaning that it really didn’t mean three days and three nights, just parts of three days and three nights. Well, you can’t even get parts of three days and three nights from a Friday crucifixion to a Sunday morning resurrection.

Jonah 1:17: “And the LORD had prepared a great fish to swallow up Jonah. And Jonah was in the belly of the fish three days and three nights.” *That means literally three days and three nights.* Let’s understand something also very important here: Jonah—when he finally came out of the belly of the whale and was spewed out on land, and began to preach and prophesy—did not say, ‘As I was in the belly of the whale three days and three nights, so shall the Messiah be in the grave three days and three nights.’ He knew nothing of the coming of the Messiah and the three days and three nights; not a thing of it. That supposed ‘idiomatic expression’ to explain it away falls on its face, because it means back there literally three days and three nights and it means here in Matthew 12 literally three days and three nights. So that’s why it’s important that we understand that He was crucified on a Wednesday, and then we will see when He was put in the tomb. Then we will know three days and three nights later He was resurrected from the dead, just as He had said.

Now let’s see one more Scripture reference here, where He talks about the three days again; let’s see what He says here and then we’ll begin to put this together. Mark 8:31: “And He began to teach them that it was necessary for the Son of man to suffer many things, and to be rejected by the elders and chief priests and scribes, and to be killed, but

after three days to rise *from the dead*.” So we have three days and three nights:

- *in* three days
- *on* the third day
- *after* three days

When you calculate the time, there’s only one point in time when that could have taken place. Now let’s see when Jesus was put into the tomb.

Mark 15 tells us when He was put in the tomb. It leads right up to that first Sabbath, being the first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread. Mark 15:42: “Now evening was coming, and since it was a preparation (that is, the day before a Sabbath), Joseph of Arimathea, an esteemed member of the council, who himself was waiting for the Kingdom of God, came; and he went in to Pilate with boldness and requested the body of Jesus. And Pilate wondered if He were already dead; and after calling the centurion, he questioned him, whether He had been dead long. And when he knew it by the report from the centurion, he gave the body to Joseph. Now, he had bought fine linen cloth; and after taking Him down, he wrapped Him in the linen cloth and laid Him in a tomb which had been cut out of the rock. Then he rolled a stone to cover the entrance of the tomb” (vs 42-46).

Now let’s come to the account in the Gospel of John, and let’s see what happened there. John 19:38: “Now, after these things, Joseph (the one from Arimathea, being a disciple of Jesus, but having concealed it for fear of the Jews) asked Pilate that he might take Jesus’ body away; and Pilate gave *him* permission. Then he came and took away the body of Jesus. And Nicodemus, who had come to Jesus by night at *the* first, also came, bearing a mixture of myrrh and aloes, about a hundred pounds. Then they took Jesus’ body and wound it in linen cloths with the aromatics, as is the custom among the Jews to prepare for burial. Now there was a garden in the place where He was crucified, and in the garden a new tomb, in which no one had ever been laid. Because of the preparation of the Jews, they laid Jesus there; for the tomb was near” (vs 38-42).

Jesus was placed into the grave sometime just as that Passover Day was ending at sunset. Then they rolled the stone over it and He was in the heart of the earth and He was to be there three days and three nights. Let’s count this and then we will answer some other questions concerning the third day also.

- Wednesday night is the first night
- Thursday day is the first day
- Thursday night is the second night
- Friday day is the second day

- Friday night is the third night
- Sabbath day, the regular weekly Sabbath, is the third day

After three days, *within* three days, *after* three days and three nights He was to be raised from the dead. And that takes you to the end of the weekly Sabbath during the week that Jesus was crucified.

Now then, that’s the only way you can get three days and three nights, because it has to be keyed to the Passover. The Passover in 30_{A.D.} when Jesus was crucified was on a Wednesday. The day after that, the Passover Day, was the first day of Unleavened Bread, which was a Sabbath. That’s why there’s the confusion concerning the Sabbath, because most people don’t understand that there were the *two Sabbaths*. And Jesus being in the tomb began to be in there on the first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread, which is very appropriate, because Christ is our Passover sacrificed for us, that we can have sin removed from us. So, it’s very appropriate that the first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread was when He began His three days and three nights in the tomb. Let’s just go through that again:

- Wednesday night is the first night
- Thursday day is the first day
- Thursday night is the second night
- Friday day is the second day
- Friday night is the third night
- Sabbath day is the third day

When He was resurrected—we need to understand this—no one saw Him. That’s why last time we went through and we saw all the places where they came early in the morning on the first day of the week. The tomb was already open. It didn’t have to be opened for Jesus to get out of there, because as a spirit being He can walk through material. But it was open so that the women coming to the sepulcher could see that He was gone. He was raised. And the angel said, ‘You’re seeking Jesus of Nazareth. He is not here, but has raised just as He said.’ I just want to review one verse here.

Let’s come to Mark 16:9, because here is one where they go to and say, and it is improperly translated in the *New English Bible*, the *NIV*, the *New American Standard*, they all incorrectly translated this verse because they are reading into it a Sunday resurrection. You can’t do that! Anyone who translates the Scriptures cannot read doctrine into it that is not doctrine upheld by the Bible.

Mark 16:9: “Now after Jesus had risen, early the first day of the weeks... [comma (KJV)] (The Greek should actually read this way): ...Now **after** Jesus was risen... [because He was risen at the *end*

of the Sabbath, not in the morning on Sunday. The Greek here is then a past tense aorist participle, which means, 'now after Jesus was risen,' and that's where you put the comma, right after the word 'risen.'] ...early the first day of the weeks He appeared first to Mary Magdalene..." That's the way that it should read.

Almost every one of these translations mistranslate it because they want to uphold an Easter resurrection. You cannot do that. That is contrary to the Scripture. That is contrary to the Truth. Christ is our Passover, He was raised at the end of the Sabbath. And "...early the first day of the weeks..." **after He was raised**, He "...appeared first to Mary Magdalene..." Now that's the true meaning of it.

Let's look at some other Scriptures, because there were some other things that have gone on. There are a couple of Scriptures in the last chapter of the book of Luke, which gives the appearance and credence to a Friday crucifixion and a Sunday resurrection. That is the reason that I saved this for last. Let's go to Luke 24 and let's read it. Then we will ask some other questions: are we dealing with a statement called the 'third day,' which is different from the 'third day' that Jesus said? *We will see, yes, that is true*, and we will see *why it is true*.

Luke 24:8: "Then they remembered His words; and after returning from the tomb, they related these things to the eleven and to all the rest. Now it was Mary Magdalene and Joanna and Mary, *the mother* of James, and the others with them, who told these things to the apostles. But their words appeared to them as idle talk, and they did not believe them. Then Peter rose up *and* ran to the tomb; and stooping down, he saw the linen clothes lying alone; and he went home wondering about the things that had come to pass. And behold, on the same day, two of them were going to a village called Emmaus, which was about sixty furlongs from Jerusalem. And they were talking with one another about **all the things that had taken place**..." (vs 8-14).

That statement includes things that happened on the Holy Day of the first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread, and also happened on Friday, because of the things that the women did. So 'all things' includes those, 'all things that had taken place.' You can't leave those out because they happened.

Verse 15: "And it came to pass, as they were talking and reasoning, that Jesus Himself drew near and went with them. But their eyes were restrained, *so that* they did not know Him. And He said to them, 'What *are* these words that you are exchanging with one another as you walk, and *why* are you downcast in countenance?' Then the one named Cleopas

answered *and* said to Him, 'Are you only traveling through Jerusalem, and have not known of the things that have happened in these days?' And He said to them, 'What things?' And they said to Him, 'The things concerning Jesus the Nazarean, a man Who was a prophet, Who was mighty in deed and word before God and all the people; And how the chief priests and our rulers delivered Him up to *the* judgment of death, and crucified Him. And we were hoping that He was the one Who would redeem Israel. But besides **all these things** as of today, the third day has already passed since **these things** took place'" (vs 15-21).

You need to mark that because we are dealing with a different 'third day' here. This indeed is the first day of the week in the morning, later in the morning, when He comes by and talks with them. They say, 'It's the third day for all these things that have been done.'

What was done after Jesus was put in the tomb, and when was it done?—because it has to be counted as **all these things**. It can't be just from the time He was put in the tomb, because Sunday, in that case, would be the fourth day. We need to understand it. That's why they go here in Luke 24 to say the third day is Sunday morning, but this third day starts from a different time, because other events transpired after Jesus was put in the tomb.

Let's look at them; let's see what was done on the Holy Day, the first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread. Matthew spells it out just a little differently, Matthew 27:62: "Now, on the next day... [Which was after Jesus was crucified, being the first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread.] ...which followed the preparation *day*..." The preparation for the Feast of Unleavened Bread was the day portion of the Passover. This is on the first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread.

Notice, **all these things that happened**, here we have an explanation of it. So this is on a Thursday; here's what happened: "...the chief priests and the Pharisees came together to Pilate, Saying, 'Sir, we remember that that deceiver said while *He* was living, "After three days I *will* rise." Therefore, command *that* the sepulcher be secured until the third day; lest His disciples come by night and steal Him away, and say to the people, "He is risen from the dead"; and the last deception shall be worse than the first.' Then Pilate said to them, 'You have a guard. Go, make *it as* secure as you know *how*.' And they went *and* made the sepulcher secure, sealing the stone *and* setting the guard" (vs 62-66).

Not only had Joseph of Arimathea and Nicodemus rolled the stone over the face of the sepulcher which was hewn in the side of the rock, but now they came with the guard on the first day of

the Feast of Unleavened Bread, being the fifteenth day of the first month, and they set the guard and they sealed it. In other words, they made sure that that stone could not be moved and that the cracks of it were all sealed up that He could not get out.

Let's see what else transpired to be included in the statement '*all these things.*' We saw one day had already expired coming clear into Thursday. Did something happen on Friday? *All these things* includes coming up to Friday.

Mark 16:1: "And when the Sabbath had passed... [that Sabbath was the first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread] ...Mary Magdalene and Mary, the mother of James, and Salome bought aromatic oils..." The only time they could have bought the oils would be on Friday after the Holy Day Sabbath, which we saw in John 19 was a *high day*, a High Sabbath. So they got the oils; that has to be included in the event.

Something happened on Thursday and something happened on Friday, which is included in '*all of these things.*' You can't start counting that third day in Luke 24 until you have accounted for 'all things'—that's important to remember. We are going to see that where it says 'the third day' there, is a different 'third day' than when Jesus rose. It starts at a different point and ends at a different point.

Luke 23:53: "And after taking it down... [the body of Jesus] ...he wrapped it in linen cloth and placed it in a tomb hewn in a rock, in which no one had ever been laid. Now it was a preparation day, and a Sabbath was coming on.... [that Sabbath is the first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread] ...And *the* women also, who had come with Him from Galilee, followed *and* saw the tomb, and how His body was laid. And they returned *to the city*, and prepared spices and ointments..." (vs 53-56).

You can't do any work on a Holy Day, so they didn't prepare those spices on Thursday, the Holy Day. They prepared those spices on Friday after the Sabbath Holy Day had ended. Now remember, we come up against another Sabbath—don't we? *The seventh day weekly Sabbath* and that's what it is explaining here.

"...they returned *to the city*, and prepared spices and ointments... [on Friday] ...and *then* rested on the Sabbath according to the commandment" (v 56). Distinguishing this Sabbath from the other Sabbath.

Then we saw in Mark 16 how after the Sabbath they bought the spices and you can't prepare the spices before you get them—can you? They had to have purchased the spices on Friday,

prepared them on Friday, and then they rested the regular Sabbath. What we have is this:

- Thursday the guard was set and the tomb was sealed, which was the Holy Day, the first day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread.
- Friday the women bought the spices and prepared them.
- Then they rested the Sabbath.

Friday you count Friday, including the last thing that the women did in preparing the spices. Friday, Sabbath, and Sunday, so there you get the 'third day,' which is a different third day than when Jesus said He would be resurrected. That's where all the confusion comes in, because people do not realize what is being said in Luke 24.

Let's go back and read it again. Luke 24:14: "And they were talking with one another about **all the things that had taken place...**" They were with the disciples, too, when the news came in. They were there when they were preparing the spices, so when they talk about all the things that were done, it includes those things that were done on Thursday and Friday. Then

- Friday becomes the first day
- Sabbath becomes the second day
- Sunday or the first day of the week becomes the third day

This is *not connected* with the resurrection of Christ on the third day, because His third day expired right at the end of the weekly Sabbath. I hope you understand how that falls in line there. Jesus came, they didn't discern Him.

Verse 21: "And we were hoping that He was the One Who would redeem Israel. But besides all these things, as of today, the third day has already passed since these things took place."

No longer can anyone take this third day phraseology in Luke 24 and apply it to a Sunday resurrection from a Friday crucifixion. It was from the completion of things done on Friday, being one day; resting on the Sabbath being the second day; and then the third day Sunday morning, the first day of the week, they were walking going to Emmaus.

I hope that helps us understand that Jesus was not resurrected on a Sunday whatsoever. The very first reason that is given by those who profess Christianity, or in the Christian-professing religion, that the reason they keep Sunday is because Jesus rose on Sunday, ***He didn't! He rose at the end of the Sabbath.***

Now let's understand something very carefully here and really, really realize it which is

this: ***He rose at the end of the Sabbath, and the tomb was empty on Sunday***, and people say, ‘Well, then He rose on Sunday.’ It’s not true. Even if He did rise on Sunday, what does that have to do with the Sabbath commandment anyway? Did Jesus rise and say, ‘Oh, behold, now it’s the first day of the week’? *No!* Remember what we started out with the only One Who can change any of the commandments of God *is God*. God never by command, nor by example, nor by inspired teaching to the apostles, at anytime, anywhere, any place, endorsed Sunday worship as the weekly day of worship. ***Everywhere the Bible enforces the Sabbath!***

I realize that this is a little complicated in following through on it, but if you get the two books, *The Christian Passover* and *A Harmony of the Gospels*, that will explain it in great detail to you, so you can understand that Jesus did not rise Sunday morning. He rose at the end of the Sabbath after being in the grave a full three days and a full three nights and His Word is true. God’s Scriptures are true and it all fits together and it upholds everything the way that it should

So no longer can anyone say that Jesus was raised on the first day of the week.

Scriptures from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order, A Faithful Version*
by Fred R. Coulter

Scriptural References:

- 1) Matthew 26:2
- 2) 1-Corinthians 5:6-8
- 3) John 1:29
- 4) Leviticus 23:1-7
- 5) Matthew 26:18-25
- 6) John 13:2-17
- 7) Matthew 26:26-28
- 8) John 18:28
- 9) John 19:13-15, 28-30
- 10) Mark 15:33-39
- 11) John 19:31
- 12) Matthew 16:21-23
- 13) Matthew 17:22-23
- 14) Matthew 20:17-19
- 15) Luke 9:22
- 16) Mark 9:31-32
- 17) Mark 10:33-34
- 18) Matthew 12:38-40
- 19) Jonah 1:17
- 20) Mark 8:31
- 21) Mark 15:42-46
- 22) John 19:38-42
- 23) Mark 16:9
- 24) Luke 24:8-21
- 25) Matthew 27:62-66
- 26) Mark 16:1

27) Luke 23:53-56

28) Luke 24:14, 21

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Acts 20
- Exodus 12
- 1-Corinthians 11
- Psalm 22; 16

Also referenced:

Sermon: *Which Came First, The Day or The Sacrifices?*

Sermon Series:

- *The Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament*
- *The Holy Sabbath*

Books:

- *Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction, Twenty-Five Reasons Why Christians Keep Sunday* by Dr. Russell K. Tardo
- *The Christian Passover* by Fred R. Coulter
- *A Harmony of the Gospels* by Fred R. Coulter

Booklet: *The Beliefs of the Christian Biblical Church of God*

Refuting Sunday-Keeping II

Why They Say "They're Allowed" to Keep Sunday

Fred R. Coulter

Here's the book I told you about last time, *Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction, 25 Reasons Why Christians Keep Sunday*. We will see that in every case all of this has been absolute twisting of the Word of God, and turning it and changing it and turning it upside down, and making it say things that it really doesn't say.

We're warned about these things in the Scriptures. Let's come to 2-Peter 3, the third chapter, and let's see the warning that Peter gave concerning what would happen when they were twisting and turning the words of Paul, and twisting and turning all the other Scriptures as Peter says here. There are religionists out there, there are ministers, there are pastors, there are whole churches and organizations that have set warfare against God and His Word while claiming to use it and uphold it. It's really an absolutely damnable and dastardly thing that they are doing.

2-Peter 3:15: "And bear this in mind that the longsuffering of our Lord *is* salvation, exactly as our beloved brother Paul, according to the wisdom given to him, has also written to you; as *he has* also in all *his* epistles, speaking in them concerning these things; in which are some things *that are* difficult to understand... [We're going to look at a lot of Scriptures as we go through this whole series of 25 reasons why Sunday-keeping is practiced by the Christian-professing world. We are going to see that they go to hard-to-understand Scriptures and don't even know what they mean.] ...which the [unlearned] ignorant and unstable are *twisting and distorting*, as *they also twist and distort* the rest of the Scriptures, to their own destruction." (vs 15-16).

That's exactly what they have done. Let's see:

- exactly what has happened here
- exactly what people have been doing
- exactly how they have been turning things upside down

and using the Word of God to their own destruction and the destruction of all of those that hear them, and all of those that believe them.

I want you to understand that we're going to use *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order, A Faithful Version*. We're not going to use the *NIV*, or the *New American Standard*. I want you to know that one of the most subversive Bibles there is, is the *NIV* and the *New American Standard Bible*, which takes away the Divinity of Christ, takes away the

understanding of the Sabbath and the Holy Days, and removes those. We are in spiritual warfare. This is not just a simple doctrinal thing. This is a salvational thing. This is the Word of God. This is *His Truth*. If that can't be plain and understood then we're all in trouble and all of those who follow those teachers and those preachers who preach against the Sabbath, which condemn God, which ridicule those who keep the Sabbath. You're going head long right on down the path of destruction.

Let's see what's so important, what is so true. It was happening in Paul's day, the exact same thing, which has led to the *NIV*, the *New American Standard*, and other modern translations, was already taking place in Paul's day. They were twisting, they were perverting, they were bringing Gnosticism from the pagans and Gnosticism from the Jews, blending it into a Christianity, which later became known as the Roman Catholic Church, which is the one which champions Sunday-keeping.

2-Corinthians 4:1: "Therefore, having this ministry..." The ministry of what? *To preach*

- the Truth of Jesus
- the Truth of God's Word
- the Truth of salvation
- the Truth of grace
- the Truth of commandment-keeping

—and *the great and glorious plan that God has for all of mankind*. That's the ministry that is the true ministry of Jesus Christ, the Gospel of Jesus Christ, and the Gospel of the Kingdom of God preaching grace and salvation. I want you to understand something very important: *Sabbath-keeping by those who keep Sabbath is not looked upon as a means of justification in place of the sacrifice of Jesus Christ*. That's one of the greatest sleight of hands and twisting and turnings that Sunday advocates have. They accuse us of looking to Sabbath-keeping as justifying us from our sins and no such thing is true. That is an absolute blatant lie and an ignorant and unlearned statement by those who do not know their Bibles and do not understand the Truth of God.

"...according as we have received mercy, we are not fainthearted. For we have personally renounced the hidden things of dishonest gain... [There is so much dishonesty going on in the religions and the Protestant system of this world, it is unreal.] ...not walking in *cunning* craftiness... [How many have secret agendas leading to ecumenical movement? All roads going back to

Rome, going back to Babylon the great?] ...nor handling the Word of God deceitfully... [That's exactly what all of the Sunday-keepers do and we're going to see in this book, *Sunday Facts*, that they handle the Word of God deceitfully. They make claims and the author, Dr. Russell K. Tardo, makes unlearned claims, twisting and turning of the Scriptures, using them for his own destruction, destroying those who want to find God, leading them down the broad path leads to destruction.] ...nor handling the Word of God deceitfully..." (vs 1-2).

You know one of the worst curses there could be—for any minister who claims to be a minister of Jesus Christ—is to take the Word of God and make a lie out of it by mishandling it and deceitfully using it. That's what happened with these New Age Bible versions, like the *NIV*. They have removed so many things from the Word of God that salvation is very hard to find through Jesus Christ, and God's judgment is going to be upon them. You can read that in 2-Peter 2.

"...but by manifestation of the Truth..." (v 2).
I want you to remember how we saw that

- God's way is Truth
- Christ is the Way, the Life, and the Truth
- how that His commandments are true
- His statutes are true
- His judgments are true
- Christ is true from the beginning

and in the Word of God there is no lie. But when those men take and turn it and twist it, and bring in another gospel, and bring in another Christ, which is not really found in the true New Testament of God. There is raging battle going on to get rid of the *King James Version* of the Bible. But what they have done, they have gotten rid of what is called the *Received Text* or the *Byzantine Text*, from which the *King James Version* was translated. And in doing that, they have eliminated so many things by twisting and turning and leaving things out of context.

Notice where this comes from: "...but by manifestation of the Truth, we are commending ourselves to every man's conscience before God" (v 2). Knowing

- that God knows
- that God is real
- that Christ is the Head
- that He is watching
- that He is inspiring
- that He is doing the things—through them

"But if our Gospel is hidden, it is hidden to those who are perishing in whom the god of this world has

blinded the minds of those who do not believe, lest the light of the Gospel of the glory of Christ, Who is *the* image of God, should shine unto them" (vs 3-4). No, Satan doesn't want you to know the Truth, and that's why he has invented the twisting and turning of the Scriptures, so that those who go to church on Sunday think they are doing the will of God and the Word of God.

Let's come to 2-Corinthians 2 and let's see what else Paul said along these lines. You need to realize this: *Satan is the god of this world*.

- he is the one who wants to pervert and change the Word of God
- he is the one who wants to be worshiped
- he wants to bring you another Christ
- he wants to bring you another truth
- he wants to bring you another day of worship, and that is the first day of the week

In order to do that, here is what they have done, 2-Corinthians 2:14: "But thanks *be* to God, Who always leads us triumphant in Christ, and manifests the fragrance of His knowledge through us in every place. For we are Christ's sweet perfume to God among those who are being saved and among those who are perishing; to those *who are perishing*, we are a stench of death unto death..." (vs 14-16). That's exactly how Sunday-keepers view Sabbath-keeping, as death unto death. They accuse those of us who keep the Sabbath and Holy Days as living in sin and rejecting Christ. Nothing could be further from the Truth!

"...but to those *who are being saved*, we are a fragrance of life unto life. And who is qualified for such things?... [Christ is!] ...For we are not like the **many**... [Let's see who the 'many' are, and we will see false preachers and teachers are doing.] ...For we are not like the many, who for *their own* profit are corrupting the Word of God... [By lying about the meaning of the words, by lying about what Christ has said, by lying against the Truth, and corrupting it. Taking the Word of God and corrupting it. And, of course, ***those New Age Bible versions corrupt the Word of God worse than anything you could ever imagine!***] ...but we speak with sincerity, as from God, *and* before God, *and* in Christ" (vs 16-17).

In other words what he is saying, he is viewing his life as in the sight of Christ continually in what he's doing. Paul said something else here, let's go to Gal. 1, and let's understand something that is very important concerning pleasing men, concerning doing things to please men. He always did it for Christ's sake, in the sight of Christ, not on his own, not with a secret agenda, but in Truth and sincerity and honesty. That's what we want to

portray to you. We want you to understand that the Word of God is *Truth* and it is *salvation*. You can base your life on it. Here's what Paul said. They had others who twisted the Scriptures, who perverted it, who handled it dishonestly, coming and bringing another Christ. And if you're a Sunday-keeper, you have another Christ. If those are fighting words to you, then you start proving it out of your Bible and make sure you have the right Bible not the perverted Bible, which leads to destruction.

Galatians 1:6: "I am astonished that you are so quickly being turned away from Him Who called you into the grace of Christ, to a different gospel, Which in reality is not another gospel..." (vs 6-7). The truth is, there is only one true Gospel, which Christ delivered. Men like to come along and do just like Sunday-keepers do. 'Well, we'll take nine of the commandments, but we don't have to do the Sabbath commandment.' *That is another gospel!*

If you think you believe in Christ, you have another gospel, and you have another Christ. 'Pervert the Gospel of Christ.' I want you to understand this. I want you to understand how severe that this is in this warfare, and we know for sure from what we've learned concerning understanding of the Sabbath, that every Sunday-keeper—minister, member, denomination, church, organization—must cross the Sabbath bridge. They have no way around it.

As we said with all of those quotes, toward the end of the 19th century, there was a movement afoot, when almost every major Protestant denomination was examining the Sunday question and they concluded that nowhere in the Bible can you find justification for Sunday-keeping. Now a hundred years later, we have it fully perverted. I think that at that time, if the Protestants would have renounced Sunday-keeping, renounced holiday keeping, and have gone to embrace the Truth of the Scriptures concerning the Sabbath, the whole world would be entirely different today. They were right at the edge of doing so, but because they bowed to the church at Rome, because they bowed to the pressure of people, they retained Sunday-keeping.

Paul didn't bow to the pressure of anyone. Notice what he says here in v 8: "But if we... ['we' means *all the apostles* and there is no such thing that they kept Sunday from the beginning. That is an utter lie! And yet most Christians believe it. Can you worship the God of Truth with a lie? Can you believe the Truth of God and believe lies? *No, you can't!* You either have to have the Truth of God, or you're going to live in carnality and in the lies of this world. And who's the father of liars and lies? *Satan the devil!*] ...but if we, or even an angel from heaven, should preach a gospel to you that is

contrary to what we have preached, LET HIM BE ACCURSED!" Which means, they're going into the Lake of Fire. It's that simple.

If you carefully read the book of Hebrews, you will understand this: *You either believe Christ and follow Him, and love Him, and keep His commandments, or you are headed to the Lake of Fire.* That is the message in summary of the book of Hebrews. And the message of what Christ has taught all along: *salvation is for eternity!* God is not going to fiddle around with lies and half-truths and twisting of the Scriptures, political this and political that, and serving people in ways to please them, curry them, to merchandize them.

Verse 9: "As we have said before, I also now say again. If anyone is preaching a gospel contrary to what you have received, LET HIM BE ACCURSED!" So, there's a double curse. God means business in this. God means business with His laws and His commandments and His Truth, and His grace, and His salvation through Christ. It is not something just to have a religion and to lead a nice life. There are many sincere people out there in the world. You can probably find some very sincere good, decent people who practice Buddhism. But they are not called to salvation. So *being good* is not what God wants you to be.

- being converted is what God wants you to be
- loving God is what He wants you to be
- keeping His commandments is what He wants you to do
- receiving the grace of Christ and the justification through faith is what He wants you to believe

They all come together. You can't pick and choose and take part of it and throw it away.

Verse 10: "Now then, am I striving to please men, or God? Or am I motivated to please men? For if I am yet pleasing men, I would not a servant of Christ." When you go into your Sunday-keeping church and you hear your Protestant minister or Catholic priest up there purring away to please people, you better remember this Scripture. *If they seek to please men*

- by giving them license to sin
- preach another gospel
- preach another Jesus
- twist and turn the Scriptures
- corrupt the Word of God
- handle it deceitfully

they are not from God; God never sent them!

It doesn't matter if the whole world follows them, God didn't send them. Let's prove that. You

need to think about this. Next time you go to church on Sunday, you sit there with the proper Word of God, have it right there so you can open up and look at it, and you check up on what that Sunday-keeping preacher tells you. You look at the Word of God to see whether it's true or not. If he's giving you an easy way, a pleasant way, a fuzzy-wuzzy Jesus that you can just love and remain in your sins, **he's not sent from God.**

Matthew 7:13: "Enter in through the narrow gate... [that means *difficult*] ...for wide *is* the gate and broad *is* the way that leads to destruction, and many are those who enter through it." Now I want you to think about the billions of Sunday-keepers. How can they be right when they are on the wrong path? They're on the *broad path* and they are told, 'You don't have to keep the commandments of God.' They're told, 'You don't have to keep the Sabbath of God.' They're told that 'you can be saved in your sins.' They say no one can keep the commandments of God, and they're liars. If you sit there in your Sunday-keeping church and you believe that, you have no salvation. You have no Christ, because you're going down the *broad way*, which leads to destruction.

Verse 14: "For narrow *is* the gate and difficult *is* the way that leads to life, and **few are those who find it.**" That's interesting—isn't it? *You've got to find it. You have to search for it.* When you start analyzing all 'religious' groups—and by the way, God's way is not a religion, *it is a way of life.* But since in the world people think of God as a religion, I'll use that term. If you begin analyzing every church and every denomination by the Ten Commandments of God, and then by whether they live by every Word of God or not, by whether they really preach it or not, and still preach the grace of God, and the justification by faith, you are going to find that there are so few who really believe it all.

You can't have your broad-based ecumenism of this world. It's going into utter destruction and Christ, when He returns, is going to utterly destroy it. No question about it! You need to understand that. Who leads the people in there, in those ways?

Verse 15: "But beware of false prophets who come to you in sheep's clothing..." Oh, they look nice, they purr nice, they sound nice, they're warm and fuzzy just like lambskin. Oh, yes, they'll be sweet, they'll be nice, there'll be flattery, they'll tell you it's easy, they'll tell you it's nice, they'll tell you it's good, and you just choose whatever you want to do.

"...for within *they* are ravening wolves." Why? *Because they hate God and they hate His Word, and they twist it and turn it and deceitfully*

handle it! And preach to you another gospel, and preach to you another Christ, and preach to you another day.

"You shall know them by their fruits. They do not gather grapes from thorns, or figs from thistles, do they? In the same way, every good tree produces good fruit, but a corrupt tree produces evil fruit. A good tree cannot produce evil fruit..." (vs 16-17). **If it is the Truth, there is no lie in it.** Do you understand that?

- It cannot bring forth evil fruit
- It will not politicize with men
- It will not compromise for men
- It will not allow the evils of Satan the devil to get a foothold and run the whole church

You need to understand that! You need to think about that in your life. You need to pray about that before Christ. You need to ask God to open your mind so that you understand the Truth. You need to do as Christ said. 'He stands at the door and knocks and if any man will open the door, He will come in and sup with Him.' You need to think about that in your relationship with Christ.

"...nor can a corrupt tree produce good fruit" (v 17). That's why they can't preach the Sabbath, because they're corrupt. That's why they can't teach the Truth of the Passover and the Feasts of God, because they're corrupt. Have you ever thought of it that way? Have you ever thought that that nice, intelligent, well-sounding, well-meaning preacher standing up in the pulpit of your Sunday-keeping church *is corrupt according to the Word of God?*

They have these beautiful buildings, beautiful choirs, all these lovely things, so they can commercialize you and entertain you, and give you sweet purrings by perverting the Word of God, and not calling you to repentance. If you're a Sunday-keeper, you've got to start repenting of Sunday-keeping, and if you keep the holidays of this world you've got to start repenting of that as well—*repent* of living an evil life under the guise of doing good; *repent* of believing lies as Truth and thinking that you're right with God.

Now let's see what happens if you don't. Verse 20: "Therefore, you shall assuredly know them by their fruits. Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' shall enter into the kingdom of heaven; but the one who is **doing** the will of My Father, Who *is* in heaven" (vs 20-21). 'Doeth' (KJV) in the Greek comes from the verb 'poieo,' which means *to practice.*

What is the will of the Father? *The will of the Father was that He created all things by and through Jesus Christ.* And as we saw in the Sabbath

series, He created the Sabbath Day, the seventh day, right at creation and made it Holy and *sanctified it, because it was the will of the Father*. Do you want to do the will of the Father? Remember what the daily prayer is? 'Our Father Who art in heaven; hallowed be Thy name. Thy kingdom come. Thy will be done on earth as it is heaven.' Is the will of the Sabbath Day and Sabbath-keeping from God the Father in your life? *If you are keeping Sunday, you are not doing the will of God.*

Let's notice what happens to them even though they use the name of Christ, even though they call Him, 'Lord, Lord.' Even though they do these things, v 22: "Many will say to Me in that day, 'Lord, Lord...'" Now this is the day of judgment. This is the day when they're resurrected, expecting to be blessed and receive a reward for all of the things that they have done. And mind you, Sunday-keeping *is a work* that Sunday-keepers *think* will bring them salvation. They rely on it. ***They're looking to salvation by works while they preach grace and licentiousness to remain in sin.*** You think on that. Maybe you've never heard anything like this, but you need to understand God is eternal, God is real, and God means business. God doesn't want you sitting around, playing around, playing religion, playing with the Scriptures, thinking you're all good and right before God when you're not.

Verse 22: "Many will say to Me in that day, 'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy through Your name?...'" That means preached and prophesied, both; have ministries, have churches, have radio programs, television programs, all of those things, and do it in the name of God. Go watch the circus on Trinity TV channel. Listen to the radio religious programs. Listen to the circus that all goes on. All of them say, 'Lord, Lord.' All of them say, 'Oh, yes.'

"...And *did we not* cast out demons through Your name?" And haven't we seen that on television, like Benny Hinn, casting out demons, right in front of everyone. That doesn't mean that they have been sent from God. They preach lawlessness. ***If anyone preaches against*** the Sabbath and the Holy Days of God and keeping all the commandments of God and the grace of God and the justification by faith, ***they are preaching lawlessness.*** If anyone tells you it's all right to reject the Sabbath and keep Sunday, ***they are preaching lawlessness!***

Verse 23: "...And *did we not* perform many works of power through Your name?.... [Notice what Jesus will say]: ...And **then I will confess to them, 'I never knew you.** Depart from Me, you who work [iniquity] lawlessness" In other words, *whose works are lawlessness.* What is 'lawlessness'? Lawlessness by definition in the New Testament is

setting aside the commandments of God and saying you don't need to keep them. Have you heard that from your Sunday pulpit, from your purring little pastor up there giving sweet little words about Jesus? We'll see that's exactly what they say. That's exactly what they believe and that's exactly what they preach and practice—***lawlessness!***

Now let's come back here to 1-John 3 and let's again understand the Word of God. Let's understand that John, who is called the *apostle of love* is the one who loved Jesus and the one whom Jesus loved more than the other apostles. Notice what he says that sin is, or what lawlessness is. You need to understand that this is New Testament doctrine. You need to understand that nowhere does God say that you are going to make it into the Kingdom of God by breaking the commandments of God and rejecting the sacrifice of Christ in so doing; by believing lies, by keeping Sunday and Christmas and Easter and New Years and all of those lying, pagan, Satan-inspired holidays of this world. You need to stop and ask yourself, 'Where am I standing before God and what is my life and what am I doing?' You might also ask, 'Why am I so miserable?' *Because you're living in sin!*

1-John 3:4: "Everyone who **practices** sin..." The Greek there is 'poieo,' meaning *practices sin.* If you keep Sunday every week and don't keep the Sabbath, ***you are practicing sin!*** If you keep Christmas, if you keep Easter, if you keep all the holidays of this world, and all of the hundreds of them that the Roman Catholic Church has, you are ***practicing lawlessness, because it is against the laws of God.***

- Do you understand that?
- Do you grasp that?

May God give you the strength and understanding to do so.

Verse 4: "**Everyone who practices sin is also practicing lawlessness...**" meaning *you are breaking the Law.* Do you grasp that? The Law is in effect for Christians, no question about it. Anyone who is lawless is not going to be in the Kingdom of God, as we saw. So if you think you're going to receive salvation in your state of lawlessness of Sunday-keeping and Sabbath-rejecting and Sabbath-breaking and rejecting the Passover and the Holy Days of God, and embracing the communion of this world, the Eucharist of this world, and their holidays, you have another thought coming. ***You are living and practicing sin.***

"...**for sin is lawlessness**" (v 4). Do you understand that? 'Transgressing' (*KJV*) means *you're not keeping.* And if you're not keeping, you are transgressing and you are sinning, because ***'sin is the transgression of the Law.'*** This is so important.

You need to understand. You need to *ask God to open your eyes and open your mind and open your ears and give you an understanding, tender willing heart before God*, while there is time, while there is space for repentance, while there is an opportunity to come to God.

1-John 5:2: "By this *standard* we know that we love the children of God: **when we love God and keep His commandments.**" There is no such thing as just loving God in your heart and everything is all right, because it says '***we love God and keep***'—*practice*—His commandments.

- Are you practicing the commandments of God?

OR are you

- going along with the religionists who teach you and thumb your nose at the Word of God?
- ridicule the Word of God?
- say that Christ lied?
- He didn't mean what He said?
- and the apostles lied? They didn't mean what they said.

Verse 3: "For this is the love of God... [If you think you love God, try this for the test]: ...that we keep His commandments.... [Ask yourself: Am I loving God and keeping His commandments?] ...**and His commandments are burdensome.**" Do you understand what that says?

The Sabbath commandment (the 4th), the first commandment, second commandment—all commandments of God—are *not grievous!* If you believe that God gave the commandments as a harsh taskmaster to punish the Jews, you have believed a lie! ***God never did such a thing!*** He always gave the commandments for their good—*always*. But the Jews are under a curse because of sin. And because they have the Law of God in the Old Testament, but have rejected Christ, they are in sin. Those who profess to be in the New Covenant, who reject the commandments of God, and keep Sunday, are in sin. You need to understand that.

Let's look at the twisting and perverted reasoning that they have concerning Sunday-keeping. Remember the first one we refuted; we spent the whole study on it showing that Christ was not resurrected on Sunday

The Church was born on Sunday In that there's an element of Truth. So let's see what it is. Let me read from this book—*Sunday Facts & Sabbath Fiction*:

Interesting enough the Holy Spirit was poured out on Sunday, because Pentecost

is always kept on the first day of the week, not on the 'Jewish' Saturday Sabbath.

I want you to understand something very important in all the writings of Sunday advocates. They say the 'Jewish' Saturday Sabbath. That is a lie, because Jesus said, '***The Sabbath was made for man,***' and that means all of mankind, '***and not man for the Sabbath; therefore, the Son of man is Lord, also of the Sabbath Day.***' You need to understand that. That's how they put it down.

Pentecost was reckoned as the fiftieth day from the morrow after the Sabbath (Lev. 23:11-15)...

True statement. What you'll find here is the best way to deceive is to ridicule the opposition and to also state some Truth and then twist it and make your justification for what you're doing. So he says, correctly so:

This would be the day following the first Sabbath after Passover.... [correctly so] ...On this fact, Wycliffe authority's state...

I don't know who was referring to Wycliffe authorities, if that is Wycliffe himself or not, I could not vouch for that. So here's the quote he gives:

"It would mean that the waving of the firstfruits of the sheaf of grain would occur the day after the first weekly Sabbath during the Feast of Unleavened Bread... [correct] ...and that Pentecost being fifty days of seven weeks completed would always come on the morrow after the Sabbath, that is on a Sunday."

That is correct, but let's rephrase that—on the first day of the week.

Wycliffe further states: "Pentecost is regarded as the birthday of the Church..."

Almost correct, not really quite true, but almost correct.

...since Christ's resurrection fell on a Sunday...

Here's the twisting. They never get in to prove it, they never get in to show that it was toward the end of the Sabbath that He was resurrected.

...since Christ's resurrection fell on Sunday, Pentecost also fell on the first day of the week, the day on which Christians worshiped and continue to worship.

That is an utter lie!

(go to the next track)

Now let's continue on with this quote:

Smith reporting on the birth of the Church on Pentecost, says, "On the Day of

Pentecost which in that year fell on the first day of the week, Sunday...

Now notice how they go right into it then:

...Sunday, the Lord's day, holds special significance to the Christian, not because of Jesus' resurrection on that day, but because the Church itself was born on that day.

Not so! *The Church itself was born when Jesus Christ began calling the disciples* and He said, 'I will build My Church,' (Matt. 16). They received the Holy Spirit on that day.

While this fact alone may be insufficient to undergird Sunday worship...

They're going after the weakness of their argument to state 'it may not be sufficient.' Well, we're going to see that it really destroys their argument, because they don't know what happened on the Day of Pentecost with the children of Israel. And not knowing that, *they are not understanding whatsoever the meaning of Pentecost*. Pentecost is a Holy Day of God, which happens to fall on the first day of the week. ***That is not endorsing Sunday-keeping whatsoever.***

While this fact alone may be insufficient to undergird Sunday worship, it nevertheless weakens the Sabbath so-called hold on the very institution born on a Sunday.

We're going to see that that is not true. What happened on Pentecost for the children of Israel when they came out from the land of Egypt? {see sermon *From the Red Sea to Sinai* which shows and gives a chronology leading up to the giving of the Law on Mount Sinai.} What really happened was this: the Law was given on Pentecost. Do you grasp the significance of that? *Because if you believe in Pentecost, then you must believe in the Ten Commandments of God, including the Sabbath Day.*

Not only was the Sabbath created by God in the beginning, not only was it re-instituted again for the children of Israel who lost the knowledge of it while they were slaves in Egypt, it was re-instituted in Exo. 16 before they got to Mount Sinai. But Mount Sinai, where the commandments were given, was the Day of Pentecost. ***So, if you accept and you endorse Pentecost, you must accept and endorse all the Ten Commandments, which include the Sabbath Day.***

Let's go back to Exodus 20; let's see that. Most people don't even know that it occurred on Pentecost, so this gives an entirely different meaning. Since Pentecost is always on the first day of the week, when did God give His law? *On the*

first day of the week! Did He authorize Sunday-keeping on that first day of the week when He gave the Law? ***NO!***

Let's just go through the first four commandments, and let's understand something: Just as James has said, ***'If you keep all the Law and offend in one point, you have broken the whole law.'*** Think on that in relationship to Sunday-keeping. If you offend in Sabbath-keeping, plus keep Sunday, *you have broken the whole law!*

Exodus 20:1—the Day of Pentecost: "And God spoke all these words saying..." Will you listen to God? This is not Moses. Moses didn't get up on the mountain and speak these words. **God** spoke them! Which God? *The One Who became Jesus Christ!* Because if you believe in the New Testament in John 1:1 says, 'In the beginning was the Word and the Word was with God, and the Word was God. There was not anything made that was made that He did not make.' So, the One Who became Christ spoke these words.

First Commandment:

Verse 2: "'I am the LORD your God, Who brought you out of the land of Egypt, out of the house of bondage. You shall have no other gods before Me'" (vs 2-3). If you keep Sunday, you have another God, you have another Christ, you're breaking the first commandment.

Second Commandment:

Verse 4: "You shall not make for yourselves any graven image, or any likeness of *anything* that is in the heavens above, or that is in the earth beneath, or that is in the waters under the earth" (vs 1-4). Not even to make them.

- If you have idols and statues in whatever church you go to, *you are committing idolatry.*
- If you wear crosses and crucifixes and things of ancient religions, *you are committing idolatry.*
- If you pray to saints, *you're committing idolatry.*

Not even to make it, let alone have it there so you can—as the Catholics say—venerate it, or reverence it. ***If you have an idol, do you know you're worshipping the created, instead of the Creator.*** God will not give His honor to anything that any man makes. God will not be bound by the injunctions of men, regardless of how they may sanctify and claim that it's Holy.

Verse 5: "**You shall not bow yourself down to them, nor serve them, for I, the LORD your God am a jealous God...**" He made the world, He

made the universe, He made everything that there is. Do you think He's going to give honor to a stick or a stone or metal or gold or silver? Just look at every idolatry nation and religion in this world and you will see that they are under this curse right here in the Ten Commandments; meaning that the Ten Commandments apply to all people everywhere at all times, not just to you, but to every human being on earth. You need to get your eyes and mind and ears open to understand the Truth. You may think, 'Well, my, these are strong words.' Well, you want to meet Christ face-to-face and have Him say, 'Depart from Me, you that work iniquity,' and go into the Lake of Fire prepared for the devil and his angels? Is that what you want? If you don't repent and change, that's what you're going to get. **Christ said so**, not me.

But you look at these nations with idolatry where God says: "...for I, the LORD your God *am* a jealous God, visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children unto the third and fourth generation of those who hate Me... [What is hating God? Not keeping His commandments, saying that God can be found in all religions. *That's hating God!* Christ is 'the Way, the Truth, and the Life.'] ...but showing mercy to thousands of those who love Me and keep My commandments" (vs 5-6).

That is New Testament doctrine, Jesus said, 'If you love Me, keep My commandments' (John 14:15) He is the One Who spoke these words on Mount Sinai on the Day of Pentecost. So, for these Sunday-keepers to come along and justify Sunday-keeping by saying that the Church was born on Pentecost, well so was the nation of Israel born on Pentecost and He gave the Law.

If you endorse Pentecost, you must by that very fact endorse the Ten Commandments of God, *including the Sabbath*. So the whole reasoning is twisted and perverted and maligned, because they have an agenda. They believe a lie, won't believe the Truth of God. They don't love God. Oh, they may purr and have nice fuzzy, warm words, but they don't love God. Because we saw that if you love God, you will keep His commandments and His commandments 'are not burdensome.' Have you found any burden here on any of this? *None whatsoever!*

The Third Commandment:

Verse 7: "You shall not take the name of the LORD your God in vain..." The way it's taken in vain is by saying 'God said,' when He never said. Cursing and swearing by carnal unconverted people in the world is the least of taking the name of God in vain. The greatest way to take it is

- pretend to serve God

- pretend to be a minister of God
- pretend to speak for God and preach lies.

That is the uttermost of taking the name of God in vain. "...for the LORD will not hold him guiltless who takes His name in vain" (v 7).

Now let's understand something else. If you look at the way the Catholics have designated the Ten Commandments, they completely remove the second one concerning making idols and worshipping them. Why? *Because if they left it in, they would condemn themselves* by the very fact of their existence and St. Peter's Basilica and every cathedral and every Catholic Church everywhere in the world filled with idols and superstition. So they have to remove it.

Now then, are you going to go along with removing the Word of God? Maybe the Protestants keep it in, but they come along and just like the Catholics, they also remove the fourth commandment. Not by taking it out, but by lying and saying that it has been shifted to Sunday. Remember, on Pentecost *God gave the Law*. Do you understand that? In the Law is contained the Sabbath commandment. Do you understand that?

The Fourth Commandment:

Verse 8: "Remember the Sabbath to keep it Holy." You can't keep Sunday Holy. Do you know why you can't keep Sunday Holy? *Because God never blessed it and sanctified it*, that's why! Pentecost is a Holy annual Sabbath of God, but this gives no license to keep every Sunday on a weekly basis. This came once a year and still does come once a year and is on the first day of the week, but it has nothing whatsoever to do with license or permission to change the Sabbath commandments and to keep Sunday on a weekly basis. Nowhere does it say that.

These lying and twisting words by men who want to shove *their* way right up into the nose of God are going to stand before the throne of God and they are going to be judged for these lies. If you want to believe them, go follow them, go do that. But know that everyone's going to stand before the judgment seat of Christ—Who is God—and give an account of himself. What will your accounting be?

Now back to the fourth commandment here. "Remember the Sabbath Day to keep it Holy. Six days you shall labor and do all your work. But the seventh day is the Sabbath of the LORD your God..." (vs 8-10). He owns it! He rules it! 'Therefore the Son of man is also Lord of the Sabbath Day' also. No other day. Sunday is not the Lord's day. The seventh day weekly Sabbath, which is Saturday today, and God preserved the knowledge

of the Sabbath all down through history so that people would not have an excuse to say, 'Oh, time got lost and I couldn't find which day it was.' Listen, every Sunday-keeper knows which day is the Sabbath and they refuse to keep it. You think on that!

- Are you in that group?
- Are you going to refuse God?
- Will you really?

"...In it you shall not do any work, you, nor your son, nor your daughter; your manservant, nor your maidservant, nor your livestock, nor the stranger within your gates; for *in* six days the LORD made the heaven and the earth, the sea, and all that *is* in them, and rested the seventh day. Therefore the LORD blessed the Sabbath Day and sanctified it'" (vs 10-11). No other day.

As we already seen in the series we did on the Sabbath, that it was *man* who made the edict concerning Sunday. It was the *pagan Roman*—that so-called 'Christian'—Emperor Constantine, who gave the first law and that it was reinforced with the Council of Laodicea in 364 A.D. And they always put it in the term 'Judaizing.' Well, we'll have something to say about what Judaizing is. Listen, understand, and mark this clear: ***If you love God and keep His commandments, you are not Judaizing.*** Judaizing is something else entirely different, which we will cover when we come to it.

Now let's come to Deuteronomy 5—the second giving of the Law. We're going to see something that is very important. Then we will see why God gave the Holy Spirit on the Day of Pentecost. After He gave the Ten Commandments and all the people said, 'Well, Moses, you speak to us and we'll listen to you. All that God says, we'll do.' That's what they did here.

Here's another account of it that's a little different than we find in Exo. 20, though it's a parallel account and gives the same story. Deuteronomy 5:27: "You go near... [They told Moses.] ...and hear all that the LORD our God shall say. And you speak to us all that the LORD our God shall speak to you, and we will hear *it*, and do *it*.' And the LORD heard the voice of your words when you spoke to me. And the LORD said to me, 'I have heard the voice of the words of this people, which they have spoken to you. They have well said all that they have spoken. Oh, that there were such a heart in them...'" (vs 27-29). They needed the Holy Spirit.

Another thing that most of the Sunday-keepers do not understand is that ***God never offered salvation to Israel under the Old Covenant.*** That did not come until Christ. Do you understand that? Their good news was that they would be in the

'promised land.' Our good news is we're going to be in the Kingdom of God.

Verse 29: "Oh, that there were such a heart in them that they would fear Me and **keep all My commandments always, so that it might be well with them and with their children forever!**" God loved them and God wanted them to do well.

But the whole lesson of the Old Covenant is this: ***Without the Spirit of God you cannot keep the commandments of God from the heart.*** You can keep them in the letter for a certain period of time, which the children of Israel did. And the whole history of the children of Israel and Judah was that they would keep the commandments of God and then they'd go into Sunday-keeping and Ashtaroth-worship and Baal-worship. Then God would raise up a judge, or raise up a king, who would help them come to repentance. They'd come back and start keeping the commandments of God again. The reason that happened time and time and time again is because they didn't have the heart.

So, when we come to the Church being born, supposedly (Acts 2), what we have here is this: We have on the same day, Pentecost—being a first day of the week—God gave the Ten Commandments. So if you accept and endorse Pentecost, then you have to accept all the Ten Commandments of God. You can't pick and choose. You can't add to or take away from. It's all or nothing at all. You may pick and choose by choice, but then you're living in sin. That's why it's all or nothing at all in reality before God. On the Day of Pentecost what God did was send the Holy Spirit on the same day He gave the Law, and ***the Holy Spirit is that which enables you to love God and keep His commandments from your heart.***

Acts 2:1: "And when the Day of Pentecost, the fiftieth day, was being fulfilled... [see booklet: *What is the Meaning of Acts 2:1*, because the Greek makes it very clear. This should be translated 'and during the accomplishing or fulfilling of the 50th day, or the Day of Pentecost.'] ...they were all with one accord in the same place. And suddenly *there* came from heaven a sound like *the* rushing of a powerful wind..." (vs 1-2). What happened when they were at Mount Sinai and received the Ten Commandments?

- there was the trumpet blowing
- there was the darkness
- there was the whirlwind
- there was the sound
- there was the voice of God

Here on this Day of Pentecost, it is the Holy Spirit which is coming, which is the power of God. And if

you believe the Holy Spirit is a God and part of a trinity—see the booklets that we have on that:

- *God is Not a Trinity*
- *The Two Jehovahs of the Psalms*
- *The Two Jehovah's of the Pentateuch*

You need to understand. If you believe in a trinity—and that's one of the hallmarks of Sunday-keepers—you'll believe also another lie. You can write in for a whole 55-page study in going through the New Testament showing clearly through the New Testament, the Old Testament, verse-by-verse and word-by-word, that the Holy Spirit is the power of God. That's what came here—the power of God. This then, gave

- the power to preach
- the power to teach
- the power to keep the commandments of God from the heart.

That's why God began the Church on this day, not to endorse weekly Sunday-keeping. This is an annual Sabbath. And if you endorse this day, you're also endorsing the Holy Days of God, and all of His annual Sabbaths, because you can't endorse one without the other. Do you understand that?

God is not here to divide His Word. Christ said, 'Think not that I've come to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I have come to fulfill. Until heaven and earth pass away, one jot or on tittle,' which is from the Old Testament, 'shall not pass from the Law **until all be fulfilled.**' I tell you in the name of Christ, it has not all been fulfilled. If you don't believe that, you just step outside the door of your house and you look and see. Is the heaven and earth still here? *Yes!* Then *one jot or one tittle has not passed from the Law.* If you don't believe that, then you're calling Jesus a liar. You think on that!

Verse 2: "And suddenly *there* came from heaven a sound like *the* rushing of a powerful wind, and filled the whole house where they were sitting. And there appeared to them divided tongues as of fire..." (vs 2-3). This is not a baptism by fire. And all of the Pentecostals who believe in speaking in tongues and baptism by fire, that's another deception of Satan the devil.

"...and sat upon each one of them.... [all the apostles] ...And they were all filled with *the* Holy Spirit; and they began to speak with other languages, as the Spirit gave them *the words* to proclaim" (vs 3-4). What for? This was not a time of babbling and confusion. This was a time of preaching the wonderful works of God.

Verse 5: "Now *there* were *many* Jews who were sojourning in Jerusalem, devout men from

every nation under heaven.... [A lot of them did not speak Hebrew; they spoke many different languages.] ...And when word of this went out, the multitude came together and were confounded... [here's the reason why]: ...because each one heard them speaking **in his own language**... [it was intelligible] ...And they were all amazed, and marveled, saying to one another, 'Behold, are not all these who are speaking Galileans? Then how is it *that* we hear each one in our own language in which we were born?'" (vs 5-8). Then it lists all the nations there, where they were from, even including strangers or Gentiles from Rome.

Verse 11: "...we hear them speaking in our languages the great things of God." They understood! God gave the power to keep His commandments on the Day of Pentecost, the same day He gave the Ten Commandments to Israel.

Notice one thing else, too, that's important. The apostles began at the temple, and it had to be at the temple because that is where God placed His name. And if it would have been at any other location than the temple, it would not have been a sign and a witness to all of the Jews, because the Gospel says, 'To the Jew first, then the Gentile.' It would not have been a sign to those Jews that this was from God. It had to be there and start right there.

Verse 12: "And they were all amazed and greatly perplexed, saying to one another, 'What does this mean?' But others were mocking *and* saying, 'They are full of new wine.' Then Peter, standing up with the eleven, lifted up his voice and spoke out to them: 'Men, Jews, and all those of you who inhabit Jerusalem, let this be known to you, and pay attention to my words'" (vs 12-14). There were two miracles:

1. Each one of the apostles were speaking in their language, which was Greek.
2. Every one of the Jews, wherever they were born heard them speaking in their own languages and tongues.

What a miracle that was! What a tremendous thing that was! And then he gave a great and a profound sermon showing about the coming of the Spirit of God, showing about the resurrection of Jesus Christ, showing the promise that applied to Christ to not leave His soul in hell, or in the grave. Then he said, 'David's tomb is with us to this day, but it is Christ Who is risen, not David. Christ Whom God sent, Who did the miracles, Who was in the tomb as we have seen three days and three nights and was resurrected at the end of the Sabbath.'

Now notice what else he did, see what he preached here, v 32: "This Jesus has God raised

up..." They saw Him, they felt Him, they handled Him, they heard Him speak, they ate with Him. He explained to them all about the prophecies concerning Himself and the Law of Moses and the Prophets and the Psalms so they would understand. What do we have in the Law and the Prophets and the Psalms?

- Commandments of God
- Sabbaths of God
- Holy Days of God

Do you grasp what we're talking about here? If you keep Sunday, ***you don't know anything about the plan of God!*** If you think you're going to heaven, ***you don't have a clue!*** You need to get your nose in the Bible. You need to believe what it says, and not the lying, twisting interpretations of men who justify their own sin.

Verse 32: "This Jesus has God raised up, whereof we all are witnesses.... [They didn't count their lives dear to them. *No!*] ...Therefore, having been exalted by the right hand of God... [They knew where He went. They knew He was the High Priest. They understood that.] ...and having received the promise of the Holy Spirit from the Father, He has poured out this that you are now seeing and hearing" (vs 32-33). All of this was prophesied to happen in the Old Testament—wasn't it? It happened on the Day of Pentecost, the Holy Day of God, on the same day that He gave the Ten Commandments, which included the seventh-day Sabbath.

Verse 34: "For David has not ascended into the heavens, but he himself said, "The Lord said to my Lord, 'Sit at My right hand... [see sermon series of the *Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament*—going through verse-by-verse, every one of the prophecies of Christ in the Old Testament. Absolutely astounding!] ...Until I have made Your enemies a footstool for Your feet.".... [notice what Peter preached here]: ...Therefore, let all *the* house of Israel know with full assurance... [Not just to the Jews. The Jews came from Judah. The house of Israel includes all the twelve tribes.] ...with full assurance that God has made this *same* Jesus, Whom you crucified, both Lord and Christ" (vs 34-36). And He was resurrected at the end of the Sabbath, not on Sunday.

Verse 37: "Now, after hearing *this*, they were cut to the heart..." ***It's the Holy Spirit that leads you to repentance by the power of God the Father.*** And that's what happened here. They repented! They were pricked in their hearts! The Holy Spirit is to do that for those that God is calling.

- Will you allow the Holy Spirit to work in your life?

- Will you allow yourself to look at your sins and look at the things that you have been doing which you considered righteous and good, but are nothing but filthy rags before God, which Sunday-keeping and Christmas and Easter is?

Nothing but filthy, rotten rags! Repent!

- Can your heart be pricked?
- Can your conscience be stirred?
- Can God speak to you, as it were, through His Spirit?

"...cut to the heart; and they said to Peter and the other apostles, 'Men *and* brethren, what shall we do?' Then Peter said to them, '**Repent...**'" (vs 37-38).

That means turn from the way that you've been living, and you need to do that concerning Sunday-keeping. You need to turn from the *broad way* of pleasing men and Sunday-keeping and the false gospel and the false Christ, and things that you have heard.

- You need to ***repent*** of that!
- ***Repent*** of believing these lies!
- ***Repent*** of letting false ministers take you down that road!

You need to come out of it. God says, 'Come out of her My people.' You come out by repentance, just like they did here.

"...and be baptized each one of you in the name of Jesus Christ for the remission of sins..." (v 38). That remission of sins comes ***through grace by faith***. Don't mistake for one minute that we believe that Sabbath-keeping justifies you for forgiveness of sin. ***That is a bald-faced Sunday-keeper lie.***

- We believe in the grace of God.
- We believe in justification by faith, just as the Scriptures say.

"...for *the* remission of sins, and you yourselves shall receive the gift of the Holy Spirit" (v 38). And that's what you need, the gift of the Holy Spirit:

- so that you can do the will of God
- so that you can love God
- so that you can understand His Word
- so that you can truly grow in grace and knowledge
- so that you can truly comprehend the plan of God

This is just the beginning. When you begin, you bury the old self in baptism. You bury the old way and you say, 'Lord, not my will, but Your will and I am willing to die the very death of Jesus Who died for me.' You're joined in His death and you are raised out of that watery grave to walk in newness of life:

- with God's Spirit
- with keeping His commandments
- with loving God, with serving Him
- with doing His will

That's what it's all about. How tripe, how absolutely lying and foolish and silly it is to go through these things. But millions of people believe it, millions believe it, and they believe a lie.

Peter finishes here: "For the promise is to you and to your children, and to all those who are afar off, as many as *the* Lord our God may call" (v 39).

- Is God calling you?
- Will you answer the call?

Jesus said, 'Many are called, but few are chosen.' And the reason that few are chosen is because few repent. Very few are willing to repent and be totally broken in heart, and in mind, and say, 'Ah, Lord God, forgive me for my sins, which have crucified my Lord, that I personally have done this.' You need to understand as if you are the only one in the world, your sins would have killed Christ. Do you understand that? And if you want the sacrifice of Christ applied to you, ***you need to repent and you need to have your life, and your heart, and your mind changed through the power of the Holy Spirit to love God and keep His commandments.*** That's what Jesus said.

Now, there's no such thing as Christ authorizing Sunday-keeping that will give you salvation. No such thing! And Sabbath-keeping does not bring forgiveness of sins, it keeps you from sinning.

Let's see what Jesus said. He said this on the Passover night of His last Passover. And by the way, if you keep a Lord's Supper and if you keep a communion or a Eucharist, you don't have Christ. You need to write for our book, *The Christian Passover*, which tells all about the very purpose of God and the plan of God, which begins with Jesus Christ Who is our Passover sacrificed for us. Here's what Jesus said on that night as they left, after having the Passover, and they were on their way to the Mount of Olives and then the Garden of Gethsemane. He told His disciples just before they left, just before they were ready to go.

John 14:6: "Jesus said to him, 'I am the Way, and the Truth, and the Life... [Do you believe that?] ...**no one comes to the Father except through Me.**'"

- it's going to be Christ, or nothing
- it's going to be His way, or nothing
- it's going to be truth or a lie

- it's going to be righteousness or sin
- What do you choose?***

Verse 15: "**If you love Me, keep the commandments...** [He was God in the flesh. He was the One Who gave the Ten Commandments. When He says, 'Keep My commandments,' it includes all the commandments of God.] ...and I will ask the Father, and He shall give you another comforter, that it may be with you throughout the age" (vs 15-16).

I'm going to read it correctly from the original Greek. It is 'it'; it's not *he*, v 17: "*Even the Spirit of the Truth, which the world cannot receive because it perceives it not, nor knows it; but you know it because it dwells with you, and shall be within you.*" The Holy Spirit is the begetting from God the Father. I tell you something, beginning with Sabbath-keeping is just a start to understand the great and marvelous plan of God as unfolded through the Word of God and through the Holy Days of God. And everything that it pictures is so absolutely marvelous. What a silly thing that we have to sit here and argue and fight the spiritual warfare concerning Sabbath-keeping and Sunday-keeping. Sunday-keeping cuts you all off from knowledge of these things.

Verse 20: "In that day, you shall know that I am in My Father, and you are in Me, and I am in you. The one who has My commandments and is keeping them... [Again the Greek 'poieo,' is *practicing* them.] ...that is the one who loves Me... [If you don't keep them, you don't love Him.] ...and the one who loves Me shall be loved by My Father, and I will love him and will manifest Myself to him" (vs 20-21). The way that God is going to manifest Himself to you is through His Spirit and His Word when you repent.

Verse 23: "Jesus answered and said to him, 'If anyone loves Me, he will keep My Word... [It's not just the commandments, it's *Word*. Remember where we started with this? '*Man shall live by every word that proceeds out of the mouth of God.*' Do you believe the words of Christ?] ...and My Father will love him, and We will come to him and make Our abode with him.'" ***By the power of the Spirit of God dwelling within you. Christ in you is the hope of glory.***

Verse 24: "The one who does not love Me does not keep My Words... [That's what Sunday-keepers do, they reject it.] ...and the word that you hear is not Mine, but the Father's, Who sent Me."

So, God did not authorize Sunday-keeping because the Church began on the Day of Pentecost. If you accept and believe Pentecost, though it is the first day of the week, ***you must accept all the Ten Commandments, because that's the day on which it***

was given and you must also accept the Holy Days of God, because Pentecost is a Holy Day of God and if you have one, you must have them all.

Scriptures from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order, A Faithful Version*
by Fred R. Coulter

Scriptural References:

- 1) 2-Peter 3:15-16
- 2) 2-Corinthians 4:1-4
- 3) 2-Corinthians 2:14-17
- 4) Galatians 1:6-10
- 5) Matthew 7:13-17, 20-23
- 6) 1-John 3:4
- 7) 1-John 5:2-3
- 8) Exodus 20:1-11
- 9) Deuteronomy 5:27-29
- 10) Acts 2:1-8, 11-14, 32-39
- 11) John 14:6, 15-17, 20-24

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- 2-Peter 2
- Matthew 16
- Exodus 16
- John 1:1; John 14:15

Also referenced:

Sermon: *From the Red Sea to Sinai*

Sermon Series:

- *Holy Sabbath*
- *Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament*

Books:

- *Sunday Facts & Sabbath Fiction, 25 Reasons Why Christians Keep Sunday* by Dr. Russell K. Tardo
- *The Christian Passover* by Fred R. Coulter

Booklets:

- *What is the Meaning of Acts 2:1?*
- *God is Not a Trinity*
- *The Two Jehovah's of the Psalms*
- *The Two Jehovah's of the Pentateuch*

Refuting Sunday-Keeping III New Testament Command for Sabbath-Keeping

Fred R. Coulter

Again we're going to follow through with the book here, *Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction*, and we're going to see how that every one of these arguments are not true. They lack in understanding. They don't know the Truth of the Word of God. They don't know the Greek, they don't know the Hebrew, and we're going to see today one of the real reasons why the Protestants claim that they do not have to keep Sabbath, but they can keep Sunday.

3. No Sabbath command in the New Testament (*Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction*, pg. 21).

We will prove that that is absolutely wrong.

We can safely assume that if God wanted His Church to observe the Jewish Sabbath...

Let's stop right there! There are at least two errors in this assumption:

- 1) We are not to assume

God says that we are to 'prove all things, hold fast to that which is good.' We're to be like the 'Bereans who searched the Scriptures whether those things were so.' So God does not want us to assume.

- 2) They denigrate the Sabbath of God by saying it's a Jewish Sabbath

Saying that it's a Jewish Sabbath, and they do it with vitriol in their voice and in their attitude and the way that they do. They denigrate and they reject the Sabbath of God. The seventh day Sabbath is not the Jewish Sabbath. It is the Sabbath of the Lord. It was given to all twelve tribes of Israel, of which one tribe, Judah, became known as the Jews. The assumptions here are completely erroneous.

...He would have done a better job communicating this to us.

Let's understand: God did a great job in communicating it to us. Here they are accusing God of falling down on His job. They are accusing God that He didn't do a good job.

Surely somewhere in the 27 books of the New Testament we find the mandate to keep the Sabbath if it were important to Him and binding upon us.

We will show and prove today that yes, there is a place that is very specific and very dogmatic which is *an absolute direct command for the people of God to keep the Sabbath*, and in such a way that it

includes the annual Sabbaths, not just the weekly Sabbath.

Certainly in 27 books there was ample opportunity for a Sabbath ordinance to be mandated to the Church if it were in God's scheme of things.

Now we want to come to page 104, because we're going to approach this a little bit differently. We'll tie these two together.

3. No Sabbath command found in the New Testament [allegedly].

Then we'll go back and we'll analyze the other part of number three when we come to Acts 15, because that's what it covers for the rest of it.

19. Faith in Christ is our Sabbath

We're going to see that's really quite a sleight of hand, because what they're saying is that the bottom line is that if you believe in Christ, you're not obligated to keep the Sabbath. We'll see a little later on how that ties in with how they do with the rest of the laws of God by throwing all of them away. We will see that that really creates a great problem.

The Old Testament Sabbath of rest was only a picture of the future spiritual rest that the believer would enter into by placing his faith in Christ alone and ceasing from his own works (Heb. 4:1-11). The word Sabbath means rest. (page 103)

As we will see, there are other terms for rest that are used, meaning *rest*, and also *Sabbath rest* as it applies to God.

God took a Sabbath rest on the seventh day. In six days He created the world, the universe, the heavens, and on the seventh day God is said to have rested from His works (Gen. 1).

No that is an incorrect reference. It's Gen. 2.

Of consummate importance is the fact that He did not then institute a Sabbath observance binding upon man...

We'll see that that is an assumption which is not true.

...that eventually came with the giving of the Law to Moses...

Which was about 3,500 years later.

...when men were to maintain a covenant relationship with God through works

(Neh. 9). But a Sabbath of rest would eventually be the heirs when in the dispensation of grace they could rest in their salvation having found justification with God by faith in Christ.

There are a lot of assumptions in here that are incorrect. We'll tackle that a little bit later as we go along. But needless to say, the *dispensation of grace* as it is put, does not mean that you don't have to keep any of the commandments of God. We'll see a little later that *grace in fact establishes law*, not abolishing law. If you establish something, you're surely not abolishing it.

Now he's quoting another theologian:

Rice says, "The Jewish Sabbath Saturday is clearly a picture of an earned rest...."

Very clever words. You don't earn the rest of the Sabbath, you work six days and you cease working and keep the Sabbath.

"Under the Law if one were perfect all of his life, fulfilling all the commands, he would deserve heaven..."

There's another assumption. God never expected the children of Israel to be perfect. That's why He gave all the offerings for the sin offerings and trespass offerings so they could come to the temple and be forgiven. There was the Day of Atonement on which God gave a clean slate every year.

No one goes to heaven! You see every false doctrine in religion, because religion is not the way of God. God's way is the way of life. You walk in the way of the Lord, it is the way of Christ. Religion is a substitute for it and then they go ahead and inculcate their own doctrines and all religions believe in the immortality of the soul and going to heaven, and such teaching is not in the Bible.

"Since no one was ever perfect but Jesus, nor did anyone beside Him keep the Law, man cannot be saved by the Law."

Now there's some Truth in some of the things that they say here. No one was ever perfect but Jesus. Nor did anyone, besides Himself, keep the Law, that is perfectly; no man could be saved by the Law.

Please understand that when God advocates Sabbath-keeping, He is not saying you are justified by Sabbath-keeping. *Sabbath-keeping is required!* Justification comes through the sacrifice of Jesus Christ, through the grace of God. Those who are Sabbath-keepers do not under any circumstance feel as though that they are earning salvation or working their way toward God so that they can 'be in heaven' or be in the resurrection, because of doing the Sabbath. If their hearts are not right, if they are not

converted, and if they don't have the Holy Spirit, then all the things that they do count for nothing.

"You can see how the Jewish Sabbath picturing salvation by good works is out of place in a dispensation of grace. We are saved by grace, freely justified without the deeds of the Law."

That's a term that they don't understand at all. I'll try and explain it very clearly here in just a minute, but I want you to understand something very important. If you want to have an in-depth study on works of law, {see series on the book of Romans} We go through the book of Romans verse by verse, very carefully and this will tell you what 'works of law' really are and what 'grace' really is. It's not in the way that the Protestants have misinterpreted it. We'll finish this section, then we'll look at a couple of other Scriptures in the book of Romans to answer that.

"So we worship on the first day of the week, representing peace and rest obtained without labor. The Jewish Sabbath... [There it goes again.] ...Saturday is a ceremonial law."

That's not true. The day came first. {see sermon: *Which Came First: the Day or the Ritual?*, or the day or the ceremony. God did not give the ceremony first, He gave the day; that was added to the day. The day was established by creation—be it the weekly Sabbath and God blessing it, or be it the Holy Days that God has given—and those actually began with Abraham when you properly understand it.

"Saturday is ceremonial law and does not fit in a grace dispensation. Our Lord's Day, the first day of the week, does fit every Christian."

That's the end of the quote from Rice. Now continuing with Tabor's writing here:

In a very real sense this whole dispensation of grace is a Sabbath....

That's not true! That is a conjecture that men have devised to avoid Sabbath-keeping.

...for it is a dispensation of rest.

Why then does Jesus say that you enter into the Kingdom of God by force? Why does Paul say 'through much tribulation' we enter into the Kingdom of God?

Neither do they say by much rest we enter into the Kingdom of God. By doing nothing we have rest from God, so we don't have to do anything, and so therefore we enter into the Kingdom of God.

Such thinking is pure and plain lawlessness.

It is a dispensation of salvation not by works, which was foreshadowed in the six days of creation in which God worked, but by faith which is a foreshadow of God's rest on the seventh day.

He quotes Heb. 4:3 and he uses the *New International Version*. By the way, if you have a *New International Version* of the Bible, you might as well get rid of it and get a *King James Version*, because it is not the Word of God. There is so much wrong with the *NIV* that it's almost impossible to try and tell you in just a summary. If you want more information on that, you can write us and we'll send it to you.

"For we which have believed do enter into rest." (Heb. 4:3).

And we will see a little later that that means that we enter into keeping the Sabbath. Let's go back and look at a couple things in the book of Romans, chapter 3 and let's look at that place where they say that you don't have to keep any commandments based upon what is said here. That's because it's misunderstood. That's because it is also mistranslated.

Romans 3:19: "Now then, we know that whatever the Law says, it speaks to those who are under the Law... [Who are under the Law? *Everyone is under the Law*. If you sin, you're under the Law for judgment, for sin. 'The wages of sin is death.'] ...so that every mouth may be stopped... [Not just the Jews mouth, because he [Tardo] says up here that 'we have concluded both Jews and Gentile' that they are '*all* under sin.' And 'if you are under sin, you are also under law.'] ...that every mouth may be stopped, and all the world may become guilty before God." God is judging the whole world based upon His Ten Commandments, not just coming against the Jews, not just judging so-called Christians.

Verse 20: "Therefore, by works [deeds] of law..." This is very confusing because there are two definite articles added in the translation from the Greek. This should read, literally translated: 'therefore by works *of* law,' that is by works of any law—a ritual law, a ceremonial law, a sacrificial law, a law of Sunday-keeping, which is what Sunday-keepers do, they do their own works. *Justification* means—and they miss the whole point—to be put in right standing with God. *That is only done through the sacrifice of Christ*. The Law cannot accomplish it. But because the Law cannot accomplish that, nor was it designed to do that, that doesn't mean that we don't have to keep law. It just is in keeping law, it *does not justify* you, *the sacrifice of Christ does*. And nothing can substitute

for the sacrifice of Jesus Christ.] ...for through *the Law is the* knowledge of sin." So that tells us what sin is so that we don't transgress the Law and sin, because 'the wages of sin is death.'

Verse 21: "But now, *the* righteousness of God *that is* separate from law has been revealed..." Let's understand something here: The *KJV* says 'without,' which is a poor translation in English—'without' gives you the connotation in English, *the absence of*, meaning that there is *nothing that you have to keep*, there is nothing that you have to do. That is not correct! That is a complete, twisted lying interpretation of the Scriptures!

"...*the* righteousness of God... [which is then accomplished through justification] ...separate from law has been revealed, being witnessed by the Law and the Prophets" (v 21). This is the righteousness that we want. This is the righteousness that we also derive through keeping the Sabbath. How can you have righteousness unless you keep the commandments of God? How can you be righteous spiritually unless you have the forgiveness through the sacrifice of Jesus Christ?

Verse 22: "Even *the* righteousness of God *that is* through *the* faith of Jesus Christ, toward all and upon all those who believe; for there is no difference." When you are justified, you are forgiven of your past sins. Jesus said how many times in the Gospel, 'Go and sin no more.' And 'sin is the transgression of the Law.' You need your sins forgiven, and when you have your sins forgiven you 'cannot continue in sin that grace may abound.' No, but that's what Protestants believe, and Catholics have their own works that they do which is not correct either, but we're dealing here basically with Protestant and somewhat with Catholic theology.

Verse 23: "For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God; *but* are being justified freely by His grace through the redemption that is in Christ Jesus; Whom God has openly manifested *to be* a propitiation through faith in His blood, in order to demonstrate His righteousness, in respect to the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God..." (vs 23-26).

Let's understand something. If God forgives your sins in the past, and sins are the transgression of the Law, which they are, and then through grace you've been freely forgiven:

- Does that mean now the Law does no longer exist?
- Does that mean now you're free to sin?
- Does that mean now you're free to judge God?
- Does that mean now you can thumb your nose at God and cast away His Holy Sabbath?

No! Because then you would be living in sin and you would make Christ the minister of sin. Paul said, ‘God forbid! Christ is not the minister of sin.’

Verse 26: “...yes, to publicly declare His righteousness in the present time, that He might be just, and the one Who justified the one who is of *the* faith of Jesus. Therefore, where *is* boasting? It is excluded. Through what law? *The law* of works? By no means! Rather, *it is* through the law of faith” (vs 26-27). The law of faith is this:

- you believe in God
- you accept the sacrifice of Jesus Christ
- you repent of your sins
- you accept Jesus Christ as your personal Savior
- you are baptized
- you receive the laying on hands for the Holy Spirit
- ***you have now been justified***

—through constantly growing and overcoming and living in the state of grace that God has put you, including commandment-keeping, you then come to God whenever you do sin, have those sins forgiven, and that is the state of grace in which you stand, that is *justification*. That can only come through belief in Christ.

Most Sabbath-keepers do not believe that they are justifying themselves from their past sins by Sabbath-keeping. Sunday-keepers, however, believe that they are justifying themselves by keeping Sunday, because Sunday is not a commandment of God.

Verse 28: “Consequently, we reckon that a man is justified by faith, separate from works of law. *Is He* the God of the Jews only? *Is He* not also *the God* of the Gentiles? YES! *He is* also God of the Gentiles, since *it is* indeed one God Who will justify *the* circumcision by faith, and *the* uncircumcision through faith.... [they’re both justified in the same way] ...Are we, then, abolishing law through faith?.... [And Protestants say, ‘Yes!’ *God says*, ‘No!’] ...MAY IT NEVER BE!.... [may it never, ever come that way, *may you never, ever think this thought.*] ...Rather, we are establishing law” (vs 28-31).

Now let’s understand how we establish the Law. You establish the Law because you’ve had your sins forgiven, you receive the Holy Spirit, and then the love of God is shed abroad in your hearts so you can keep the commandments of God from the heart. That’s how you establish the Law. Just to do it in the letter does not establish the Law. You have to have the inner desire to keep the commandments of God. So therefore, we can conclude, since a lot of Protestants who consider that they are under grace,

destroy the Law, they don’t establish it; they reject the Law, they don’t keep it. Quite a difference! God gives us forgiveness through grace so that you may love Him and serve Him and have a clean conscience and go forward. It does not do away with the commandments of God at all in any means.

Let’s look at some other things here; let’s understand one of the most important things; this is very important for you to grasp, because what we are dealing with here in the this book [*Sunday Facts & Sabbath Fiction*) is a carnal minded, self-centered, humanistic point of view of looking at the laws of God. And as a matter of fact, what we are dealing with, we are dealing with the mystery of lawlessness, when you come to understand it. {see sermons: *What is the Mystery of Lawlessness?* You need to know, ***if you keep Sunday, you are wholly wrapped up in the mystery of lawlessness.***

Romans 8:7: “Because the carnal mind *is* enmity against God... [an enemy of God] ...for it is not subject to the Law of God; neither indeed can it *be.*” That’s why they have to get rid of it, so that they can justify their conscience themselves by saying, ‘We have grace,’ when they don’t, so that sin may abound, that ‘we can go ahead with doing our way, our own thing.’

Let’s look at something very important here—talking about grace. Romans 6:1: “What then shall we say? Shall we continue in sin, so that grace may abound?” Let me phrase this very clearly for you. What shall we say then, because we found ourselves sinners, we repent of our sins, we’ve had them forgiven through the righteousness of God and the blood of Christ. Now we stand before God pure and clean. What then, shall we sin? Shall we break the Sabbath? Shall we break the Holy Days? Shall we commit idolatry that we can say grace will abound even more? What does Paul say?

Verse 2: “MAY IT NEVER BE!....” These are lying and twisting arguments. Like Peter wrote of Paul’s things that he wrote, he said that Paul wrote some things, which are hard to be understood, that they which are unlearned, and that means ignorant of the Word of God, which these people are. They’re ignorant of the Word of God. They may be able to read it. They may be able to apply some of it, but they’re ignorant of it because they don’t understand it. Anyone who would claim that you could on in grace and continue in sin has got to have something greatly missing in their understanding of the Word of God. Why can you not read this verse here then see?]

“...MAY IT NEVER BE! We who died to sin... [Which is what happens when you’re baptized and have been freely justified and forgiven.] ... died to sin, how shall we live any longer therein?” (v 2).

If you don't keep the Sabbath, you're living in sin. If you keep Sunday, you're living in sin.

- God is the One Who defines the rules.
- God is the One Who defines the commandments.
- He is the One Who inspired John to write, 'sin is the transgression of the Law.'

The actual Greek means 'sin is lawlessness.' If you have Sunday and keep it and you have Christmas and Easter and all the pagan holidays to go with it, **you are lawless**. You can reach back for the other commandments of God and claim you're righteous, but you are lawless, because you have rejected the Word of God. You only want to keep part of it. We're going to see some other things a little later on to really get these things straightened out here.

Here's what happens when people do that. This becomes a very important principle that you need to understand, because what you're doing when you come to the Bible and you say that God says when He doesn't say; and you say that God doesn't say when He does say, then what you are doing, you are judging God.

James 4:11: "Brethren, do not talk against one another. The one who talks against a brother, and judges his brother, is speaking against *the Law*, and is judging the Law...." That's a very important thing.

- Have they not spoken evil of us who keep the Sabbath and Holy Days?
- Have they not judged us as unworthy of salvation?
- Have they not accused us of trying to seek salvation by works?
- Have they not said that we are trying to earn salvation?
✓ *Yes!*
- But who are they really judging when they say that?

"...But if you judge *the Law*, you are not a doer of *the Law*; rather, *you are* a judge.... [Who are you judging?] ...*But* there is *only* one Lawgiver, Who has power to save and destroy. Who are you that you presume to judge another?" (vs 11-12).

(go to the next track)

In other words we all have to be judged by the commandments of God—don't we? *Yes, we do!* If you judge God, what are you doing? *You are making yourself God!* **If** you make yourself and your ideas, and your Sunday, Christmas, Easter and all of these things—and you accept those—and you go before God and say: 'God, we are delivered to do these things'; and say, 'God, we are thankful to be delivered from Your Sabbath and Holy Days'—**you**

have judged God! Not only that, you have made yourself God, because you are saying what you have in these things is greater than what God has.

- God is perfect—is He not? *Yes!*
- God is Holy—is He not? *Yes!*
- God is righteous—is He not? *Yes!*

Is there anything that God has ever done that is not right? Even in destroying the wicked, even in bringing the Flood upon the world that perished? Dare any man stand up and accuse God and say God was evil in doing so? If you do, then you put yourself in some very rare company.

Let's go to the book of Job, chapter 40. I told you when we started we would come back to Job 40 quite often. I want you to understand a very profound principle: **No man**, regardless of how righteous he may appear, **is going to judge God**. If you judge the Law—the Ten Commandments—any part of the Law, then you're judging God. Let me just interject here that everything that was changed in the New Covenant made everything a higher standard. It did not abolish the Law, *it gave a greater spiritual replacement for it*.

We'll understand that a little later as we go on through this whole series. But here Job considered himself so righteous; he wasn't thankful to God that he was able to do all of these things. Everything he did was according to the laws of God, the commandments of God. He was considered in the flesh as perfect as can be. But in the spirit is another total story. Even if, in the *letter of the Law*, you keep all the commandments, then you must ascribe all of that to God, not to what you do. Job thought that the trial he was going through was unfair, that God was unfair to him. He really wanted an umpire to come down and put his hand on the shoulder of Job and his hand on the shoulder of God, and to umpire the dispute of the opinion between the two. It even said another place, 'Oh, that God would come down and talk to me, I would answer Him.' Well, God did that.

Job 40:1: "And the LORD answered Job and said, 'Shall he who contends with the Almighty instruct *Him*?....'" (vs 1-2).

- And is that not what they do when they replace the Sabbath with Sunday?
- Are you not instructing God?
- Are you not saying that you have something better than what God has given?

"...He who reproves God, let him answer it" (v 2). And we just read some of these things about reproving God: the 'Jewish' Sabbath, *justification* by works, and all of those things. That's not of God. We need to understand that. That's reproving God.

And especially the attitude, ‘Well, everything in the Old Testament has got to be done away with.’

- that’s reproving God
- that is judging God
- that is instructing God
- that’s arguing with God

Job was in no mood to argue any: “And Job answered the LORD and said, ‘Behold, I am vile!...’” (v 3-4). That’s what we all need to come to. Here he began to see his true nature for what it really was. Though he kept all the laws and commandments of God, his nature by its own was vile. He could not be compared to God.

“...What shall I answer You? I will lay my hand on my mouth.... [In other words, he’s going to shut up. It’s about time, Job, it took 40 chapters to do it] ...Once I have spoken; but I will not answer; yea, twice, but I will proceed no further.’ And the LORD answered Job out of the whirlwind, and said, ‘Gird up your loins now like a man. I will demand you, and you declare unto Me’” (vs 4-7).

- Christ is the One Who has come.
- Christ is the One Who spoke to men.
- Christ is the One Who inspired the New Testament.
- Christ is the One Who gave the direct command to keep the Sabbath and the Holy Days, right there in the New Testament.

No doubt about it! But men refuse to, because they have the same attitude as Job.

- Now’s the time to stand up!
- Now’s the time to gird up your loins!
- Now’s the time to listen to the Word of God!

—not twist it, not pervert it, not turn it to your own destruction, not handle it deceitfully as many do.

Verse 8: “‘Will you even annul My judgment?...’” Or we can say, ‘Will you disannul My law?’ Will you disannul anything of God? Shall a man go up to God and say, ‘God, I don’t like what You’re doing; You better quit that?’ And if God said, ‘Oh, you’re right, I’ll stop’; then you become God, because you just told God what to do and He obeyed you and you disannulled His judgment.

Verse 8: “‘Will you even annul My judgment? Will you condemn Me so that you may be righteous?’” That’s what men do concerning the Sabbath in holding on to Sunday; they condemn God that they can be righteous. Little do they realize that in creating a Sunday law, they are seeking justification by Sunday works. You just think on that a while.

Verse 9: “‘And *have* you an arm like God? Or can you thunder with a voice like His? Deck yourself now with majesty and excellency, and array yourself with glory and beauty....’” (vs 8-10).

Come on, let’s have all the Protestant ministers stand up and do this. Let’s have all the great evangelists in the world stand up and do this, make themselves magnificent, make themselves shine with spiritual glory. Let the pope stand up there and declare that as the vice-regent of Christ, he is a spirit being. *Nonsense!* No man, not even the pope is going to tell God what to do. God *is* God, we’re human beings. ***He’s going to tell us what to do!***

Verse 11 “Cast abroad the rage of your wrath; and behold everyone who is proud, and abase him. Look on everyone *who is* proud, *and* bring him low; and tread down the wicked in their place. Hide them in the dust together; *and* bind their faces in darkness. Then I will also confess to you that your own right hand can save you” (vs 11-14).

That’s quite a lesson for us; same way with all Sunday-keepers. God never commanded Sunday. God only commanded the Sabbath, as we have seen. So therefore, this is a great conflict. Then coming in and twisting and turning the Scriptures of God to try and justify something that a man has devised, is doing exactly like Job did here. ***If*** you are right, stand up and make yourself a spirit being; stand up and clothe yourself with majesty and glory; stand up and prove that since you take upon you the prerogative of God—Who gave the Sabbath—to declare the Sabbath void and Sunday is the day of worship. Let’s see your spiritual power.

On page 104 (*Sunday Facts & Sabbath Fiction*) he begins to explain their interpretation of Heb. 4:1-11.

This passage is widely misunderstood by Sabbatarians who feel it supports Sabbath-keeping.

He’s wrong! We will say, ‘No, it’s not widely misunderstood by Sabbatarians, but by Sunday-keepers.

In fact it does just the opposite.... [We’ll see he’s wrong.] ...The passage in its entire context refutes the concept of returning to a Jewish works-based salvation.

Please understand how they denigrate, how they put down. Since they can’t give the right answer, they have to pin labels on people.

The Hebrew Christians were being influenced by legalists who tried to bring

them back under bondage to Jewish laws and observance.

Wrong! Wrong! Wrong! The Hebrew Christians were Hellenistic Christians who were Greek speaking, composing of both Jews and Gentiles and they were going back into Gnosticism. That's what they were going back into.

The epistle was written to combat that error and to remind Christians that we live in a Sabbath dispensation, that is a dispensation of grace.... [Wrong interpretation.] ...No one is saved by works.... [Right, we understand that.] ...not by offering sacrifices, nor by following strict dietary restrictions, laws, rules, regulations, and not by Sabbath observance.... [Wrong again!] ...This dispensation, faith in Christ, is our rest, our Sabbath, from all religious works.

Stop and think on that! In other words, they say if you accept Christ you enter into a Sabbath with Christ, and others even say, 'Since Christ kept the Sabbath, and you enter into this Christ, He kept it for you.' Understand something very clearly: *God could not convict the world of sin, nor hold us accountable for sin, if Christ kept the commandments for us.* Do you understand that?

Then he quotes from the *Living Bible*. Now let me tell you about the *Living Bible*. The *Living Bible* is one of the worst, absolutely pathetic translations of the New Testament. The man who did it didn't even understand Greek enough to know what he was saying. He read into it all of the Protestant doctrines to justify Protestantism. Now I'm going to read it very quickly, so that we understand what he's saying, and then we will go verse-by-verse through Hebrews 4:1-11. Then we'll understand exactly what it's saying and exactly what it means. Now I'll just read it as quickly as I can.

"Although God's promise still stands—His promise that we all may enter His place of rest—we ought to tremble with fear because some of you may be on the verge of failing to get there after all. For this wonderful news—the message that God wants to save us—has been given to us just as it was to those who lived in the time of Moses. But it didn't do them any good because they didn't believe it. They didn't mix it with faith. For only we who believe in God, can enter into His place of rest. He has said, 'I have sworn in My anger that those who don't believe Me will never get in,' even though He has been ready and waiting for them since the world began" (Heb. 4:1-3, *LB*).

It's almost blasphemous to read it, but I want to read it so that you understand exactly how they've twisted and turned and perverted God's Word, and judged it and cast it aside.

"We know He is ready and waiting because it is written that God rested on the seventh day of creation, having finished all that He planned to make. Even so they didn't get in, for God finally said, 'They shall never enter My rest.' Yet the promise remains and some get in—but not those who had the first chance, for they disobeyed God and failed to enter. But He has set another time for coming in, and that time is now. He announced this through King David long years after man's first failure to enter, saying the words already quoted, 'Today when you hear Him calling, do not harden your hearts against Him.' This new place of rest He's talking about does not mean the land of Israel that Joshua led them into. If that were what God meant, He would have not spoken long afterwards about 'today' being the time to get in. So there is a full complete rest *still waiting* for the people of God" (vs 4-9, *LB*).

That is a complete absolute *mistranslation* of the grossest kind in a very serious doctrinal point. **You need to understand the Truth**, which we will get into in just a little bit.

"Christ has already entered there. He is resting from His work, just as God did from His creation. Let us do our best to enter into that rest, too, being careful not to disobey God as the children of Israel did, thus failing to get in" (vs 10-13, *LB*).

There he even contradicts himself by saying that we should not disobey as the children of Israel disobeyed. So again, let me finish just a couple things here and we'll have this input from the book done.

Again, the promised rest God refers to could not possibly be the observance of a seventh-day Sabbath... [Wrong! We'll see that it is.] ...because the rest transcends a mere day and speaks of an entire dispensation of faith.... [Wrong interpretation!] ...in which men would find right standing with God, not by their works, but by simple trust in God.

If you keep the Sabbath, whose work is it?

- Who commanded the Sabbath? *God did!*
- Who said keep it Holy? *God did!*
- Who said remember it? *God did!*

Therefore, if you do it, it is a work of God that He has created that you are to walk in (Eph. 2:10). If you keep Sunday:

- Did God command it? *No!*
- Did God authorize it? *No!*
- Did God sanctify it? *No!*
- Did He keep it? *No!*

If you keep it, whose work is it then? *It's the work of men, it is your work, not the work of God!* Now then, he quotes here from *Matthew Henry*:

“It is certain that God after creating the world in six days entered into His rest and it is certain that Christ, when He finished the work of our redemption, entered into His rest. These were not only examples but earnest that the believers shall enter into their rest”.... [he quotes here, Heb. 4:10] ...‘For he that enters into his rest has also ceased from his works as God did from His.’”

So, they make completely wrong conclusion saying that if you enter into the *rest* of God, then you don't have any works to do at all. But if you enter into the rest as God entered into the rest, what did He do? *He rested the seventh day!* If you rest, as God rested, you *must keep* the seventh day.

“Every true believer has ceased from his own works of sin...”

That is true, but is commandment-keeping sin? *No!* Commandment-keeping is righteousness. See how they twist and turn it?

...from relying on his own righteousness and from burdensome works of the Law and God and Christ have ceased from their works of creating and redemption.”

This is a bunch of twisted reasoning by a man who is trying to justify Sunday-keeping, rather than seeking the Truth of the Word of God.

“The Jews who scrupulously observe the seventh-day Sabbath still fail to enter into the real rest of God...”

That was because they rejected Christ, had nothing to do with Sabbath-keeping. Atheists reject God, too, in the same way and the scrupulously hold to their doctrines of atheism. Has nothing to do with the Truth.

“...The true rest is that of faith in Christ and cessation from all external observances and works including the Sabbath.”

Which is a lie!

Let's go to Ephesians 2 and let's see what the Apostle Paul said. There are *good* works that we are to walk in. One of those is the Sabbath, the others are all the commandments of God as amplified by Jesus Christ and the Holy Days.

Ephesians 2:8: “For by grace you have been saved through faith, and this *especially* is not of your own selves; *it is* the gift of God.” Since Sunday is of yourselves and not the gift of God, keeping Sunday does not justify you at all. Keeping Sunday is living in sin and violating grace and saying, ‘Let's sin, so that grace may abound.’ That is the *mystery of lawlessness*.

Verse 9: “Not of works, so that no one may boast. For we are His workmanship, created in Christ Jesus unto the good works... [Rather than works of sin. Christians are to have good works. What are those good works?] ...**that God ordained beforehand in order that we might walk in them**” (vs 9-10). That begins with the Ten Commandments. That begins with the whole amplification of the commandments of God throughout the New Testament, including the Sabbath, including the Holy Days. The Apostle Paul said concerning the Holy Days: ‘For Christ our Passover has been sacrificed for us. Therefore, let us keep the feast.’ A direct command to keep the Feast of Unleavened Bread (1-Cor. 5:7-8).

I know what the next excuse would be, ‘Well, that's only one place.’ The question is how many times does it take for God to make the point? Is not once sufficient? And if you don't believe once, then you don't believe God. We're going to see the same thing applies to Heb. 4 and in keeping the Sabbath. He quotes another; he doesn't give the quote who it was from here. Then he works in a little bit of the Talmud. We'll bypass that one.

Obviously the rest for believers today is not a mere day, but an entire dispensation.... [Wrong! Wrong! Wrong!] ...It is not a practice, but a person, the Lord Jesus Christ.

But we just read that you're created in Christ and you are to walk in good works. This contradicts it.

As Spurgeon once said, a great Protestant minister, “The change which our Lord has made in the Sabbath...”

Christ never made it, men have made it. Now we go from the authority of the Catholic Church to ‘the Lord changed it.’ *He did not do it!*

...is indicative of the change which He has made in our lives. The Law says work six days and observe the seventh as the Sabbath, but under the gospel the arrangement is rest of the first day before you have done a stroke of work.”

Where is that in the Bible? Where is that in the New Testament? This comes out of figment of the imagination of a man who wants to justify Sunday-keeping and to judge God, judge the Law, and

proclaim his own righteousness, disannul the judgment of God and declare himself righteous. I can hardly believe that! I'll tell you what, you find any place in the New Testament where it says, 'Rest on the first day before you've done a stroke of work.'

"Just as the week begins, take your rest and after that in the strength derived from it and from the grateful motives which arise out of that one blessed day of rest, give to the Lord the six days of the week. There is a change from the Law to gospel indicated in that very change, so let it be with you."

That is blasphemous! I just want you to understand that. They speak evil of the Law. that's what they're doing here. None of that's in the New Testament, but someone reading this book, never reading the New Testament, would assume that it's there, because, after all, 'everybody keeps Sunday.' *Wrong!* Not everybody keeps Sunday. We don't!

Let's go to Hebrews 4 and let's look at this. Let's understand this. Then we're going to learn something from the Old Testament, because this refers right back to the Old Testament. Let's understand something concerning the book of Hebrews here, which is this: The book of Hebrews was written to the Hellenistic Christians. Hellenistic means *Greek-speaking Christians*, being both Jews and Gentiles. They were slipping back into Gnosticism, and when I do the series on it I will show that in Heb. 6 they were slipping into the Eucharist, rather than keeping the Passover. And yes, there were some Jews in Jerusalem who were then rejecting Christ, and going back to animal sacrifices instead of relying on the sacrifice of Christ. That much of their there analysis is true.

But let's understand something else. These Christians used the *Septuagint Bible*. I've got one here and I'm going to read out of it, I'm going to show you some things out of it. We will see that the very key verse—which is a direct command to keep the Sabbath—comes from the Greek that has been used in the *Septuagint*. Then we will analyze the *Septuagint* and we will see how these words are used and how they apply. We will be very surprised and I think be astounded as what it means to 'enter into His rest,' when we come to Gen. 2.

Please understand that they rebelled in the wilderness by going to worship the golden calf. That is sun-worship, coming straight out of Egypt. Please understand they didn't believe God. They rebelled many, many, many times, and the last straw was when they were to go into the land and the twelve spies came back from spying out the land for forty days, that two of them—Joshua and Caleb—said,

'It's a good land. God will fight for us.' Ten of them moaned and groaned and complained, and then the people cried all night, accusing God—just like Sunday-keepers do—of being mean and nasty and evil and, 'Oh, God, why didn't you kill us in Egypt, why did You bring us out here in the wilderness? Oh, You're going to kill all of our children. No, we don't want to go into the land.'

God said, 'All right, judgment is yours. You don't want to go into the land, you accuse Me of going to kill your children. Your children are going to go in and you're going to wander in the wilderness for forty years, a year for a day.' Then they said, 'Oh, we've sinned, we'll go.' Moses said, 'Don't go!' *We'll go*. Moses said, 'Don't go, you'll be destroyed.' You cannot have it both ways. You cannot reject God and obey God.

(go to the next track)

Do you understand that? So they didn't go in. Hebrews 4:1: "Therefore, we should fear... [And we need to fear. That is Christian fear.] ...lest perhaps, a promise being open to enter into His rest... [This Greek word here is 'katapausis'—which means *place* or *abode of rest*, which is the coming Kingdom of God when Christ returns. This is not a special rest that God gives through a so-called 'dispensation of grace.' Otherwise, they wouldn't have to fear. They would have already been entered into it—correct? *Yes!*] ...any of you might seem to come short. For truly, we have had the Gospel preached *to us*, even as they also *did*; but the preaching of the word did not profit them because it was not mixed with faith in those who heard" (vs 1-2).

The Gospel they received was not the same Gospel that we have. The Gospel they received was to enter into the 'promised land.' That was the good news. Come out of Egypt and go to the 'promised land.' Ours is to come out of the world and go into the Kingdom of God.

"For we who have believed, we ourselves are entering into the rest... [When do we enter into rest? *Every Sabbath!* This is 'katapausis.'] ...as He has said, 'So I swore in My wrath, "If they shall enter into My rest"'—although the works were finished from *the* foundation of *the* world... [Meaning very clearly that even though the works were finished from the foundation of the world in the creation of time, in the creation of the Sabbath, that doesn't mean that the Sabbath is now done away. That means *it stands from the foundation of the world*, not done away.] ...For He spoke in a certain place about the seventh *day* in this manner: 'And **God rested on the seventh day from all HIS works.**' And again concerning this: 'If they shall enter into My rest'—Consequently, since it remains

for some to enter into it, and those who had previously heard the Gospel did not enter in because of disobedience” (vs 3-6).

Then eventually they entered into the land—didn’t they? *Yes, the children entered into the land*, but they make the mistake of making alliances with those that God said they should have killed and gotten rid of. So, the *rest* that Joshua gave them was not complete, and the *rest* that David gave the people when he passed on the kingdom of Israel to Solomon his son was not the complete *rest* of the Kingdom of God. That was only a type of it.

Verse 7: “Again He marks out a certain, ‘Today,’ saying in David... [He limited the seventh day. It just says so right up here, the seventh day.] ...after so long a time (exactly as it has been quoted *above*), ‘Today, if you will hear His voice, harden not your hearts.’” What voice of God do Sunday-keepers harden their heart against? *Sabbath!* Did God speak the Sabbath? ‘Remember the Sabbath to keep it Holy.’ Did God give the Sabbath as a gift to the children of Israel? *Yes!* Did they listen to God when God said, ‘Don’t go out on the Sabbath day to gather manna’? *No!* Some did! It’s very important to understand these things, and to understand the concept. ‘Katapausis’ means *to rest, to recline, to abide, to settle*.

Now we are to have *rest* from sin through Christ, but ***that is not replacing the Sabbath***. That is a standing before God and has nothing to do with the day to be observed, because if you don’t observe the seventh day, you are living in sin. If you do observe Sunday, you are living in double sin, because you are not doing what God said and you are doing what God said not to do. Do you grasp that? *I hope you do*, because your understanding of the Word of God and your salvation is going to hinge on that.

Verse 8: “For if Joshua had given them rest... [which he didn’t do] ...He would not have spoken *long* afterwards of another day.” That is the primary meaning. You can also look at it this way: For if Jesus had not brought the Kingdom of God on earth when He was here, then He would not have spoken of another day; that day is pictured by the Sabbath. So in either case—whether it’s Joshua or whether it’s Jesus—you don’t have a complete plan.

- Is the Kingdom of God here? *No!*
- Is Christ the ruler over all the earth? *No!*
- Has Israel entered into its rest? *No!*
- Has the Church entered into its rest, that is being raised from the dead and entering into the Kingdom of God and being a spirit being? *No!*

So that is the ‘katapausis.’ That is the place of a rest or abide, not here yet.

Now notice, because it’s not here yet, let’s read v 9. First I’ll read it in the *King James* and then I’ll read it the way it should be translated and then we will analyze some of the Greek words and then we’ll go to the *Septuagint* and see how they’re used.

Verse 9 (*KJV*): “There remains therefore rest to the people of God.” This an unfortunate and very bad translation. The word ‘rest’ here comes from an entirely different Greek word than *the rest* of the rest. Rest comes from ‘katapausis.’ This in v 9 comes from ‘sabbatismos,’ and means *Sabbath-keeping*. If you have a *King James Version* of the Bible, you might find in the margin where it says, ‘a keeping of a Sabbath,’ but that’s not correct. It is literally ‘Sabbath-keeping for the people of God.’ Now we’ll go through and we’ll analyze all of this. We’ll answer the question: Who are the people of God? A lot of people will say, ‘Yeah, that’s for the Jews all right. Yes, there remains Sabbath-keeping for the Jews.’ *No*, the people of God are Jews and Gentiles.

Verse 10: “For the one who has entered into His rest... [which is Sabbath-keeping. This means ***resting from your work as God rested from His work***. This comes from the Greek word ‘katapauo,’ the verb, you’re *resting*.] ...he also has ceased... [‘katapauo’] ...from his works, just as God *did* from His own works.” That means you cease from your own labor during the week. That also means you cease from doing your own works for your own salvation. That part is true, but this is ceasing from your own works so you can enter into the weekly Sabbath rest.

Verse 11: “We should be diligent therefore... [How do you labor? *Six days a week*.] ...to enter into that rest... [keeping the Sabbath] ...lest anyone fall after the same example of disobedience [unbelief].” That’s what people do. All those who keep Sunday have fallen into unbelief, because they don’t believe God. Let’s also apply this to the Millennium. “Let us labor, therefore, to enter into that rest” (*KJV*). You don’t rest in a dispensation of rest to enter into rest. *You labor with Christian works*. Labor six days a week and keep the Sabbath. You labor with Christian works that God has given for us to do including the seventh-day Sabbath-keeping so that you may enter into the Kingdom of God.

No one’s going to enter into the Kingdom of God if they’re not keeping the commandments of God. Let’s clear that up and make it absolutely clear. Revelation 22:14: “Blessed are those who keep [do]... [The Greek there is ‘poieo’—which means *practice His commandments*.] ...that they may have the right to *eat of* the tree of life, and may enter by the gates into the city.”

If you're not keeping the commandments of God, you won't be able to eat of the tree of life and you won't be able to enter into the Kingdom of God and enter into the city of New Jerusalem. You think on that! That's why we are to labor to enter into that rest, weekly on the Sabbath, and we are to labor with Christian works to enter into that rest, the Kingdom of God.

For if you don't, Hebrews 4:12: "For the Word of God *is* living and powerful, and sharper than any two-edged sword, piercing even to the dividing asunder of both soul and spirit, *and* of both *the* joints and *the* marrow, and *is* able to discern [judge] *the* thoughts and intents of *the* heart. And there is not a created thing that is not manifest in His sight; but all things *are* naked and laid bare before the eyes of Him to Whom we must give account" (vs 12-13).

That means God knows all of these silly little arguments and vain little rebellions against God. They're not vain little rebellions, they're great, huge, gargantuan rebellions and stupid arguments of men who twist and turn, who apply the Word of God carnally, who accuse God of lying, who accuse God of giving the 'Jewish' Sabbath as punishment. ***Let's dispel all of that.***

Now we're going to take a look at some of the words we need to analyze here in Heb. 4, and also then we'll get into the *Septuagint* and see how they are applied in the Greek Old Testament and see how that word 'sabbatismos' comes directly from the words used in the Old Testament.

Here are some words that we are going to look at. I'm going to show you the English and the Greek and I am going to show you the meaning of them. Then we'll look at some of the Scriptures in the Old Testament, in the *Septuagint*, and see how they're used. It's called *the Sabbath* and *the Rest*. That's what we are talking about in Heb. 4.

1. The Sabbath

- 'ho sabbaton'—singular—*the Sabbath*
- 'ta sabbata'—plural

I want you to see there's an 'a' at the end—'ta'—this is the definite article 'the' in the Greek and the word also ends in 'a' at this end. That's how we can distinguish between singular and plural.

Then we have to 'sabbathize,' or *to keep the Sabbath*. Here's the verb, 'sabbatismos.' Notice that it is a take-off of the noun, but now it is a verb—'sabbatismos'—which is the root verb, 'to sabbathize.'

Here's another form of the verb, which is called the infinitive, which is 'sabbatizene.' Here is another one here, which then is the imperative

second-person plural, which is 'sabbatiz-ete.' We'll see that very important when we come to Lev. 23.

We have right here the word that is found Hebrews 4, 'sabbatismos,' which means this is gerund equaling an 'ing' noun, meaning Sabbath-keeping. Not keeping of 'a' Sabbath, but Sabbath-keeping, meaning that you apply that to *all Sabbaths*.

Here is the second-person singular, 'sabbatezee,' we'll see that. Here is the aorist third person plural, which we will find in Exo. 16, right here. Sabbatiso, which then we have it here. This is the aorist, 'sabbatisen,' meaning this is past tense. We will see that this word is used for 'rested,' back in Exo. 16.

2. The Rest

The other word 'the rest.' The Greek is 'katapausis.' The way it's used, the 's' is changed to an 'n' when it's used there in Heb. 4, but that doesn't change it. This means *resting place*; this is defining the noun of *rest*. 'To rest,' when it's used with the verb of 'katapauo,' which is *to rest, to stop, to put to an end, to cease, to give rest to, or give rest from, to settle, to repose*. All of those things have to do with where God 'katapausee,'

3. To Keep

This is the last word we're going to look at, which is 'phulasso—to keep, to observe, to watch, to guard, to preserve, to maintain, to watch over. This is the verb which is used for 'remember the Sabbath to keep it Holy.' All of those things can apply to *keeping the Sabbath* and that's what Israel was to do with the Sabbath. That command is much more than just observing.

Now I'm going to be reading from the English of the *Septuagint* and I'll refer to the Greek here. This is important to understand, because we will use some of the very words that I just covered.

Genesis 2:1: "And God finished on the sixth day His words which He made...."

That's the way it should be translated from the Hebrew.

And He ceased on the seventh day from all His work which He made. And God blessed the seventh day and sanctified it because in it He ceased from all His work which God began to do"

Let's analyze a couple of the Greek words here. The word for *cease* comes from the Greek word 'katapauo.' It is actually here that God 'katapausis,' *He rested*; He ceased from His works. When it talks about 'katapausis,' back there in Heb. 4, to *enter into his rest* as God entered into His. How did God enter

into His rest? *He entered into by ceasing working.* Same thing we are commanded to do.

Six days shall you work, but the seventh day is the Sabbath of the Lord Holy.

So, here God blessed it, and undoubtedly kept the Sabbath with Adam and Eve. The Greek word 'katapauo' (the verb) and we also have the noun 'katapausis.' So, when Paul is writing to the Hellenistic Jews, or the Greek-speaking Jews, this is the Bible that they had. This is where they would go to understand what Paul was writing about. This does not give any authority or any license to do away with any commandment-keeping at all.

Let's come Exodus 16:23: "And he [Moses] said to them 'This *is that* which the LORD has said, "Tomorrow is the rest of the Holy Sabbath to the LORD... ['ho sabbata.' In some places in the *Septuagint* they use the plural for the singular.] ...Bake what you will bake *today*, and boil what you will boil. And that which remains over, lay up for yourselves to be kept until the *next* morning.'" And they laid it up until the *next* morning as Moses said. And it did not stink; neither was there any worm in it. And Moses said, 'Eat it today, for today is a Sabbath to the LORD.... [There we have it, 'sabbaton.'] ...Six days you shall gather it, but on the seventh day, the Sabbath, in it there shall be none'" (vs 23-26).

"And it came to pass *that some* of the people went out on the seventh day in order to gather, but they did not find *any*. And the LORD said to Moses, 'How long do you refuse to keep My commandments and My law? See, because the LORD has given you the Sabbath..." (vs 27-29). Let's understand something about the Sabbath. ***Not only is it a law, but it is a gift!*** All the laws of God are a gift. God gave the Ten Commandments—did He not? *Yes!* God gave the Sabbath Day; it is *a gift*. Whatever God gives, He gives from His grace. You need to grasp that and understand it.

Verse 29: "'See, because the LORD has given you the Sabbath, therefore He gives you the bread of two days on the sixth day. Let each one stay in his place. Do not let any one go out of his place on the seventh day.' So the people rested... [kept the Sabbath] ...on the seventh day" (vs 29-30). The *Septuagint* says, 'The people kept the Sabbath on the seventh day.' Now keeping the Sabbath on the seventh day here is the aorist form of 'Sabbatizo,' which is 'sabbatizene.' That's what that means 'kept the Sabbath.' In the *King James* it says 'they rested on the seventh day,' but here this means that they 'sabbathized,' the people sabbathized on the seventh day.

Now let's go to Exodus 31. We've already covered this, but I want to cover it from this point of view, and show you the words that are used here and what God means with it. And here we're dealing with the plural Sabbath. Let's come to Exodus 31:13: "'Speak also to the children of Israel, saying, "Truly you shall keep My Sabbaths... [Now this term here is 'phulasso,' which is very strong. You are *to keep*, you are *to guard*, you are *to maintain*, you are *to preserve*. They are to 'keep' the Sabbath. In this case plural, 'ta sabbata.' So we have it right there, This becomes very important. We'll see this especially when we come to Lev. 23, because it's going to really be an eye opener for you to understand that.] ...for it is a sign between Me and you throughout your generations to know that I *am* the LORD Who sanctifies you.'"

In other words, you don't know the Lord if you don't keep the Sabbath, and you don't know that it is God that sanctifies you unless you do. He's the One Who did it. Verse 14: "You shall keep the Sabbath... [*Septuagint* is Sabbaths, plural. All the way through here it is plural in the Greek. And again 'phulasso,' you shall keep, maintain, preserve, guard, watch over.] ...for it is Holy to you. Everyone that defiles it shall surely be put to death, for whoever does *any* work on it, that soul shall be cut off from among his people. Six days may work be done, but on the seventh day is the Sabbath of rest, Holy to the LORD..." (vs 14-15). The 'Holy rest to the Lord' here becomes very important, a Godly rest. And that is 'sabbata anapausis.' Now there we have a type of the word 'katapausin'—'anapausis.' So you see, it is *a rest*. So if you enter into His rest, you enter into keeping the Sabbath. If you enter into the ultimate rest of the Kingdom of God, you enter into the Kingdom of God.

"Therefore, the children of Israel shall keep the Sabbath, to observe the Sabbath throughout their generations as a perpetual covenant. It is a sign between Me and the children of Israel forever; for in six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth, and on the seventh day He rested, and was refreshed" (vs 16-17). *Septuagint* says 'ceased and rested.' Ceased, 'katapausee,' and rested. There we have it, have it right there, very clear.

Let's go to Leviticus 23 and here is a very profound Scripture. Here is something that we need to understand concerning the Sabbath and this ties right in with Heb. 4:9, because the wording here, it uses 'Sabbatizo,' very clearly in the form that applies as we saw for the second-person plural.

Leviticus 23:32_[transcriber's correction]—this has to do with the Day of Atonement: "'It *shall be* to you a Sabbath of rest... [the Day of Atonement] ...and you shall afflict yourselves. In the ninth *day* of the month at sunset, from sunset to sunset, you shall keep your

Sabbath.” Let’s understand something very important here. From Sabbath to Sabbath is this in the Greek: ‘sabbatiz-ete,’ which then is the verb ‘to sabbathize’; ‘ta sabbata’—plural. So He’s saying here, ‘All of the Sabbath you sabbathize’—from *evening to evening!* That’s a little bit different than the *King James Version*, but it brings out something very important. That’s why when Paul wrote to those who were the Hellenistic Greek-speaking Christians, called Hebrews, when he used ‘sabbatismos,’ they knew—because they had the Greek Old Testament, the *Septuagint*—that it was referring right back here to Lev. 23:32. The verb ‘sabbathize etc.’

When Paul says ‘sabbatismos’—there remains Sabbath-keeping to the people of God—that becomes very, very clear. What we’re find here is this: Heb. 4:9 is a direct commandment in the New Testament to keep the Sabbath. You cannot have any stronger language than, ***“therefore, there remains Sabbath-keeping to the people of God.”*** That is so clear. We’ll analyze that a little bit more when we get back there and understand how profound that is. But we’re dealing with the Greek Old Testament, with Greek-speaking Christians, and this is what they would read.

So, ‘sabbatismos’ is the gerund, the noun ‘ing’ word which is Sabbath-keeping, and it is a direct takeoff from Lev. 23:32, where it is here ‘sabbatezee etc.’ ‘Sabbatezee etc ta sabbata humon’—meaning *keeping your Sabbath*.

(go to the next track)

Now let’s go to the book of Ezekiel and we’re going to find the book of Ezekiel is very strong and it backs up entirely what God said there, where we read it in the *King James*.

Ezekiel 20:7: “Then I said to them, ‘Let each man throw away the abominations of his eyes, and do not defile yourselves with the idols of Egypt. I *am* the LORD your God.’” It talks about Sodom and Egypt, the city where our Lord was crucified, referring to Jerusalem (Rev. 11:8). Jerusalem and the Jews, and later the Hellenistic Christians and the Gnostic Christians, brought every abomination of Egypt and brought it right into the so-called Christian church.

Verse 8: “But they rebelled against Me and would not hearken to Me. They did not each man throw away the abominations of their eyes, nor did they forsake the idols of Egypt. And I said, ‘I will pour out My fury against them to fulfill My anger against them in the midst of the land of Egypt.... [That was before they even left.] ...But I worked for My name’s sake, that it should not be profaned before the heathen among whom they *were*, for I made Myself known to them in their eyes, by

bringing them out of the land of Egypt.... [That is by all the signs, by all the wonders, by what Moses did. He was made known.] ...And I caused them to go out from the land of Egypt, and brought them into the wilderness. And I gave them My statutes and showed them My ordinances, which *if* a man do, he shall even live in them.... [God expected them to live in them, just like He expects us to do today.] ...And also I gave them my Sabbaths to be a sign between me and them, that *they* might know that I *am* the LORD who sanctifies them. But the house of Israel rebelled against Me in the wilderness; they did not walk in My statutes, and they despised My ordinances, which if a man does, he shall even live in them. And they greatly polluted [grievously profaned] My Sabbaths....” (vs 8-13).

Not just broke them a little bit, but ‘grievously profaned’ them (*Septuagint*). What does it mean to profane the Sabbath? That means to work on it, to labor on it, to trade on it, to disregard it. And as we saw previously, the children of Israel were carried into captivity because of Baal-worship, which is Sunday-worship. They went right to the temple of God and said, ‘We’re delivered to do all of these things.’ Just exactly like the Protestants and Catholics today. No different! They are profaning the Sabbath of God. You look at any Saturday, and you see what the world does to it. You see how they profane it. Very few are keeping the Sabbath of God. That’s why God is delighting in those who keep His Sabbath, that love Him and keep His commandments.

Verse 13: “And I said, ‘I will pour out My fury on them in the wilderness to destroy them.’ But I worked for My name’s sake, so that it should not be profaned before the heathen in whose sight I brought them out. And also I lifted up My hand to them in the wilderness, *and swore* that I would not bring them into the land which I had given *them*... [They did not enter into the rest, because they rebelled, because they sinned, because they broke the Sabbath, because they rejected the commandments of God.] ...flowing *with* milk and honey, the glory of all lands—because they despised My judgments and walked not in My statutes; and they polluted My Sabbaths; for their heart went after their idols. Nevertheless My eye spared them—from destroying them; nor did I make an end of them in the wilderness” (vs 13-17).

Boy, I tell you, this is something! This is real strong! Brethren, you need to understand this. Please grasp what we’re dealing with here concerning the Sabbath. This is not just to be taken lightly, this is a matter of truth and error, it’s a matter of life and death, it’s a matter of salvation or the Lake of Fire. We need to understand that.

Verse 18: “But I said to their children in the wilderness, ‘Do not walk in the statutes of your fathers, nor observe their judgments, nor defile yourselves with their idols. I *am* the LORD your God. Walk in My statutes, and keep My ordinances, and do them, And keep My Sabbaths Holy... [Where it is *to keep* it is ‘phulasso’ all the way through—to *keep, to keep, to keep*. They didn’t do them.] ...But the children rebelled again Me. They did not walk in My statutes, nor keep My ordinances to do them—the ordinances which, *if* a man do, he shall even live in them. And they polluted My Sabbaths, and I said, I would pour out My fury on them, to fulfill My anger against them in the wilderness. Nevertheless I withdrew My hand and worked for My name’s sake, that it would not be polluted in the eyes of the heathen, in whose eyes I brought them out. I also lifted up My hand to them in the wilderness, *swearing* that I would scatter them among the heathen and scattered them through the lands, because they had not done My ordinances, but had despised My statutes and had polluted My Sabbaths, and their eyes were after their fathers’ idols” (vs 18-24).

So then what did God do? *He turned them over to their own devices*, called *ordinances*, which were not good; *judgments*, which were not good. In other words, God said, **‘If you want it, you shall have it, and you will destroy yourself!’** That was the punishment that God gave to them. Same thing today, if you want Sunday, you’ve got it, but you’re going to destroy yourself. Stop and think: Look at this nation that we have today in the United States, and we are a country that is more religious than any other country, have more Bibles than any other country, have more churches than any other country. But what do we have? Because you go after your own ordinances of Sunday, Christmas, and Easter, and all the abominations, which God said not to do, what has happened? *Look at our society!*

- Are we polluting ourselves?
- Are we profaning ourselves?
- Are we destroying ourselves, and our children, and the whole society? *Yes!*
- Is not God going to bring judgment upon us for that? *No question about it!* It’s coming!

God’s judgment is not only coming, it is fierce wrath, but it is also upon us because as we continue to live in sin, *we reap the harvest of sin with all of the penalty: ‘the wages of sin is death.’* That’s what this society has wrought, because they have done exactly as the children of Israel did in the wilderness, being the parents or the children.

Let’s look at Hebrews 4:9 again, and let’s understand something here. Who are the people of

God? I know there will be some who will say, ‘Well, that’s for the Hebrews.’ But it doesn’t say, ‘there remains therefore, Sabbath-keeping to the Jews.’ It doesn’t say, ‘there remains therefore, Sabbath-keeping to the Hebrews.’ It says, v 9: “There remains, therefore, Sabbath-keeping [Sabbatismos] for the people of God.” Who are the people of God? *Not just the children of Israel, not just the Jews!*

Let’s come to Romans 9:23 and we’re going to see that that includes the Gentiles. “In order that He might make known the riches of His glory unto *the* vessels of mercy.... [That’s us!] ...which He prepared before for glory. Those of us whom He also called, not from among *the* Jews only, but also from among the Gentiles?... [The people of God include the Gentiles!] ...Accordingly, He also said in Hosea, ‘I will call those who *are* not My people, “My people,” and those who *were* not beloved, “Beloved.” And it shall be, in the place where it was said to them, “You *are* not My people,” there they shall be called *the* sons of *the* living God.’ But Isaiah cried out concerning Israel, ‘Although the number of the children of Israel shall be as the sand of the sea, a remnant shall be saved. For *He is* accomplishing and limiting *the* matter in righteousness... [have a limited time] ...because *the* Lord will limit *the* matter *He is doing* upon the earth” (vs 23-28). That’s why today it is small. That’s why today it is the few. It is limited.

Verse 29: “Accordingly, Isaiah also said before, ‘Unless *the* Lord of hosts had left us a seed, we would have become as Sodom, and we would have been made like Gomorrah.’ What then shall we say? That *the* Gentiles, who did not follow after righteousness, have attained righteousness, even *the* righteousness that *is* by faith” (vs 29-30). So it includes Jews and Gentiles.

Now let’s come here to 1-Peter 2 and let’s see that Peter, in writing to the people—which were actually some of them who used to be in Paul’s territory—apparently after Paul was martyred. He writes a letter and hear what he says. 1-Peter 2:9: “But you *are* a chosen stock, a royal priesthood, a Holy nation, a people for a possession of *God*, that you might proclaim His *excellent* virtues, Who called you out of darkness into His marvelous light; Who once *were* not a people, but now *are the* people of *God*... [including Gentiles] ...who had not received mercy, but now have received mercy” (vs 9-10). So the people of God include all of those that have the Holy Spirit of God.

Go to 2-Corinthians 6, and let’s see where it also includes the Gentiles. This is important, because what we’re doing, we’re showing and establishing very clearly where it says, ‘Therefore, there remains Sabbath-keeping for the people of God’—that

includes Jews and Gentiles. This means the sneered remarks of 'Jewish' Sabbath, can be completely set aside. They don't even comprehend the Word of God. And the things that are written in this book by Tardo are very shallow indeed and shows his lack of understanding of the Scriptures.

2-Corinthians 6:14: "Do not be unequally yoked with unbelievers...." Let's apply that to the Sabbath. If you believe in the Sabbath, why do you go to church on Sunday? *They are unbelievers in the Sabbath!* They may have a profession of Christ, but they don't believe Christ. Why? Christ said, 'The Sabbath was made for man and not man for the Sabbath.' Again, 'anthropos'—*human beings*. That's why God made it. 'Therefore, the Son of man is also Lord of the Sabbath Day.' He will tell us what to do. That is His day, so if you go to church on Sunday, then you are walking lock-step, arm-in-arm with unbelievers, because they don't believe Christ. They may profess Him, but they have a different Christ. They have a different gospel.

Verse 14: "...For what do righteousness and lawlessness *have* in common?... [And Sunday-keeping is *unrighteous*, it's not of God! God never declared it.] ...And what fellowship *does* light have with darkness? And what union *does* Christ have with Belial? Or what part *does* a believer have with an unbeliever? And what agreement *is there between* a temple of God and idols?" (vs 14-16).

You take a look at any church that has idols in it and you know it's not from God. God never sent them. You want to know about the Vatican, go look at all the idols that they have in there. Some Catholics say, 'Well, those aren't idols.' *Those are idols!* God said in the second commandment, which the Catholics remove, 'You shall not make unto yourself any graven image of anything that is in heaven above, that's in the earth beneath, or that's in the water under the earth. And you shall not bow yourselves down to serve them and worship them, for I the Lord your God am a jealous God visiting the iniquity of the fathers upon the children to the third and fourth generation of them that hate Me.'

So, if you have idols and you have Sunday-keeping, *you hate God!* Let that sink in! A lot of people go to church and say, 'Know the Lord, love the Lord.' They don't love God because they don't keep His commandments. The Apostle John wrote, 'And this is the love of God that we keep His commandments and His commandments are not burdensome.' And yet Protestants and Catholics say that Sabbath-keeping is a burden. *No it's not! Sabbath-keeping is a blessing!*

Now the truth is the real temple of God are those who have the Spirit of God. And if you have the Spirit of God, what agreement do you have with

idols? That's what Paul is saying here. He says, v 16: "For you are a temple of *the* living God, exactly as God said: 'I will dwell in them and walk in *them*; and I will be their God, and they shall be My people.... [Jews and Gentiles. Now that's profound to understand. '***Therefore, there remains Sabbath-keeping for the people of God.***' Do you understand that? Sunday has nothing to do with Christianity. It is a false Christ, it is a false gospel, it is a substitute for the true Sabbath of God and is a work and invention of the devices of men which goes clear back to Egypt, because they worshiped the sun on Sunday.] ...Therefore, come out from the midst of them and be separate,' says *the* Lord..." (vs 16-17).

If you keep Sunday:

- Are you willing to come out from it?
- Are you willing to leave it?
- Are you willing to forsake it? Are you willing to repent of it?
- Are you willing to come to understand the self-righteousness involved in doing it?
- Are you willing to see that it's your own works in what you are doing?
- What is it?

The only way you're going to please God is if you love Him with your whole heart, '***all your heart and mind and soul and being***' and ***if you keep His commandments, and do His works and keep His laws, and live His way***, not some way that *you think* devised out of your own heart or some way that another man has thought and devised out of his own heart. '***Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds out of the mouth of God shall man live.***'

Are you willing to live that way? Are you willing to believe the Scripture, which says, 'Therefore there remains Sabbath-keeping for the people of God'? If you are, then you need to turn your life around, and you need to repent to God for all of your Sunday-keeping and all the vile abominations of the self-righteousness that goes with it. And you need to turn to God with weeping and with fasting and with mourning, and turn from those abominations. Oh, they look so good in the eyes of people. Oh, they can have great choirs. Oh, they can give great sermons, all this sort of thing, and make you feel good. Like one woman I talked to. She said, 'Well, I go to church once in awhile, so that I feel good. I get all fuzzy and warm.'

I talked to another man. He knows about the Sabbath, he knows that it's in the Bible. He knows that's the day that God commanded, but he still goes to church on Sunday and he says, 'Well, God knows my heart.' *Yes, God does!* that 'the heart is deceitful above everything and desperately wicked.' And 'out of the heart of men proceed evil thoughts and

murders and adulteries,' and all of those things. Your heart cannot be right, because you think it's good. Your heart can only be right *because Christ makes it so, through repentance and baptism and the true receiving of the Holy Spirit of God.*

If you have a conversion based upon the little prayer that the Protestants give that you open your heart and let the Lord come in, you have been lied to and fooled. You do not have Christ. You do not have the real Christ. You may profess Him, but in order to really be Christ's, you've got to not only repent and be baptized and receive the Holy Spirit, but

- you've got to walk in the way of the Lord
- you've got to keep the commandments of God
- you've got to keep the Sabbath

because in the New Testament there is a direct command which says, ***'Therefore there remains Sabbath-keeping for the people of God.'*** That is a command of God.

The other question that I have here is this: Since these men who profess Sunday-keeping say that there is no direct command in the New Testament to keep the Sabbath, now that you know that that is a lie, that there *is* a direct commandment, and if these men knew that this was a direct commandment, would they keep Sabbath or would they cling to their Sunday? *I say, that in their rebellion, they would keep their own Sunday!* Very few might come to real repentance to keep the Sabbath. So that dispels #3 and #19: there is no direct command in the New Testament for keeping the Sabbath.

It gives you the Truth concerning 'sabbatismos,' and 'katapausin,' and the 'rest' of God and keeping the Sabbath. What you need to do is what the Apostle Paul said, 'Let us labor six days a week to enter into that rest,' that is the Sabbath, so that you can be fed the true Word of God.

- ***What will you do?***
- ***Will you obey God or obey man?***

Scriptures from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter (except where noted)

Scriptural References:

- 1) Romans 3:19-31
- 2) Romans 8:7
- 3) Romans 6:1-2
- 4) James 4:11-12
- 5) Job 40:1-14
- 6) Ephesians 2:8-10
- 7) Hebrews 4:1-11
- 8) Revelation 22:14

- 9) Hebrews 4:12-13
- 10) Genesis 2:1-3
- 11) Exodus 16:23-30
- 12) Exodus 31:13-17
- 13) Leviticus 23:32
- 14) Ezekiel 20:7-24
- 15) Hebrews 4:9
- 16) Romans 9:23-30
- 17) 1-Peter 2:9-10
- 18) 2-Corinthians 6:14-17

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Ephesians 2:10
- 1-Corinthians 5:7-8
- Revelation 11:8

Also referenced:

Sermon: *Which Came First—The Day or the Sacrifices?*

Sermon Series:

- *Romans*
- *What is the Mystery of Lawlessness?*

Book: *Sunday Facts & Sabbath Fiction: 25 Reasons Why Christians Keep Sunday* by Dr. Russell K. Tardo

Refuting Sunday-Keeping IV

Fred R. Coulter

I'm using for a guide this book, *Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction*, which is just the other way around. It's Sunday fiction and Sabbath facts as what we're going to bring out. This book is written by Dr. Russell K. Tardo, and last time we saw where they claim there is *no* command in the New Testament to keep the Sabbath. We showed and proved, yes, ***there is absolutely a command to keep the Sabbath in the New Testament.*** Last time I did part of #3 and #19 and put those together. So this time I'm going to finish up with #3 in the book. We'll get the numbers matched up as we go along, a little later on.

So I want to pick it up here on pg 21, *Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction*. I'm going to read through it, and I want you to listen carefully to it. Before I read, I want to cover just a couple of Scriptures which are very important to understand. Let's first of all come to 2-Timothy 2 and let's see what Paul told Timothy that he should do, how he should use the Scriptures, and the way that they should be taught.

Let's also understand something else. This is very important. If you have a *New International Version* or an *RSV* or a *New RSV* translation, or a *New American Standard Bible*, or an *American Standard Bible*, or a *Douay Version* of the Bible, or a *New World Bible* by the Jehovah Witnesses, or a Bible put out by the Mormons, which combines the *King James Version* of the Bible with their teachings, *you have the wrong Bible!* The only right Bible is based upon the Byzantine Text. All of those that I mentioned before are not based upon the Byzantine Text, but on a version of Westcott and Hort, and on a version of those two manuscripts called the Sinaicetus and the Vaticanus, from which the Catholic Vulgate came. There's virtually no difference between the Catholic Vulgate and the *New International Version* of the Bible.

In order to have the right Bible, you have to have the whole Truth. And those Bibles have had Truth removed. Therefore, you're not able, with those Bibles, to come to the knowledge of the Truth.

What is very interesting, just in my own ministry is: I've always used the *King James Version* and I have studied the Greek now for some 26-years and I have finished translating the Bible—*The Holy Bible In Its Original Order, A Faithful Version*—into a more modern English, but I use the same Greek text that was used by the translators of the *King James Version* of the Bible, which was the same text that was used by William Tyndale in 1534 with a few modifications to it by Stephens. If you

don't have a *King James Version* or *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order*, by all means get one, because that's the only one that stays close to the Truth, even though the *KJV* has an archaic English in it. It's the only one that is based upon the proper Byzantine Text.

That's very important, as we're going to see here what Paul told Timothy, 2-Timothy 2:14: "See that *they* remain mindful of these things, earnestly charging *them* in the sight of the Lord... [This is very important. This is an absolute charge by Paul in the name of the Lord—that is before the Lord—which means as if you were in the presence of the Lord.] **...not to argue over words...** [A lot of this Sabbath-keeping problem is striving about words and twisting words, and so forth.] (notice what it does): ...that are not profitable in any way, *but which lead to the* subverting of those who hear."

We're going to see exactly how they have done this. It's very clever; it's a sleight of hand. If you quote part of the Scriptures and build your case on part of the Scriptures, it looks like you're getting your conclusions from the Bible, but the fact is you're only using some of the Scriptures so you can bring your own conclusion. It's like someone said, 'How do historians write history?' Well, always remember, the victor writes the history. And how do they write it? They bring out some facts, they emphasize other facts, they bear down on some facts, they ignore other facts, they bring out just a little bit of some of the other facts, and so what you have is a distorted picture of history.

This is what has happened with the Scriptures. Paul gave Timothy the instructions what he should do, v 15: "Diligently *study* to show yourself approved unto God, a workman who does not *need to be* ashamed, **rightly diving the Word of the Truth....** [Because if you wrongly divide the Word of Truth, you can end up with error.] ...Because avoid... [turn away from.] ...profane and vain babblings because they will *only* give rise to more ungodliness, And their words will eat away at the body like gangrene; of whom are Hymeneus and Philetus, Who have gone astray from the Truth, claiming that the resurrection has already taken place... [They had problems with false doctrine during Paul's day, preaching the wrong things, using Scripture, but using it wrongly.] ...and are destroying the faith of some" (vs 16-18).

Now let's see what Peter said concerning some of the writings of the Apostle Paul, which is really quite profound what they do—2-Peter 3. This is something that we're going to see today, exactly

how they have done it. 2-Peter 3:15: “And bear in mind that the longsuffering of our Lord is salvation, exactly as our beloved brother Paul, according to the wisdom given to him, has also written to you; as he has also in all his epistles, speaking in them concerning these things; in which are some things that are difficult to understand, which the ignorant... [That is, they don’t know the Scriptures; they haven’t been taught the true doctrines.] ...which are ignorant and unstable...” (vs 15-16). Meaning that they want to have their own way. Therefore, they will go willy-nilly from doctrine-to-doctrine to suit their carnal purposes, and even using the Bible. That’s what makes it so damnable.

“...which the ignorant and unstable are twisting... [That means they twist, they have the wrong use of the Scriptures.] ...and *distorting*, as they also *twist and distort* the rest of the Scriptures...” (v 16). Notice what this is saying then. This is saying that the epistles of Paul were considered at the time that Peter wrote this to be Scripture. You can know one thing for sure: Paul, Peter, and John canonized the New Testament and John finalized it. God did not leave it to semi-pagan priests 300 years later, which formed the basis of the Catholic Church, to write the New Testament or to canonize it. You have to read carefully what the history of the Catholic Church at that time shows, and it is that they just had a listing of the already canonized books of the New Testament.

“...as they also *twist and distort* the rest of the Scriptures, to their own destruction. Therefore, beloved, since you know this in advance, be on guard against *such practices*, lest you be led astray with the error of the Lawless [wicked] ones... [‘the error of the wicked’ is to take part of the Scriptures and create their own story, which they’ve done with Sunday-keeping.] ...and you fall from your own steadfastness; Rather, be growing in *the* grace and *the* knowledge of our Lord and Savior Jesus Christ” (vs 16-18).

That’s what we’re going to do. Let’s come back here to 2-Corinthians 4, and let’s see how even earlier Paul had this. There were those coming around and they were using the Scriptures, but using them deceitfully. Now deceitfully means that they pre-determined how they were going to do it:

- to avoid certain Scriptures
- to bear down on certain Scriptures
- to neglect other Scriptures
- to take Scriptures just a little bit out of context and then create what they want

That’s not the way we are to do it, we are ‘rightly divide the Word of Truth,’ as Paul charged Timothy to do.

2-Corinthians 4:1: “Therefore, having this ministry... [that’s the true ministry of Jesus Christ] ...according as we have received mercy, we are not fainthearted. For we have personally renounced the hidden things of dishonest gain, not walking in *cunning* craftiness, nor handling the Word of God deceitfully; but by manifestation of the Truth, we are commending ourselves to every man’s conscience before God” (vs 1-2).

That’s what we are going to do, because we are going to tackle some Scriptures which I will expose and show you how they’ve done it, and just precisely

- where they have pressed down on certain Scriptures,
- where they have neglected other Scriptures,
- where they did not give you background of the Gospels to understand what was going on
- where they have not presented the facts which are known in history to bring to bear on it so that it would be well known what was going on.

Let’s begin on page 21 (*Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction*) and it has to do with the Acts 15. It says:

Acts 15 addresses this very issue that there is no command in the New Testament to keep the Sabbath.

Well, we already proved from Heb. 4 there is. **‘Therefore, there remains Sabbath keeping for the people of God,’** who we proved from the Scriptures were both Jews and Gentiles.

When false teachers try to leaven the church with their law mentality...

This is getting at the heart and core of commandment-keeping, so they label it, they discredit it—law mentality.

A council was called to address the matter to end the confusion. The apostles and elders met to examine the teachings, these now converted former Pharisees who insisted that belief in Christ alone was insufficient for salvation. According to them, in order to obtain complete justification, it was necessary for them to be circumcised...

They’re bringing out part of the Truth.

...keep the Sabbath, observe the dietary restrictions prescribed in the Law of Moses (Acts 15:1:5-6)

They don’t read them and quote them—the whole thing—in context, which we’ll do.

...Isn't this interesting that these are virtually the same arguments of modern Sabbatarians.

No, we do not preach circumcision in the flesh. We do preach keeping the Law of clean and unclean meats, because God never rescinded that. We'll cover that at the appropriate place. We will see that in 1-Tim. 4 where they claim that God gave license to eat unclean foods, it limits it only to the clean foods. We will see in Acts 10 that that has nothing to do whatsoever with eating unclean foods or giving permission to do so, because they twist the Scriptures to their own destruction. They can preach their own ideas of lawlessness.

Therefore the early church's decision should be both interesting and enlightening...

We will see it is interesting and it is enlightening, but the total opposite of what he's trying to prove.

...the apostles who had travelled and ministered alongside the Master, however, found no merit in the legalist arguments.

Already discrediting. If you preach commandment-keeping you're a legalist. Well, let's understand something real clear: **God is Lawgiver** and it says so in James 4:12. If you keep not the Law, you're a judge of the Law and you are judging God. You see how they twist it.

And Peter articulated the Savior's frown upon law-keeping by declaring...

Then he quotes Acts 15:7-11. So I'll read what he has here:

..."Men and brethren, you know that a good while ago, God made choice among us that the Gentiles by my mouth should hear the word of the gospel and believe. And God, which knows the hearts, bear them witness giving the Holy Spirit unto them even as he did unto us and put no difference between us and them, purifying their hearts by faith. Now therefore, why do you tempt God to put a yoke on the neck of the disciples, which neither our fathers, nor we, were able to bear. But believe that through the grace of the Lord Jesus Christ we shall be saved, even as they."

This section of Scripture looks like it's supporting what they are claiming, but as we will see, it's taking the Scripture out of context so it looks like it's supporting it. We'll go through it verse-by-verse, Acts 15, and see. Here's what he wrote on the comment of it:

The apostles considered a return to any aspect of the Law a contradiction to salvation...

That is a contradictory statement right there because he will contradict himself. Things that are given here in the decree that was given come directly from the Law of Moses and is an aspect of the Law. Yet people read this and it is almost amazing, like they're reading the Scriptures with blinders on, because they're looking for what they want. After all, it's very appealing to the carnal mind to say, 'Well, you don't have to keep any law.' Please understand: **if there's no law, there's no sin** and **if there's no sin, there's no repentance**, and if there is no repentance required and no sin, then there's no death, because the 'wages of sin is death.'

...considered a return to any aspect of the Law a contradiction to the salvation by grace through faith in Christ, as well as a yoke of bondage that God never intended New Testament disciples to bear. The decree of the unified voice of the apostolic council was...

"That we trouble not them which from among the Gentiles are turned to God, but that we write unto them that they should abstain from pollutions of idols...

Which is the second commandment—is that not correct? Is that not an aspect of law? *Yes!*

...from fornication...

Meaning sexual immorality, which is all based upon the commandment, 'You shall not commit adultery,' which is based upon Lev. 18 of all the prohibitions against incest, adultery, homosexuality and bestiality.

...and from things strangled...

That's also in the Law—isn't it? You're not to drink blood.

...and from blood. For Moses of old time has in every city them that preached him being read in the synagogues every Sabbath Day."

Where were the proselytes and the Gentiles that believed? Were they in the pagan temples or were they in the synagogues? *In the synagogues!* What did they hear read? *Moses!* When did they hear it read? *Every Sabbath Day!* Meaning they were keeping the Sabbath, not rejecting it.

It's important to note two significant findings of the apostolic band from this passage:

1. The Gentile church is not told to observe the Jewish Sabbath...

It's not told not to and it's not the 'Jewish' Sabbath. That's how they denigrate the Truth of God. It is the Lord's Sabbath, and Jesus is the Lord of the Sabbath. He didn't give it just to the Jews. 'The Sabbath was made for man,' that means *all mankind*, 'and not man for the Sabbath. Therefore the Son of man is Lord also of the Sabbath' (Mark 2:27-28). That's a wrong assumption. He gives a little documentation here:

...If an observance were required of them, this would have been the perfect opportunity to disclose it, because this discussion dealt exclusively with the Old Testament law bearing upon New Testament believers.

That's a sweeping statement! It dealt exclusively with circumcision *and* certain aspects of the Laws of God. But when was the decree read to these people? *On the Sabbath Day in the synagogues!* Nowhere are they doing away with the Sabbath. They didn't have to tell them to keep the Sabbath, because *they were keeping the Sabbath*. Furthermore, they didn't tell them to keep Sunday either. That's very interesting how they blind themselves, and they're so set on their lawless agenda that they don't even understand the contradiction right in their own writings from the quote of the Scripture, which I just showed in the things that he quoted, are from where? *The Law of Moses*—aren't they? And they are from the Old Testament—aren't they? *Yes!*

But the apostolic conference determined that no aspect of the Law was in force for the Christian.

That's a blatant absolute lie and a blatant twisting of the facts! Why then do Sunday-keepers go back and pick up nine of the commandments, or eight of the commandments? They say, 'Well, those are in the New Testament.' Well, so is Sabbath-keeping.' *So is Sabbath-keeping!*

I want you to understand that we're dealing with a liar; we need to understand that. They say no aspect of the Law was in force for Christians. *An absolute lie! Deceitfully handling the Scriptures!* Their agenda is no commandment keeping, which is *lawlessness!* All lawless people are going into the Lake of Fire. If you want to follow them, why you go right ahead, but know that **God is going to judge you!** You have to choose whether you love God. You have to choose whether you're going to obey Him or not. But know this for sure, *no lawless person is going to be in the Kingdom of God!*

Not circumcision, not Jewish dietary laws, and certainly not the Sabbath. Dear Bible believer, if the early church removed itself from this obligation, how has the twentieth-century church inherited it?

There have always been true believers to come back and put it in your face, that's why, to expose you for what you are.

2. Why should the church preach Moses (Acts 15:21)?

That is, why should Christians preach laws, restrictions, diets, and day observations? That's Moses. That's Old Testament law. They concluded that there are enough Jews in the world preaching law, but we the church should preach grace through Christ Jesus.

That's not what they determined at all, nor do they understand what law that it's talking about. We'll examine that in just a little bit.

Charles Hayden Spurgeon said, 'I'm no preacher of the old, legal Sabbath...

Now there it is denigrating it again.

...I am a preacher of the gospel...

But the Gospel contains a command to keep the Sabbath, as we saw last time—didn't we? (Heb. 4:9)

...The Sabbath of the Jews is to him a task...

But it's not the Jews' Sabbath, *it is the Lord's Sabbath*, Old Testament and New Testament.

...The Lord's day of the Christian, the first day of the week, is to Him a joy, a day of rest, of peace, and thanksgiving."

Well, the seventh-day Sabbath is all of that and more for those who really understand the Truth and know how to rightly divide the Truth and obey God.

What do you mean the Law of Moses? Let's come to Acts 15 and let's read the first six verses, which he left out, so that we get the whole story. {see booklet: *The Fourteen Rules for Bible Study*} One of the most important things to understand is if you don't understand a Scripture read the verse before and then the verse after. And if you don't understand it, then you read the chapter, all the way through and get it in context. If you still don't understand it, then you read the chapter before and the chapter afterwards. And if you still don't understand it, then you get out your handy-dandy concordance and you look up the words which you're trying to understand, and look at the other Scriptures which come to bear on the same subject, and then you will begin to get a full understanding. But you can't go piece-meal here, leave out six Scriptures, and then begin to make your case.

Let's read it here now. Acts 15:1: "Now certain men who had come down from Judea... [not necessarily of the Church] ...were teaching the brethren, *saying*, 'Unless you are circumcised after

the custom of Moses, you cannot be saved.’.... [the Greek here is ‘ou dunateo’—means there’s *no power* of salvation unless you have physical circumcision. Why would they say that?] ...Therefore, after a great deal of strife and arguing with them by Paul and Barnabas... [It was a heated argument.] ...the *brethren* appointed Paul and Barnabas, and certain others from among them, to go up to the apostles and elders in Jerusalem about this question. So then, after being sent on their way by the Church, they passed through Phoenicia and Samaria, *where* they reported the conversion of the Gentiles. And they caused great joy to all the brethren. And when they came to Jerusalem, they were welcomed by the Church and the apostles and the elders, and they declared all the things that God had done with them. But there stood up certain of those who believed, who were of the sect of the Pharisees... [They accepted Christ and *added that on to all of their other beliefs*. We will see that this was the problem.] ...saying, ‘It is obligatory [needful]...’ (vs 1-5). We have two statements here:

1. It’s impossible to be saved without circumcision.
2. It’s obligatory to circumcise them and command them to keep the Law of Moses.

Most people when they read that do not understand the Pharisees’ view of the Law of Moses. First of all we’re going to look into Scriptures about what Christ said the Pharisees’ view of the Law of Moses was, and how they practice it, and you will see that it includes all the oral tradition.

Let’s begin to understand this, let’s go back to Matthew 16. What do you mean the Law of Moses? *The Pharisees’ view of the Law of Moses included all of the oral traditions*. Next time when we do *Refuting Sunday-Keeping V*, I’m going to have two books with me to back up what I say, but tonight I want to stick with the Scriptures, to show you what the Scriptures say, so that you will know and understand what God is telling us, what Christ has said.

Matthew 16:1: “Then the Pharisees and Sadducees came to *Him*, tempting *Him* and asking Him to show them a sign from heaven. But He answered *and* said to them, ‘When evening has come, you say, “*It will be fair weather, for the sky is red.*” And in the morning, *you say*, “*Today it will storm, for the sky is red and lowering.*” Hypocrites!....” (vs 1-3). Understand, Jesus Christ called the Pharisees and Sadducees ‘hypocrites.’ What is a hypocrite? *A hypocrite is one who says and does not do! A hypocrite is one who applies it to others and not to himself!* We’re going to see this hypocrisy is even worse. They claim that their laws and their doctrines are to be kept, and they call it the

Law of Moses. When the Pharisees back there in Acts 15 came and said, ‘It’s necessary to circumcise them and to command them to keep the Law of Moses,’ this is what they’re referring to, not the Law of Moses being the commandments of God, but the Law of Moses including all of the oral tradition.

Now let’s see what Jesus says about that here v 4: “‘A wicked and adulterous generation seeks after a sign, but no sign shall be given to it except the sign of Jonah the prophet’.... [Meaning He was in the heart of the earth three days and three nights. (see part one this series)] ...Then He left them and went away. Now when the His disciples came to the other side, they had forgotten to take bread. And Jesus said to them, ‘Watch out, and be on guard against the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees.’ Then they reasoned among themselves, saying, ‘*It is because we did not take bread.*’ But when Jesus knew *this*, He said to them, ‘O *you* of little faith, why are you reasoning among yourselves that *it is because you did not bring bread?*’” (vs 4-8).

“‘Do you still not understand? *Do you* not remember the five loaves of the five thousand, and how many baskets you took *up*? Nor the seven loaves of the four thousand, and how many baskets you took *up*? How is it that you do not understand that I was not speaking of bread *when I told you to beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees?*’ Then they understood that He did not say to beware of the leaven of bread, **but of the doctrine of the Pharisees and Sadducees**” (vs 9-12). What is the doctrine of the Pharisees and Sadducees? You need to understand that the Jews added all these oral laws to the commandments of God.

These were made to build a hedge and the Jews rightly tell you that they have built a hedge around it, and it’s going to keep you so busy thinking about all these laws that we added, so that you won’t sin. But in keeping your mind on all these laws that they have added, they are actually sinning, because they’re not keeping the Laws and commandments of God. That’s what this gentleman does not understand here. That’s what Sunday-keepers who promulgate this same thing do not understand. They are wrongly dividing the Scriptures.

Let’s go to Mark 8, the parallel account. We’ll look at Mark, then we’ll look at Luke, then we will ask why they said that, that they have to be circumcised. Mark 8:14: “But they had forgotten to take bread; and they did not have *any* with them, except one loaf in the ship. Then He charged them, saying, ‘Watch out! Be on guard against the leaven of the Pharisees and the leaven of Herod’” (vs 14-15).

We've got another mix in here. Leaven in this case then is a type of sin. So what He's saying, there is sin in the doctrine of the Pharisees and Sadducees. Now He brings in Herod or the Herodians. What does that mean? *Herod was the king*, so it's telling you, and telling them, 'Don't get involved in the politics of the day. You preach the Gospel, you teach the Truth, because if you get involved in politics, you're dealing with liars.' Have to be in order to be successful, but they're going to fail because their success is shallow and will end in destruction. That's why we should not get involved in politics.

Verse 16: "And they were reasoning with one another, saying, 'It is because we do not have any bread.' But Jesus knew it and said to them, 'Why do you reason that I said this because you do not have any bread? Do you still not perceive or understand? Are your hearts still hardened? Don't you see with your eyes? Don't you hear with your ears? And don't you remember?'" (vs 16-18). Then He explains to them about taking up the extra. Remember, the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees and Herodians are their teachings, doctrines; and in case of the Herodians, their politics.

Let's go to Luke 12:1. Let's see the parallel account here. All of these add a little bit to it. When you are doing a Bible study and putting things together, you have to understand a basic principle: *you take the Scriptures and put them together*. Where there appears to be a contradiction, then you have to search out to understand why there appears to be a contradiction, because the Word of God does not contradict itself. Jesus said, 'I came not to destroy the Law nor the Prophets, but to fulfill.'

Now then, the author of this book says He [Christ] did away with all aspects of law, yet quotes the Scripture which shows that law is to be kept. So he's double-minded in what he's saying. The principle is this: ***You put all the Scriptures together***, as we're doing here, ***then you get the complete understanding***. You can't get the complete understanding from part of the Scriptures.

Here's the parallel account in Luke 12:1: "During this time, an innumerable multitude was gathering, crowding so close together that they were stepping on one another. First of all He began to speak to His disciples, *saying*, 'Guard yourselves from the leaven of the Pharisees, which is hypocrisy... [false teaching—twisting the Scriptures—hypocrisy.] ...for there is nothing covered that shall not be uncovered, nor hidden that shall not be know. Therefore, whatever you have spoken in the darkness shall be heard in the light; and what you have spoken in the ear in closed rooms

shall be proclaimed on the housetops'" (vs 1-3). God is going to expose the hearts of men.

What do you mean the Law of Moses the way the Pharisees interpret it? I think this will be very instructive for you. Mark 7:1: "Then the Pharisees and some of the scribes from Jerusalem came together to Him... [This is an official entourage going down to find out what Jesus was teaching, and why the disciples didn't follow the oral traditions of the Pharisees and the scribes.] ...And when they saw some of His disciples eating with defiled hands (that is, unwashed *hands*), they found fault. For the Pharisees and all the Jews... [That means all those who were, what we would call today, *Orthodox Jews*.] ...holding fast to the tradition of the elders, do not eat unless they wash their hands thoroughly" (vs 1-3). That means vigorously with the fist.

So they were wondering why the disciples were not keeping the tradition of the elders, which they called the Law of Moses. When I read to you from *The Code of Jewish Law* next time, you will see exactly what I'm saying is true. But I want to get all the Scriptures together here, so that we have it all as we're going first through the Scriptures, then I'll bring the historical backup for it.

Verse 4: "Even *when coming* from the market, they do not eat unless they *first* wash themselves. And there were many [a multitude.] other things that they have received to observe, *such as the* washing of cups and pots and brass utensils and tables. For this reason, the Pharisees and the scribes questioned Him, *saying*, 'Why don't Your disciples walk according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashed hands?'" (vs 4-5). Because Christ never included in the Law of Moses, and the apostles never included in the Law of Moses, any of the traditions of the Jews. That's why!

Now let's see Christ's condemnation of them; why they were hypocrites: "And He answered *and* said to them, 'Well did Isaiah prophesy concerning you hypocrites, as it is written, "This people honors Me with their lips, but their hearts are far away from Me... [We have that today—don't we? A lot of people honoring God. A lot of people going to church on Sunday. A lot of people taking the name of Jesus Christ. A lot of ads in the Saturday paper, 'Come to this church.' Go to that church, go to the other one. And you see a sign or placard right out in front of the church, sun-worship, because that's what Sunday is, 10 a.m. or whatever time. Yes, they honor God with their lips.] ...but their hearts are far away from Me. **But in vain do they worship Me, teaching for doctrine the commandments of men**"'" (vs 6-7).

(go to the next track)

Let's read v 7 again. I want you to read it and let it sink in. **"But in vain do they worship Me, teaching for doctrine the commandments of men"**

- Is that not what they do in Sunday-keeping?
- Is that not what they do when they keep Easter instead of the Passover?
- Is that not what they do when they keep Christmas, instead of the Feast of Tabernacles?

Yes, they do! And it is their doctrine, which means *teaching*. And whose command is it by? *Not of God!* You can't find those in the Bible anywhere. You can search the Bible from Genesis to Revelation, you will not find one word commanding Sunday-keeping. *Not one word!* So how did it come about? We'll have a little more historical documentation and we'll show you, but it's not in the Bible.

Verse 8: "For leaving the commandment of God..." Isn't that what they do with the Sabbath? The commandment of God—***any command of God is the commandment of God***—whether it's the first commandment, the second commandment, the third commandment, the fourth commandment, or the fifth commandment, or the sixth, or seventh, eighth, ninth or tenth, or any of the other commandments that we are to keep. ***They're all the command of God.*** (When you lay it aside):

"...you hold fast the tradition of men, such as the washing of pots and cups; and you practice many other things like this.' Then He said to them, 'Full well do you reject the commandment of God...' (vs 8-9). That's precisely what they do with Sunday-keeping—isn't it? I mean, come on, let's be honest about it. Isn't that what they do? Do you think that anyone is going to be in the Kingdom of God who rejects the commands of God? Do you think that God is going to give them eternal life, who end up with the Lawless teachings that they have?

Let's go to the very last book of the Bible and the very last chapter, which tells us the thing that is most important. Revelation 22:12: "And behold, I am coming quickly... [And Christ is coming quickly in our day. You know that, has to be, if we understand the things that are taking place and the true understanding of prophecies, you know we're getting closer and closer and closer.] ...behold, I am coming quickly and My reward is with Me, to render to each one according as his work shall be."

- What if you're a lawbreaker?
- What if you reject the commandments of God?
- What if you're a Sunday-keeper and you hate the Sabbath?

- What if you keep the Eucharist and the mass and the Lord's Supper and communion and reject the Passover?
- What reward are you going to get?

Verse 13: "I am Alpha and Omega, *the Beginning and the End, the First and the Last...* [Showing that there's a continuity, from the beginning to the end. That's why Gen. 2 shows that God created the Sabbath. That's why Mark 2 says it 'was made for man.']

Verse 14: "Blessed are those who keep His commandments..." Some of these New Age Bible versions that I mentioned before, twist and turn that Scripture and make it say, 'Blessed are they who have washed their robes,' but that's not what it says in the Byzantine Greek, which is the basis for the New Testament—not the Sinaiticus, not the Vaticanus, not any other version.

"Blessed are those who keep His commandments..." ['do' comes from the Greek 'poieo,' which means *to practice*—a way of life.] ...that they may have the right to *eat of* the tree of life, and may enter by the gates into the city." The opposite of this is *cursed are those who do not do His commandments*. They shall not have right to the tree of life and they won't enter into the city.

We need to understand exactly the whole teachings of Christ, not just a little bit that suits us, not the Scriptures that make us purr and feel warm and fuzzy. Like I was talking with a woman one time and she said, 'You know, I go to church a couple times a year, so I get that warm and fuzzy feeling.' I thought, 'Yeah, lady, you really do—don't you?'

Matthew 7:21, just talking about false prophets. Now notice what these false prophets do. "Not everyone who says to Me, "Lord, Lord"... [They use the Lord's name. There are a lot of people saying that Christ is the Lord, using His name. But it's not just *saying* it.] ...Not everyone who says to Me, "Lord, Lord," shall enter into the Kingdom of Heaven, but the one who is doing the will... [And 'doing' here is the same word that we read back there in Rev. 22:14, that *practices the will*] ...of My Father, Who *is* in heaven."

Now then, that encompasses more than just certain commandments. The whole will of God is expressed in the whole Bible. If you are not practicing the will of God, let's see what's going to happen to you, even though you use the name of the Lord, even though you go to church on Sunday, and even though many people would consider you a good and a right and a fine and sincere person, which carnally in the flesh you may be. But that kind of standing before men has nothing to do with right

standing before God. It's two entirely different things.

Verse 22: "Many will say to Me in that day, 'Lord, Lord... [I was in the ministry for 30-40 years. My father was a preacher and oh, we had the best Sunday services imaginable. We had the greatest choir and we had a band and we had plays on Easter and on Christmas.] ...Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy through Your name?.... [Oh, yes, every Sunday before I spoke from the pulpit, I had everyone bow their head and asked for Your blessing, Lord, and then I prophesied. I spoke in Your name.] ...And *did we not* cast out demons through Your name?.... [If there's any proof that you really belong to God, that is if you cast out demons? Huh? But what if you keep Sunday? What if you keep Christmas? What if you keep Easter? What if you reject the commands of God? ***Casting out demons means nothing.***] ...And *did we not* perform many works of power through Your name?'"

'Oh, we had buildings and churches and colleges and hospitals, and all of those things. We had thousands and thousands of them and we sent missionaries all over the world. We did many wonderful works in Your name, Lord.'

Verse 23: "And then I will confess to them, 'I never knew you.... [They're going to be flabbergasted. *I never knew you, coming right from Christ's lips.*] ...Depart from Me, you who work lawlessness [iniquity].'" Lawlessness is what we are talking about right here where Tabor says:

But the apostolic conference determined that no aspect of the Law was in force for Christians.

That is a statement of lawlessness! The Apostle John defines that very clearly. 'Sin is the transgression of the Law.' The Greek reads: '**Sin is lawlessness.**' Because when you transgress the Law, you are lawless, you're rejecting the Laws of God.

When you do it by throwing away the Sabbath and replacing it with Sunday, you fit lawlessness so well that you need to read those verses in Matt. 7 and maybe you'll start *repenting*. Maybe you better go to God and say, 'Lord,' in the right way and ask God to grant you forgiveness and repentance, and come out of that lawlessness and come out of that sin. God will forgive you, but you can't continue in it. As I said last time, you can't have it both ways. You can't reject some of the commandments of God and claim other commandments of God, because then you are lawless for sure. It appears righteous, because you have some of *the* commandments of God, so people think that you doing good.

Let's understand, that's exactly what the scribes and Pharisees did. We also need to

understand that they really didn't keep the Law of Moses. Let's see what Jesus said to the scribes and the Pharisees. This was during the Feast of Tabernacles when He went up to the temple and was teaching.

John 7:14: "But then, about the middle of the feast, Jesus went up into the temple and was teaching. And the Jews were amazed, saying, 'How does this man know letters, having never been schooled?'" (vs 14-15). This means He was not taught in any of their rabbinic schools. And don't you think that all of the scribes and Pharisees and Sadducees conferred with each other saying, 'Was this Man ever in your rabbinic school?'

In the sermon series, *Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament*, I go through and show the Scriptures which show and prove absolutely for sure that Jesus Christ was taught by God the Father at a very early age and was awakened every morning to be taught of the Father. And that's what Jesus said. 'I have been taught of the Father.'

Verse 16: "Jesus answered them and said, 'My doctrine is not Mine, but His Who sent Me. If anyone desires to do His will, he shall know of the doctrine, whether it is from God, or *whether* I speak from My own self' (vs 16-17). I *challenge* you to do that concerning the Sabbath. I *challenge* you to start keeping the Sabbath and ask God to open your mind to understanding concerning the Sabbath and get Sunday out of your system. You will understand that that teaching and doctrine is from the Father.

"...he shall know of the doctrine, whether it is from God, or whether I speak from My own self. The one who speaks of himself is seeking his own glory; but He Who seeks the glory of Him Who sent Him... [Christ was not seeking His own glory, that's what He was saying, but other men are seeking their own glory and their own niche and whatever they want in their lives. But Christ is seeking the glory of the Father.] ...the glory of Him Who sent Him is true, and there is no unrighteousness in Him. Did not Moses give you the Law, and not one of you is practicing the Law?.... [Did you know that?] ...Why do you seek to kill Me?'" (vs 17-19).

Why didn't they keep the Law of Moses? *Because they had their own version!* We're ready to come back to Mark 7. Now you're going to understand this even more.

Mark 7:7: "But in vain do they worship Me, teaching *for* doctrine the commandments of men."

- Sunday is a commandment of men
- Christmas is a commandment of men
- Easter is a commandment of men

—and when you properly understand it, you will know that they are inspired of Satan the devil, not of God.

“For leaving the commandment of God... [And they say, ‘Well, that’s not important. Put that aside, let’s go on to more important things.’] ...you hold fast the tradition of men, *such as* the washing of pots and cups; and you practice many other things like *this*.’ Then He said to them, ‘Full well do you reject the commandment of God, so that you may observe your *own* tradition’” (vs 8-9).

That can apply to anyone. Why did He not say that about the Sabbath? *Because Pharisees and scribes kept the Sabbath*—didn’t they? *Yes!* This is not about Sabbath-keeping here, but the principle applies, so therefore, He took the fifth commandment as an example. He shows, as we’ll see a little later on in Matt. 23, what they did concerning their so-called religious practices, which also included their Sabbath-keeping. And remember, Jesus went up to the Feast and He drove out the money changers and all the things that they were doing there, because they were merchandizing the people.

Verse 10: “‘For Moses said, ‘Honor your father and your mother’; and, ‘The one who speaks evil of father or mother, let him be put to death.’ But you say...” (vs 10-11). A reinterpretation of it. You could substitute the Sabbath commandment for it and you’d be right on. God commanded, ‘Remember the Sabbath Day to keep it Holy,’ but you say, ‘We’re going to do it on Sunday.’ Let me read Spurgeon’s words again here:

I am no preacher of the old legal Sabbath, I’m a preacher of the gospel. The Sabbath of the Jews is to him a task, the Lord’s day of the Christian, the first day of the week, is to him a joy, a day of rest, of peace, and of thanksgiving.

That is an absolute lie! “...But you say, ‘If a man shall say to his father or mother, ‘Whatever benefit you might receive from me is corban’ (that is, *set aside as a gift to God*)’” (vs 10-11). A gift to the temple.

If you take what you could help your mom and dad with and you go up to the Pharisees and scribes and say, ‘Now, look, I’m going to give this money into the treasury of Go; it’s corban; it’s a gift.’ Now doesn’t that seem righteous, doesn’t that seem good? Would the scribes and Pharisees and Sadducees accept it? *But of course!* Then they would give them a dispensation—wouldn’t they? And they would loose them, and say, ‘Bless you, brother, for putting the money in the treasury, oh, we did need that’ when your mom and dad are over here and you have an obligation, and you are not taking care of them.

“...*set aside as a gift to God*), he is not obligated to help his parents’.... [In other words, by

grace he’s free, no obligation.] ...And you excuse him from doing anything for his father or his mother, nullifying the authority of the Word of God by your tradition which you have passed down; and you practice many *traditions* such as this” (vs 11-13). We can say that today, apply that to Sabbath, apply that to Sunday, and the things which we’ve already done.

We’ll cover the other part of Mark 7 when we come to the section on clean and unclean meats. We’ll get there in due time, but we’re going to take it step-by-step so we really know and understand what we are doing. Let’s come to Matthew 23 and let’s understand about proselytes. Let’s understand the function of the Pharisees and the scribes, and many people misapply vs 2 and 3. So we’re going to properly apply it.

Let me just mention here, if you don’t have our series, *Scripturalism vs Judaism*, you need to write for it, because we go through in a detailed account and survey the whole book of Matthew and get on even into the book of Acts and other places, because Scripturalism—which is keeping the Scriptures, understanding the Scriptures, living by the Scriptures—is what God wants. Judaism, as we saw, does not keep even the Law of Moses and they totally reject Christ.

Matthew 23:1: “Then Jesus spoke to the multitudes and to His disciples, saying, ‘The scribes and the Pharisees have sat down on Moses’ seat *as judges*’” (vs 1-2). Ahha! There we have it! What does it mean to sit in Moses’ seat? It means this—I explained thoroughly in the series, but I’ll just give you a summary here—*when they sit in judgment and they use the Scriptures for the judgment*. That’s what they did, even though they had all of these extra things they added to it, when it came time for a judgment, because they were the religious government and the civil government. When there was a dispute among different ones within the synagogue, then they would come to the scribes or the Pharisees and they would use the Word of God to resolve the dispute.

When they did that Jesus said, v 3: “Therefore, every judgment that they tell you to observe, observe and do. But do not do according to their works... [Which are all of these extra things that they did.] ...for they say and do not. For they bind heavy burdens and hard to bear, and lay *them* on the shoulders of men; but they will not move them with *one of their own fingers*” (vs 3-4).

Now let’s see what they did. You need to understand something very important here. All of these condemnations of the Jews and the Pharisees and the scribes are profound and why does Jesus do it? We’re not going to read all of them. I want you to

go through and read them and study them. When I read to you out of *The Code of Jewish Law*, I will read more of them and give you some examples of what they do; then you'll understand it even more. But I want to concentrate on the proselyte of Gentiles by the Jews, or that is Judaism, because that will help us understand what we're dealing with in Acts 15. Unless you understand Jewish proselytism and what they required, you cannot understand Acts 15. The author of this book did not even consider it.

Verse 14^[transcriber's correction]: “Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you shut up the kingdom of heaven before men; for neither do you yourselves enter, nor do you allow those who are entering to enter.” No, they don't want them to come to Christ. They don't want them to repent of their sins, but oh, they want them to do what they want. They want them to follow the traditions. They want them to follow the teachings of the scribes and Pharisees. Oh, you better believe it!

Verse 15: “Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you devour widows' houses, and as a pretext you offer prayers of great length. Because of this, you shall receive *the* greater judgment. Woe to you, scribes and Pharisees, hypocrites! For you travel the sea and the land to make one proselyte, and when he has become one, you make him twofold more a son of Gehenna than yourselves.” What did they require of the proselytes? What was it?

Verse 16: “Woe to you, blind guides, who say, ‘Whoever shall swear by the temple, it is not binding; but whoever shall swear by the gold of the temple, he is obligated to *fulfill* his oath.’.... [And those are all the arguments and traditional things that they had, concerning many, many different things.] ...You fools and blind!... [Fools means *idiots*. Jesus was straightforward—wasn't He? And ‘if the blind lead the blind, they're both going to fall into the ditch.’ That's what Jesus said—right? *Yes!*] ...For which is greater, the gold, or the temple which sanctifies the gold?” (vs 16-17). And He goes on with the rest of it.

Let's come to Acts 13 and let's see where the proselytes attended. They attended synagogue. I'll read a couple Scriptures here and then I'll explain to you what a Jewish proselyte into Judaism really consisted of. He's talking in the synagogue, and wherever Paul went and preached Christ, he created riots. He went there on the Sabbath, because *he was keeping the Sabbath*. This man [Tardo] says they only used the Sabbath for evangelizing, but that's not true. They used every day for evangelizing, and they went to the synagogue on the Sabbath because it ‘was to the Jew first and then to the Gentile.’

Acts 13:38: “Therefore, be it known to you, men and brethren, that through this man the remission of sins is preached to you. And in Him everyone who believes is justified from all things, from which you could not be justified by the Law of Moses” (vs 38-39)—through the animal sacrifices. No one even in the Old Covenant was justified by keeping Sabbath. That was required! Justification under the Law of Moses meant offering a sacrifice for the forgiveness of sin, for a trespass offering, for a burnt offering, or whatever it may be. Or if they had a sickness or disease, by following the prescription of the priests and bathing after seven days, or fifteen days, or forty days, then they were justified to the temple. ***None of those things can justify you to God in heaven above.***

We'll talk a little more in detail about justification. See sermon series on the book of Galatians, covering justification. Also the series on the book of Romans, going through every difficult Scripture there:

- showing the Truth of God
- showing the faith and love of God
- showing that as Paul said, ‘By grace we establish law, not abolish it.’

You need that. So, if you've been taken away by some of the arguments that this man proposes here or by whatever Sunday-keeping church you've been going to, you better stop and pay attention! You better think! You better realize, God is not going to accept that. God is not going to be mocked by that kind of teaching and by those things. He just won't be. You'll end up being rejected, just like the Jews, though you keep Sunday.

Verse 40: “Take heed, therefore, lest that which is spoken in the Prophets come upon you: ‘Behold, you despisers, and wonder and perish; for I work a work in your days, a work that you will in no way believe, *even* if one declares it to you.’ And when the Jews had gone out of the synagogue, the Gentiles entreated *him* that these words might be spoken to them on the next Sabbath” (vs 40-42).

The Gentiles were Sabbath-keeping and they said, ‘Paul, preach to us next Sabbath.’ Since these were Gentiles, as we covered earlier, why didn't Paul just say to them, ‘Look, folks, God's going to change it to Sunday, so why don't you come back tomorrow and we'll go through it, because God is going to lift you from that heavy burden.’ Listen! You need to understand something, the Sabbath was never a burden. *The Sabbath is always a blessing!* The Jews made everything a burden.

Verse 43: “Now, after the synagogue had been dismissed... [So they said this right in the synagogue, when he was done, they all came up, rushing right up to him, ‘Oh, boy, we're happy to

hear those words. Tell us next Sabbath, tell us next Sabbath.’] ...many of the Jews and the proselytes...” Who are the religious proselytes? *They were the Gentiles who believed and were part of Judaism.* They were Jewish proselytes. What is a Jewish proselyte? And then we can answer the question as to why the Pharisees said, ‘It’s obligatory for those Gentiles, which believe, to be circumcised.’ Because they were carrying over the practice of Jewish proselytism.

“...who worshiped there followed Paul and Barnabas, who, speaking to them, persuaded them to continue in the grace of God... [The grace of God was preached on the Sabbath. Tardo claims that if you keep the Sabbath, you’ve fallen from grace. *No! If you keep the Sabbath, you are in grace!* And grace is preached on the Sabbath.] ...And on the coming Sabbath, almost the whole city was gathered together to hear the Word of God” (vs 43-44). Then the Jews were filled with envy and anger.

What is it that the Jews did in proselytism? We need to understand, and I’ll just review it here, but I will read the documentation next time, that at this time with the apostles teaching, there was a man in Alexandria, Egypt, called Philo. Now Philo was a Hellenistic Jew, which means that they were Greek-speaking Jews. A Hellenistic Jew did not view things the way that the Scriptures tell us exactly. Philo’s main thing was going into the philosophies of the Greek to blend that with the teachings of Moses and the Prophets. His basic goal was to show that Moses was a greater philosopher than the philosophers of the Greeks.

In doing so, what he did was that he spiritualized many of the things away while combining it with Scriptures to make things appear really good. Then he even said, which I’ll read next week, that you don’t have to keep the Sabbath as long as your intent is good toward God. Doesn’t that sound like a little bit of modern Protestantism today? *Yes!*

Let’s come back here to Deuteronomy 10:12 and let’s see something concerning circumcision: “And now, Israel, what does the LORD your God require of you, but to fear the LORD your God, to walk in all His ways, and to love Him, and to serve the LORD your God with all your heart and with all your soul, to keep the commandments of the LORD, and His statutes which I command you today for your good?... [What they had was teachings for the proselytes and they had two categories of circumcision based upon the rest of the verse.] ...Behold, the heaven and the heaven of heavens *belong* to the LORD your God, the earth also, with all that is in it. Only the LORD had a delight in your fathers to love them, and He chose their seed after them, you above all people, as *it is* today.... [v 16

was one of the favorite Scriptures of Philo to show how the proselytes were to behave]: ...Therefore, circumcise the foreskin of your heart, and be no longer stiff-necked” (vs 14-16).

What the Hellenistic Jews would do, and, of course, this was promulgating through all the Jewish areas that were Greek-speaking, and all of the Greek proselytes. They said this: What the Gentiles have to do is abandon their pagan behavior and start keeping the commandments of God and first have a circumcision of the heart. To them a circumcision of the heart was if you forsook the pagan ways and were keeping the commandments of God.

However, they were never a true ‘Jew’ until they finalized the circumcision of the heart with the circumcision of the flesh. That’s precisely what the Pharisees who believed were teaching. They were teaching Jewish proselytism and the Jewish method that was applied to proselytes, because to them, you had to belong to the Jewish nation, and you couldn’t belong to the Jewish nation even in the Diaspora unless you were *physically* circumcised.

So now, when the truth of Jesus came along, they said, ‘Aha! Boy, this is right, we believe in Jesus, but it’s impossible for the Gentiles to be saved unless they finalize this proselytism with physical circumcision.’ That was the battle! Without knowing that bit of information, you don’t even have a clue as to what was going on in Acts 15, because that’s how the Jews proselytized. They said, ‘First put away your behavior and then when you have done that, if you want full entrance into the synagogue, and if you want to be a real citizen of the Jewish nation, you must *physically* circumcised to complete the circumcision of the heart.’ And that’s what was going on in Acts 15.

Now then, let’s come back and let’s look at some more things concerning Acts 15 and then we will see how it began with Peter and Cornelius. We might not have time to get all the way into the experience with Cornelius, but we will. I want to cover this thoroughly. I want to cover and refute every single argument that is used by these lying, Scripture-twisting, self-righteous, Gnostic hypocrites who are lawless and destined to the Lake of Fire unless they repent, and so will you unless you repent.

Acts 15:5: “But there stood up certain of those who believed, who were of the sect of the Pharisees, saying, ‘It is obligatory to circumcise them... [They couldn’t be true Jewish proselytes in Judaism—the religion of Judaism. Please understand something, too. Judaism *is not* the Law of Moses. Judaism *claims* to be the Law of Moses, but it is not. Judaism has the Scriptures and the Law of Moses buried under thousands of laws to fence it off. So

when they said, ‘It is obligatory that they be circumcised,’ that was the only way to complete the proselytizing process.] ...and to command *them* to keep the Law of Moses.’” Meaning all the oral traditions as well as the commandments of Moses.

Verse 6—we see something very interesting here—don’t we? “Then the apostles and the elders gathered together to see about this matter... [Who’s missing in this discussion? *Pharisees!* Even though they believed, they did not participate in this discussion. This is strictly a church decision here.] ...And after much discussion had taken place, Peter stood up and said to them, ‘Men, brethren, you know that from *the* early days, God made *the* choice among us *that* by my mouth the Gentiles should hear the Word of the Gospel, and believe. And God, Who knows the heart... [In the Greek it really means ‘the heart knowing God.’] ...bore witness to them *by* giving them the Holy Spirit, even as *He did* to us, and made no difference between us and them, *and* has purified their hearts through faith. Now therefore, why do you tempt God... (vs 6-10)

- Do you tempt God by keeping His commandments? *No, you tempt God by adding all the traditions,* as we saw there in Mark 7.
- Do you tempt God if you love Him? *No!*
- Do you tempt God if you follow the Laws of God? *No!*
- Do you tempt God if you believe in the greater circumcision of the heart through Christ, and not the circumcision of the flesh? *No! You agree with God.*

They tempt God when they come along and try and impose their view of the Law of Moses upon the new believers.

“...Now therefore, why do you tempt God by putting a yoke upon the necks of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear?” (v 10). All the traditions, not just the circumcision.

Let’s understand something: *The Laws and commandments of God, even given by Moses to the people, was never a yoke, was never a bondage.* God said He gave all these things to them for their good always! *Always for their good!* What was against them was sin and that was for their destruction. What was against them were all the traditions that they added, because that is sin, sin done in the name of God in a corporate organizational setting, which is precisely the same thing that is done with Sunday today. You need to understand. You need to have your eyes open.

Verse 11: “But by the grace of *the* Lord Jesus Christ we believe we shall be saved in the same manner as they also.” *Do we believe that, but*

we also believe that through grace you establish law, not eliminate it.

Scriptures from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order a Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter

Scriptural References:

- 1) 2-Timothy 2:14-18
- 2) 2-Peter 3:15-18
- 3) 2-Corinthians 4:1-2
- 4) Acts 15:1-5
- 5) Matthew 16:1-12
- 6) Mark 8:14-18
- 7) Luke 12:1-3
- 8) Mark 7:1-9
- 9) Revelation 22:12-14
- 10) Matthew 7:21-23
- 11) John 7:14-19
- 12) Mark 7:7-13
- 13) Matthew 23:1-4, 14-17
- 14) Acts 13:38-44
- 15) Deuteronomy 10:12-16
- 16) Acts 15:5-11

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Hebrews 4
- 1-Timothy 4
- Acts 10
- James 4:12
- Leviticus 18
- Mark 2:27-28
- Hebrews 4:9
- Genesis 2

Also referenced:

Sermon Series:

- *Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament*
- *Scripturalism vs Judaism*
- *Galatians*
- *Romans*

Books:

- *Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction, 25 Reasons Why Christians Keep Sunday* by Dr. Russell K. Tardo
- *The Code of Jewish Law* by Solomon Ganzfried & Hyman Goldin

Booklet: *Fourteen Rules of Bible Study*

Refuting Sunday-Keeping V Code of Jewish Law

Fred R. Coulter

It's very vital that we understand the Word of God, that we understand what it's saying. We come in this series to Acts 15. I want to cover several aspects here which are very important for us to grasp. We need to understand that what is being said here, what is being written, is not being written from the perspective of a Protestant-type of understanding, but it is true Christianity *vs* Judaism.

One of the mistakes that most people make is that Judaism equals the Law of Moses. Because Judaism says the Law of Moses encompasses everything that they did with all of their traditions. Let's go back to Acts 15, and let's see exactly what it says and then we will ask some very profound questions.

Acts 15:1: "Now certain men who had come down from Judea were teaching the brethren, *saying* 'Unless you are circumcised after the custom of Moses, you cannot be saved.'.... [The Greek means it's *impossible for one to receive salvation unless there is the physical circumcision.*] ...Therefore, after a great deal of strife and arguing with them by Paul and Barnabas, the *brethren* appointed Paul and Barnabas, and certain others from among them, to go up to the apostles and elders in Jerusalem about this question. So then, after being sent on their way by the Church, they passed through Phoenicia and Samaria, *where* they reported the conversion of the Gentiles. And they caused great joy to all the brethren. And when they came to Jerusalem, they were welcomed by the Church and the apostles and the elders, and they declared all the things that God had done with them" (vs 1-4).

"But there stood up certain of those who believed, who were of the sect of the Pharisees... [We need to understand what it is that the Pharisees taught. We need to understand that their interpretation of the Law of Moses is that it includes all the oral traditions as well as the written word of Moses.] (So when they come): ...saying, 'It is obligatory to circumcise them, and to command *them* to keep the Law of Moses'" (v 5). Now we will see the correct understanding of this and the correct interpretation of this, based upon the facts which were taking place at that time.

Verse 6: "Then the apostles and the elders gathered together to see about this matter. After much discussion had taken place, Peter stood up and said to them, 'Men, brethren, you know that from *the* early days, God made *the* choice among us *that* by my mouth the Gentiles should hear the Word of

the Gospel, and believe. And God, Who knows the heart... [*the heart-knowing God* as it is in the Greek] ...bore witness to them *by* giving them the Holy Spirit, even as *He did* to us, And made no difference between us and them, *and* has purified their hearts through the faith. Now therefore, **why do you tempt God by putting a yoke upon the necks of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear?**" (vs 6-10).

We need to understand what this means. Most Protestants and Catholics assume that God's laws and commandments are a burden, that God's laws and commandments are bondage. So therefore, they reject out of hand everything that's contained in the Law of Moses, without even reading it, without even trying to understand it. If that's what you have done, then you've made a grave error.

Let's go back to the book of Deuteronomy and let's understand something concerning the commandments and the laws of God, that we can understand that these were given to them *for their good always*. ***They were never a yoke of bondage!***

Deuteronomy 4:1: "And now, O Israel, hearken to the statutes and to the judgments which I teach you, in order to do them, so that you may live..." Most people assume that God gave these laws to the Jews as punishment that they may die. Of course, the Jews claim that all of Israel is now them, because they say that the ten tribes who were carried off into captivity before the Jews were, that the ten tribes were absorbed into the Gentiles and they no longer exist. Such is not the case. The ten tribes, God said in Amos 9 would be filtered through many nations, but God would not lose one seed. I don't have the time to go into it here, but the blessing that came upon Abraham, that He promised to give to the seed through Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob and the twelve sons of Jacob, as well as Ephraim and Manasseh, the two sons of Joseph—all of them consist of the children of Israel.

The Jews in speaking these things are not honest with you with the Scripture claiming that it all belongs to them, and that whatever Moses said is Judaism. That is not correct! *Judaism is not the Law of Moses*. Judaism is something entirely different. God gave these laws

"...so that you may live and go in and possess the land which the LORD God of your fathers gives *to you*. You shall not add to the word which I command you; neither shall you take away

from it, so that you may keep the commandments of the LORD your God which I command you” (vs 1-2). He did this and gave it to them for their good always.

Verse 34: “Or has any god attempted to go and take a nation for himself from the midst of another nation by trials, by signs, and by wonders, and by war, and by a mighty hand, and by an outstretched arm, and by great *awe-inspiring* terrors, according to all that the LORD your God did for you in Egypt before your eyes? It was shown to you so that you might know that the LORD *is* God, *and there is* none other beside Him. He made you hear His voice out of heaven so that He might teach you. And He showed you His great fire upon the earth. And you hears His words out of the midst of the fire. And because **He loved your fathers**... (vs 34-37).

What God did with Israel was *based upon love*,

- it was not based upon hatred
- it was not based upon a burden
- it was not based upon giving people something that they could not bear

We need to understand that. When you accuse God of that, in the carnal reasoning that so many people do, they are going against God and accusing God of evil. That’s precisely what Protestants do and Catholics do and orthodox do in their doctrines. We need to understand that.

Verse 37: “And because He loved your fathers, therefore He chose their seed after them, and brought you out in His sight with His great power out of Egypt, In order to drive out from before you nations greater and mightier than you to bring you in, to give you their land for an inheritance, as *it is* this day. Therefore, know this day and fix it in your heart that the LORD is God in heaven above and on the earth beneath. There is none other. Therefore, you shall keep His statutes and His commandments which I command you this day, so that it may go well with you...” (vs 37-40). This is not a yoke of bondage.

- Is there a yoke of bondage in having no other gods before you?
- Is there a yoke of bondage that you make no graven images and don’t bow down and worship them?
- Is it bondage that you don’t take the name of the Lord your God in vain?
- Is it bondage that you remember the Sabbath day and keep it holy, because God is Creator?
- Is it bondage to honor your father and mother?
- Is it bondage to not commit murder?

- Is it bondage to not commit adultery?
- Is it bondage to not steal?
- Is it bondage to not bear false witness?
- Is it bondage to not covet?

Show me, which one is bondage? It’s only bondage to sinners, because sinners won’t obey.

If you’re trying to follow God and if you’re trying to receive salvation through Jesus Christ, know and understand: *you cannot accuse God of evil*. Your salvation is null and void, you have none, regardless of how you may feel, regardless of what you profess. And as we have seen, all of those who profess, ‘Lord, Lord,’ and do not do the will of the Father in heaven above are going to be cast in the Lake of Fire.

- It’s not God’s will to cast away the Sabbath.
- It is not God’s will to cast away the Holy Days.
- It is not God’s will to cast away His commandments, which He gave for their good

“...so that it may go well with you and with your children after you, and so that you may prolong your days upon the earth which the LORD your God gives you forever” (v 40). Amazing—isn’t it? *Yes!*

Deuteronomy 5:29—this is after giving the Ten Commandments. One great mistake that all religions make concerning what is called the covenant with Israel is this: God did not give the Holy Spirit in general to the people of Israel. None of the twelve tribes received the Spirit of God. That was not given in general until the Day Pentecost. Only certain of the prophets and the kings received the Holy Spirit of God; no else did. What was done under the Old Covenant was not a matter of salvation. These people were not working for salvation by works, because ***no salvation to anyone, anywhere, at any time, in any covenant, in any dispensation, ever came by works***. You need to understand that.

That’s the whole story beginning with Abel, Noah, Abraham, Isaac and Jacob. See sermon series on the book of Romans—we go in-depth, verse-by-verse-by-verse, looking at everything, and understanding it. You cannot understand ‘the works of law’ question and ‘justification by faith’ unless you have that series and unless you know it. You will see there are certain key mistranslations in the *King James Version* of the Bible, which led to the misunderstanding concerning ‘works of law,’ and the commandments of God. The summary of the book of Romans is this: ***Through grace we do not***

establish lawlessness, we establish law! You need to understand that.

Deuteronomy 5:28: “‘And the LORD heard the voice of your words when you spoke to me. And the LORD said to me, “I have heard the voice of the words of this people, which they have spoken to you. They have well said all that they have spoken.” They said, ‘Oh, don’t let us hear the voice of God anymore. Moses, we’ll hear you.’ He said they spoke well in what they said, because they’re carnal. They didn’t have the Spirit of God. They didn’t want to listen to the Word of God.

Is that the same way with you? When you hear the commandments of God read, do you have the same reaction as the children of Israel? Do you bristle and get all angry and all in a torque, and you uphold your self-righteous Sunday-keeping as some great righteous thing? Let me tell you very clearly, since God tells us to keep His commandments—we’ll see this again and again which we already have—if you reject those commandments, if you reject the Sabbath and you keep Sunday, **you are trying to receive salvation by the works of Sunday-keeping.** And the very thing that you accuse Sabbath-keepers of doing, Sunday keepers are doing. **Sabbath-keepers do not look to the Sabbath for justification by works to receive salvation.** We believe in salvation by faith, through the grace of God, but we also believe that we are to keep the commandments of God *for our own good.* We’ll again review a few texts in the New Testament to verify that.

Verse 29: “Oh, that there were such a heart in them...” God never gave the Holy Spirit. They were carnal minded, hard-hearted, stiff-necked, and rebellious from the day that God brought them out of the land of Egypt. But because of the promise that He gave to Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob that He would deal with the seed of Abraham, He did. Not because of the righteousness of the children of Israel, but because God is true. God gave the promise to Abraham and God cannot lie. So the children of Israel being carnal, they never received the Holy Spirit, because the Holy Spirit is to bring you the circumcision of the heart, to change your nature, so that

- you love God
- you love His commandments
- you love His laws,
- you love His statutes and judgments
- you love God’s way
- ***And you love God***

They didn’t have that heart. **“Oh, that there were such a heart in them that they would fear Me and keep all My commandments always, so that it**

might be well with them and with their children forever!” (v 29). Does that sound like a yoke of bondage? We have to understand what the yoke of bondage is.

Verse 32: “And you shall be careful to do as the LORD your God has commanded you. You shall not turn aside to the right hand or to the left. You shall walk in all the ways which the LORD your God has commanded you so that you may live... [There it is again. God is a God of life. God is a God of lawgiving, because He is Lawgiver.] ...and that *it may be well with you...* [Not only that you may live, but it may be well with you.] ...and you may prolong *your days in the land which you shall possess*” (vs 32-33).

Deuteronomy 6:1—this is Old Testament, but what I’m reading to you is really New Testament doctrine. When you come to understand it, aside from the animal sacrifices and the temple ritual—which have been superseded by the High Priesthood of Christ, the temple in heaven above, and the circumcision of the flesh—has been superseded by the circumcision of the heart. Rather than doing away with those things, God made them spiritual; God made them more binding; God made them as such that we are obligated to do so with the power of His Holy Spirit. *No man*, as Paul said, can say by the Spirit of God that Christ is anathema, which is what you’re doing when you say that all these commandments have been done away.

The covenant has been changed, but not the commandments. The commandments have not been done away. Yes, the commandments have been changed. I’ll back up on that and say, *yes, they have been changed to a higher standard.* Now with the Holy Spirit of God you are to have the heart to love God, to love Christ, to love His commandments, to want to keep them, because you know they’re not a burden.

Deuteronomy 6:1: “Now these *are* the commandments, the statutes, and the judgments which the LORD your God commanded to teach you so that you might do *them* in the land where you go to possess it, that you might fear the LORD your God, to keep all His statutes and His commandments which I command you, you, and your son, and your son’s son, all the days of your life, and so that your days may be prolonged” (vs 1-2). You show me where there’s bondage in that. You tell me where there’s bondage in that. I’ll show you what the real bondage is here in just a little bit.

Verse 3: “Hear therefore, O Israel, and be diligent to *observe* it, so that it may be well with you...” Again. How many times have seen ‘that it be well with you, that you live’? Is it a yoke of bondage

to have things go well with you? Is it a yoke of bondage that you may live and prolong your days? *I say no!* A yoke of bondage comes from something else.

“...and that you may greatly multiply, as the LORD God of our fathers has promised you, in the land that flows with milk and honey. Hear, O Israel. Our one God is *the LORD, the LORD*. And you shall love the LORD your God with all your heart and with all your soul and with all your might” (vs 3-5).

Jesus quoted that. That’s New Testament doctrine and that’s the whole goal of the New Covenant. God gave it to them here in a carnal way, and carnally speaking they could keep it in the letter of the Law if they would apply themselves and do it rightly. But they didn’t do it.

Now let’s come to the New Testament; let’s answer the question again. We may have to come back here again, because some people are just as hard hearted and as stubborn and rebellious and resolute in their way against the Sabbath and the commandments of God that they will not listen. They have been so fully indoctrinated in false doctrine for so long, and have heard it for so many Sundays that they just cannot get it through their head. The Sabbath never was a burden, and it is not a burden. ***None of the commandments of God are a burden.***

1-John 5:2: “By this standard we know... [you have to know] ...that we love the children of God: when we love God and keep His commandments.... [How much different does that sound from what Moses wrote? I tell you, nay, not much different at all; it’s identical from what we just read in Deut. 6.] ...For this is the love of God: that we keep His commandments; and His commandments are not burdensome” (vs 2-3).

What we’re talking about in Acts 15 cannot be the commandments of God. Some of these Scriptures you have to go over and over and over, that you really get the point.

This is what Jesus said, John 14:15 “If you love Me... [Do you love Jesus Christ? Do you?] ...**keep...My commandments...**” You also need to understand something very profound and important, which is this: ***The One Who became Jesus Christ was the One Who was the Lord God of the Old Testament***, Who gave the Ten Commandments and judgments and statutes and all that to the children of Israel. When He says, ‘If you love Me, keep My commandments’; let’s put it around the other way. If you don’t keep His commandments, you don’t love Him—do you?

As a matter of fact in 1-John 2:3, it says, ‘He that says I know Him and keeps not His commandments is a liar.’ If you are a Sunday-keeper, you live a lie, you believe a lie. If you preach Sunday, *you are a liar*. You don’t know God and the Truth is not in you, because the Truth of God is the commandments of God, the statutes of God, and all of that. We’re talking serious business here.

- You want eternal life? *You do it God’s way!* You don’t do it your way.
- You want to receive the Spirit of God? *He only gives it to those who obey Him!*
- Are you obeying Him? *Jesus said, ‘If you love Me, keep My commandments!’*

And ***nowhere*** did he abrogate the Sabbath. We saw that yes, there is in the New Testament a direct commandment, which says, ‘*Therefore, there remains Sabbath-keeping for the people of God.*’ That’s way after the resurrection. That’s way after the full establishment of the New Covenant. And *people of God* refers to the children of Israel, as well as the Gentiles.

I want you to think about this. Now if I’ve sort of goaded you on Sunday-keeping, and you’re a Sunday-keeper and a staunch Sunday-keeper, you need to just back down and think. You need to ask yourself: Do I or any man have the right to abrogate the commandments of God? ***NO!*** If you do, you sit in the seat of God, and you judge God and you judge His laws, and you judge His commandments, and you judge yourself unworthy of salvation, because ***no one is going to receive salvation or enter into the Kingdom of God unless they keep the commandments of God.*** And furthermore, you testify to yourself by your own words that you do not truly love God.

Verse 23: “Jesus answered and said to him, ‘If anyone loves Me, he will keep My word... [We’re not just down to a set of commandments, but we are down to the words of Christ.] ...and My Father will love him, and We will come to him and make Our abode with him. The one who does not love Me does not keep My words [sayings].... [What was one of the ‘sayings’ that we first went through in one of the very first things on the Holy Sabbath series? {see sermon series on the Holy Sabbath}] ...The one who does not love Me does not keep My words...’” (vs 23-24).

The words of Jesus Christ: ‘The Sabbath was made for man and not man for the Sabbath; therefore the Son of man [Jesus Christ] is the Lord also of the Sabbath Day’ (Mark 2:27-28). Sunday is not the Lord’s Day. Sabbath is the Lord’s Day. We’ll get in how they started keeping Sunday a little bit later, but here we need to lay the groundwork so you really

know and understand it. Here's what's more important: "...and the Word that you hear is not Mine, but the Father's, Who sent Me" (v 24).

So, you think you love God by keeping Sunday? *No!* You think you love the Father by keeping Sunday? *No!* You don't keep Their sayings, you don't keep Their words, you don't love Them. You may have a carnal, fuzzy feeling in your heart, but people can feel the same way about their sports team. People can feel the same way about winning the lotto. Now if that sort of goads you, it's intended to, because you're sitting on a premise that is not true. ***The commandments of God are not a burden.***

Now let's just review one little section here in Mark 7. We covered that very thoroughly last time and I promised you that I would read from the *Code of Jewish Law*. I'm here to tell you very clearly, if you've never heard of this book, if you've never read this book, if *you do not understand Judaism, you do not understand the New Testament and it's impossible for you to understand Romans and Galatians and Hebrews, and all the difficult Scriptures*, which this man Dr. Russell K. Tardo, and this book—*Sunday Facts & Sabbath Fiction*—attempts to do and he is completely ignorant of the facts of the Bible. He's ignorant of the facts of history. He does not know Judaism, and it's important that you understand about Judaism and what they did. I'm going to give you some examples out of the *Code of Jewish Law*, which contains thousands and thousands and thousands of laws. This, as we will see, was the burden, not the commandments of God.

Let's pick it up in Mark 7:5: "For this reason, the Pharisees and the scribes questioned Him, *saying*, 'Why don't Your disciples walk according to the tradition of the elders, but eat bread with unwashed hands?'.... [Oh, that's such a great sin—isn't it?] ...And He answered *and* said to them, 'Well did Isaiah prophesy concerning you hypocrites, as it is written, "This people honors Me with their lips, but their hearts are far away from Me. But in vain do they worship Me, teaching *for* doctrine the commandments of men"' (vs 5-7).

Understand: Sunday-keeping is a commandment *of man*, and if you try to worship God on Sunday, you are worshiping God *in vain*, no doubt about it. You have a counterfeit Christ, you have a counterfeit day, you have a counterfeit salvation, which leads to the Lake of Fire. Now, those are strong words. They are intended to be, because Sabbath-keepers need to just back up and say, 'We are tired of Sunday-keepers projecting their lies upon us and telling lies about Sabbath-keepers, telling lies about God, telling lies about Christ,

thinking that you can be saved *in* your sins, when Christ came to save you *from* your sins.'

Christ offended a lot of people here. If people are offended at Truth, then be offended. The Gospel of Christ, with the Word of God, is like a sharp two-edged sword, and it cuts to dividing asunder of the heart and the mind and is a discernor of the thoughts and spirit. Be offended, because you're offended at God. Christ did not come to play politics. Christ did not come to please people. Christ came:

- to reveal the Father
- to call His apostles
- to be the sacrifice for all mankind
- to bring salvation to His Church
- to raise up His church and raise up His people who would be commandment keepers

Verse 7: "'But in vain do they worship Me, teaching *for* doctrine the commandments of men.' For leaving the commandment of God, you hold fast the tradition of men, *such as* the washing of pots and cups; and you practice many other things like *this*.' Then He said to them, 'Full well do you reject the commandment of God, so that you may observe your *own* tradition'" (vs 7-9).

Now, I'm going to read to you from the *Code of Jewish Law*. Some of these things I will summarize, some of them I will read particular ones, so that you may understand that ***this is the bondage***, that these are the laws and traditions which the Jews added to bury the Word of God, to put a fence around it, so no one can find it, and to make it an absolute burden upon every one. This is Orthodox Judaism. Orthodox Judaism is the successor of the Pharisees and they rightly and proudly say so. I suggest if you're really serious in understanding this, order it, because I would have to spend ten sermons or more just reading from this.

You will see in just the few things that I am going to read how they twist the Scriptures, how they have their own interpretation on it, which is not the correct interpretation from God. First of all, let me just read a summary of the sections here, just so you get an idea of this. When I read them I want you to think about where in the Old Testament are these laws and I'll give you the answer before I start—*nowhere!* These are the *oral traditions*, which now have been written down. There are four volumes within this book

Volume I—Table of Contents:

1. Rules of Conduct upon Rising in the Morning.
2. Hand Washing in the Morning

3. On Dressing and Deportment
4. Rules of Decency
5. Cleanliness of Places Used for Holy Purposes
6. Laws Relating to Benedictions
7. The Morning Benedictions
8. What May Not Be Done From Dawn Until Praying Time
9. Fringes
10. Phylacteries
11. The Mezuzah
12. Purity the Body And Places for Holding Services
13. The Sanctity of the Synagogue and the House of Study
14. Special Verses of Psalms
15. Kaddish, Barhu, Minyan and Hazan
16. The Shema and its Benedictions
17. Laws concerning reading the Shema

You just can't pick up the Bible and read the Shema, which we just read in Deut. 6, about loving the Lord your God with all your heart and mind and soul and being. No, you can only read it at a certain set time.

18. Silent prayers
19. Laws concerning "Mashiv Haruah" and "Tal Umatar"
20. Hazan's Repetition of the Shemoneh Esreh

Then several of these others. I won't try and pronounce all of these Hebrew words here.

21. The Making up of Omitted Prayers
22. Petition for Grace

If you didn't get your prayer, you've got to make it up.

23. The Reading of The Torah
24. Laws Concerning Errors and Defects in a Sefer Torah
25. Rules concerning Asher
26. The Mourner's Kaddish
27. The Study of the Torah
28. The Scroll and Other Holy Books.
29. Moral Laws
30. Tale-bearing, Slander, Vengeance, and Bearing a Grudge
31. All of Man's Intentions Must be for the Sake of Heaven
32. Rules Concerning Physical Wellbeing
33. Things Forbidden Because They are Dangerous
34. Laws Concerning Charity
35. Separation of the First Portion of the Dough
36. The Salting of Meat
37. The Immersion of Vessels

38. Laws Concerning Bread, Cooked Food, and Milk of a Non-Jew
39. Eating and Drinking Before Regular Meals
40. Washing the Hands Before Meals
41. The Breaking of Bread
42. Laws Concerning Meals
43. Benedictions Over Special Courses During Meals
44. Laws Concerning the Washing of Hands and the Saying of Grace After Meals
45. Formal Grace (of Three or More)
46. Forbidden Foods
47. Non-Jewish Wine and Making Vessels Fit for Use

Volume II—Table of Contents:

48. Benedictions Over the Five Species of Grain
49. The Benediction Over Wine
50. Benedictions Said Before Enjoying Food and Drink
51. The Concluding Benediction
52. The Benedictions, "Bore Peri Haetz", etc.
53. Benedictions Over Soup, Fruit and Vegetable Extracts
54. Principal and Accessory Foods
55. Order of Precedence Relating to Benedictions
56. Benedictions Pronounced Erroneously
57. Benediction Over Food Served more than Originally Intended
58. Benediction Over Fragrance.
59. Benedictions over Joy and Grief
60. Benedictions Over Sights in Nature
61. The Benediction "Haggomel"
62. Concerning Commerce
63. Wronging by Means of Words
64. Dealing in Forbidden Objects
65. Interest on Loans
66. Agreements to Trade in Business.
67. Vows and Oaths.
68. Prayers When Traveling
69. The Afternoon Service
70. The Evening Service.
71. The Order of the Night
72. The Holiness of The Sabbath
73. Work Done by a Non-Jew on The Sabbath
74. Embarking on a Vessel... [That is a ship or boat] ...on The Sabbath
75. The Sabbath Candles
76. Prayers on Sabbath and Festivals
77. The Kiddush and The Sabbath Meals
78. The Torah Reading on The Sabbath and Festivals
79. Laws Concerning Maftir
80. Some Labors Forbidden on The Sabbath

81. The Four Premises With Regard to Sabbath Laws
82. The Prohibition Against Removing Thing from One Domain Into Another
83. The Enclosure of Space
84. Carrying Garments or Ornaments on The Sabbath
85. If a Fire Breaks Out of The Sabbath
86. Bathing on the Sabbath
87. The Resting of Cattle on The Sabbath
88. Things Forbidden to Be Handled on the Sabbath
89. Concerning a Base for Things Forbidden
90. Doing Things That Are not Actual-Work by a Non-Jew
91. One in Pain, and One Not Critically Ill
92. One Who Is Critically Ill—Forced to Transgress a Precept
93. Concerning Childbirth
94. Inter-Community of Courts
95. Inter-Community of Boundaries
96. the Maariv Service and the Havdalah
97. Laws Concerning Rosh Hodesh (New Moon)

I won't read any in Volume III, but it just goes on and on. Many of these pertain to the Jewish version of keeping the Holy Days. Then they have their own laws interpreting the Law of Moses.

God intended the Law of Moses as Moses wrote it, to be read and interpreted and understood according to the way that the plain simple fact of it. I'll read some of these laws for you, so you understand what we're talking about.

(go to the next track)

Let me begin reading here in Volume I, Chapter 1: *Rules of Conduct upon Rising in the Morning*. Now this is a burden. I want you to think about this, and I want you to understand this is not in the Old Testament. These are the things that were added. This is the burden, which the Jews added to the laws of God. These are the things which reject God, and keep people bound in physical things to do and think of. The whole object of the *Code of Jewish Law* is to have so many things going on and so many things that you have to think about, that you cannot sin. That's an utter failure.

You cannot corral human nature with any kind of rule or regulation. Human nature can only be changed with the true circumcision of the heart. Now here it says, they quote Psalm 16:8: "I have set the Lord always before me..." Here's their interpretation of it. Remember this is Pharisaic doctrine. When it says, 'Certain of the Pharisees said,' there in Acts 15, these are some of the things that they were getting at. We will get into circumcision a little bit later, but I want to cover *the*

burden. Then we'll understand about circumcision later, because we have to understand about Jewish proselytism vs Christian evangelizing, and there's a difference.

Vol. I, Chp. 1

1. The aforesaid is a cardinal principle in the Torah and a fundamental rule of life among the pious. For the attitude and conversation of a man when he is in the presence of a king are not the same as when he is in his own home among his family and his intimates. In the presence of royalty a man takes special care that his speech and demeanor be refined and correct. How much more should a man be careful of his deeds and words, realizing that the Great King, The Holy One, blessed be He, whose glory fills the whole universe, is always standing by him and observing all his doings, as it is said in the Scriptures: "Can a man hide himself in secret places that I cannot see him?" says the Lord. "Do I not fill heaven and earth?" (Jer. 23:24). Bearing this in mind, he will acquire a feeling of reverence and humility and he will be ashamed and afraid to do anything wrong.

Put a guilt trip on him. This is the opposite of what God wants. God wants you to love Him. When you do, and you keep His commandments, you have nothing to be ashamed of, you have nothing to be afraid of. And 'perfect love,' as John says, 'casts out fear.' *This is a bondage. This is a yoke.*

2. A man should be conscious of the presence of God even while still lying in bed; and as soon as he awakes he should acknowledge the loving-kindness of the Lord, blessed be He, inasmuch as the soul, which was committed to God faint and weary, was restored to him renewed and refreshed, thus enabling him to serve God devotedly all day. For this is the goal of every man; as it is said: "They are new every morning; great is Thy faithfulness," (Lam. 3:23), which means, every morning man is like a newborn living being; and for this he must thank God with all his heart. While still in his bed he should say: "I thank Thee, O living and eternal King, Who has mercifully restored my soul within me; Thy faithfulness is great." (One may say this prayer although one's hands are yet unwashed, since the name of God is not mentioned in it). When saying this prayer, one must pause briefly

between the words *behemiah* (graciously) and *rabbah* (great).

5. If one is able to rise at midnight and perform the midnight service, there is nothing more meritorious than this...

Justification by works!

I want you to listen very carefully to this. I want you to know how superstitious and how ungodly that this really is and how much of a bondage it is. Here's an ungodliness in Judaism, yet it's looked upon as being Godly. You ask: Where in all of the Old Testament does it give us these instructions?

Vol. I, Chp. 2: Hand Washing in the Morning:

1. Since every man upon rising from his sleep in the morning is like a newborn creature, insofar as the worship of the Creator is concerned, he should prepare himself for worship by washing his hands out of a vessel, just as the priests used to wash their hands daily out of the wash-basin before performing their service in the Temple.

Is an average person performing a duty in the temple? *No!* Was he required to do it? *No!* Were the priests required to do it? *Yes!* Are they priests? *No!* Should they do it? *No!*

This hand-washing is based on the biblical verse; (Psa. 26:6-7): "I will wash my hands in innocence, and I will compass Thy altar, O Lord; that I may publish with a loud voice," etc.

Part of this prophecy refers to Herod when he washed his hands. Part of this prophecy refers to what Jesus would do.

There is another reason given by the Kabbalists...

The Kabbalists are mystic Jews who believe in a mystic Judaism, which is no more than demonism. And they believe in the ten steps of the Sefirot, which is the sacred tree, which is really only a depiction of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. From what I've just covered here already, you need to understand something very important: *If you don't know Judaism, you don't know the problems in the New Testament.* It's that simple.

Have you ever read anything out of the Talmud? *Probably not!* Have you ever read anything out of the Kabbalah? *Probably most of you have never heard of it!*

...by the Kabbalists, (Zohar, quoted in Beth Joseph), for this morning hand-

washing; when a man is asleep, the holy soul departs from his body...

Nowhere in the Bible does it say that.

...and an unclean spirit descends upon him....

Isn't that nice of God, to let your soul go out of you and send a demon upon you? *This is pure demonism!*

...When rising from sleep, the unclean spirit departs from his entire body, except from his fingers, and does not depart until one spills water upon them three times alternately.

That's not in the Bible. That's not Scriptural. This is the burden.

One is not allowed to walk four cubits (six feet) without having one's hands washed, except in cases of extreme necessity.

2. The first garment which a male must put on, is the *tallit katan* (the small four-fringed garment, commonly known as the *arba kanforth*, *four cornered*), for one is not allowed to walk even as much as four cubits without having a fringed garment on. But as his hands are still unwashed, he may not say the benediction on putting it on.
3. The ritual hand-washing in the morning is performed as follows:

Now notice, all of these laws and rules and regulations designed to keep you so busy thinking on them that supposedly you can't break the commandments of God. But the truth of it is, Judaism is breaking the commandments of God by doing it. And, of course, Protestants don't know anything about this. They just assume that the Law of Moses spoken of there by the Pharisees in Acts 15 means the first five books of the Bible. They don't have a clue that it includes everything as contained in this book, *Code of Jewish Law*. You need to get it, you need to read it, you need to understand it. Here's how it was to be done:

Take a cup of water with the right hand and put it in the left; pour some water upon the right hand. Take the cup back in the right hand and pour some water on the left. This performance is repeated three times. It is best to pour the water over the hands as far as the wrists, but in case of emergency it suffices if the water covers the hands up to the joints of the fingers. One must also wash his face in honor of the Creator, as it is said (Gen. 9:6): "For in the image of God He hath made the man." One must also rinse the mouth, because we must pronounce the Great Name in

purity and cleanliness. Afterward the hands are dried. Special care must be taken to dry the face thoroughly.

I could read on and on and on with all of these laws of Judaism. You get that book. You get that book so you can read it. Some of it is silly. Some of it is just downright depressing. All of it is against the commandments of God. And through doing these things they are worshiping God in vain. It's filled with demonic superstition. That was the burden, that was the burden that the fathers could not bear.

Vol. I, Chp. 3

6. A male person must not walk even as much as four cubits (six feet), or utter a single holy word, while being bareheaded. Minor children, too, must be trained to cover their heads...

That's why the Orthodox Jews wear these silly hats.

...so that they may be imbued with the fear of God. As it is related in the Talmud of Rab Nahman bar Isaac (Shabbat 156b): "The astrologers said to the mother of Rab Nahman bar Isaac: 'Your son is destined to be a thief.' He would not let his mother cover his head. So she said to him: 'Cover your head, so that the fear of God may be upon you.'"

That's just strictly out of their own imagination—astrologers—mystic Judaism is into astrology. This should be a real education for you. Here's one that's funny:

8. A man should be careful not to pass between two women, two dogs, or two swine. Nor should two men permit a woman, a dog, or a swine to pass between them.

Isn't that something!

Vol. I, Chp. 8: What May Not Be Done From Dawn Until Praying Time

1. As soon as the day dawns...

Pray tell, where in the Scriptures do you find this? *You don't!* These are the added laws.

...that is, when the first light of the sun is seen in the East—since this is the time when prayers may begin...

That's pretty close to sun worship—isn't it? That's pretty close to what they did in Egypt—wasn't it? *Yes, indeed!*

...(if one had by chance prayed at that early hour, one had complied with his duty) we are not permitted to begin any

kind of work, or transact business, or start a journey until one has prayed, as it is said (Psalms 85:14): "Righteousness shall go before him; and he shall make its footsteps a way to walk in." "Righteousness" means prayer...

No, it doesn't! Righteousness means commandment-keeping!

...wherein we declare the righteousness of our Creator, and only afterward are we to direct our footsteps on the road of our material desires.

2. One is not allowed to eat or drink before praying, as it is said (Leviticus 19:26): "Ye shall not eat with the blood"...

That has nothing to do with that. Total misinterpretation of the Scriptures.

...which means, that you shall not eat before you pray for your lives....

That's a silly interpretation.

...To one who first eats and drinks and then prays, the following Scriptural text applies (I Kings 14:9): "And hast cast Me behind thy back."....

Then it talks about putting on—you've seen how they have on their right hand, have the straps and everything, it tells about that. Then the one that goes on the forehead and it's only to be put on when they're standing, only be taken off when they're standing. There are benedictions and there are prayers to be done with it, and so forth.

Let me get to the section concerning the Sabbath, because some of these concerning the Sabbath are really something. I'm bypassing hundreds and hundreds and hundreds of laws in great detail, like I just read you. Before we get to the Sabbath ones, my eye just happened to fall on this. There are literally hundreds and hundreds and hundreds of benedictions that an Orthodox Jew is to say upon doing something or seeing something.

Vol. II, Chp. 60—he's to say a benediction:

9. On seeing a great Jewish scholar, distinguished for his knowledge of the Torah, one is to say the benediction: "Blessed art Thou, O Lord our God, King of the universe, who hath imparted of His wisdom to them that fear Him."....
10. On seeing a king of any of the nations of the world, we say the benediction...
11. On seeing graves of Israelites, we say...
13. On seeing an Ethiopian, or a red Indian, or an Albino, or a freak, as a giant, or a dwarf, or one who is wholly ulcerous, or one whose entire hair is matted, or an

elephant, or an ape, we say: “Blessed art Thou, O Lord, our God, King of the universe, who varies the forms of His creatures.”

14. On seeing for the first time a lame person, or one without hands or, feet, or a blind person, or one who is afflicted with leprosy, or with scurfs, if they have been thus afflicted from birth, we say the benediction...
15. On seeing goodly trees or beautiful creatures, whether human or animal, we say the benediction...

On and on and on, minute regulations to regulate every thought, every action. God never intended that. We are free moral agents and we are to choose. All of it begins with choosing to love God with all your heart and mind and soul and being.

Vol. II, Chp. 80—concerning the Sabbath:

(The principal works we are forbidden to perform on the Sabbath, are already known to most of the children of Israel. The list given herein comprises works that are not generally known to be forbidden; they are common things performed in the course of our daily lives).

1. It is forbidden to do work that requires concentration before a lamp....

What are they saying then, you sit there blank minded?

The Rabbis have forbidden this, lest one forgets and tilts the lamp in order to bring the oil closer to the wick...

They had these little cup lamps and on the edge of it they had a little lip which held the wick. This wick went back into the oil in this little cup dish. So one was not able to increase the light so they could see by tipping the oil up to the wick.

...and then one will be guilty of “igniting.” Two persons, however, may read one subject out of one book, because if will attempt to tilt it, the other one will remind him. It is, however, the prevailing custom to permit studying before the light of our modern candles, in which the tallow or the wax firmly sticks to the wick.

This shows you how old this is, nothing to say of modern electricity today. Pray tell, how much labor is involved in flipping a switch? *None!* You expend the same energy if you scratch your nose. See all of this silliness. This is the burden.

But one must make a certain mark, so as to remember not to snuff off the wick. According to the view of Maimonides, the last named act is a violation of a Mosaic Law. It is impermissible to snuff off the wick, even through a non-Jew.

That’s complete hocus-pocus nonsense.

2. It is forbidden to open a door or a window opposite a burning candle, lest the flame be extinguished...

because you can’t light it again.

...but one may close the window or the door. It is forbidden to open or to close the door of an oven in which a fire is burning, for by so doing, one either increases or decreases the fire.

That’s a terrible thing to do.

3. Pouring boiling gravy on pieces of bread or matzah is forbidden. One should first pour the gravy into a dish, let it cool off until it is fit to eat, and then put the bread or the matzah in it; but as long as the gravy is hot, even if it is already in the dish, it is forbidden to put either bread or matzah in it.
4. It is forbidden to place fruit or water upon a hot stove, because the water might boil and the fruit might bake.
5. On the Sabbath, it is forbidden to store away victuals in any wrapping, even if it would not increase its warmth. Therefore, if we remove a pot containing victuals which have been cooked or heated in it, we are forbidden to wrap it or cover it with pillows, bolsters, or the like, in order to preserve its warmth.

That is a burden. God never intended that.

8. We are not permitted to handle fruit found under a tree, for it might have fallen off that very day....

Oh, that would be terrible—wouldn’t it?

...The fruit of a non-Jew, which might have been plucked that very day, is likewise forbidden even to be handled.

9. On the Sabbath, it is forbidden to take honey out of a beehive. It is likewise forbidden to crush honeycombs, even if they have been removed from the hive on Friday. Thus, if the honeycombs have not been crushed before the Sabbath, it is forbidden to use the honey that oozes from them on the Sabbath; but it is permissible to take the honey that flows from the hive.

You talk about straining at a gnat and swallowing a camel, in this case honey, there you have it.

12. It is forbidden to squeeze fruit to make a beverage...
So much for fresh orange juice.

...like squeezing lemons into water to make lemonade.

19. If a fly has fallen into beverage or food, we must not remove the fly only, but should take some of the food or the beverage with it.

Doesn't say how much, they need to be careful, lest they are lifting a burden.

25. The law forbidding "construction" applies also to edibles, as for instance, making cheese, or arranging fruit in a certain orderly way....

If you lay it out nicely, you're constructing. Careful, don't leave the nails in it, might be hard to chew.

...Therefore, when making a salad of sliced onions and eggs or the milt of herring, one must be careful not to arrange them symmetrically... [Just do it in a heap.] ...but put them on the plate at random.

27. Whatever a Jew is forbidden to do on the Sabbath, is forbidden also to have it done through a non-Jew. Nevertheless, in the winter time, since it is permissible to make a fire in the stove through a non-Jew for the purpose of heating the house, the custom prevails that the non-Jew places the cold victuals on the stove before he makes the fire; since the intention in making the fire is not to warm the victuals... [or food] ...but to heat the house. But the victuals should not be placed on the stove after it was heated.

This is utter nonsense, complete nonsensical stupidity. And yet, you know there are even some people in the Church of God that want to go after Judaism, that want to wear the hats, that want to wear the prayer shawls, that want to wear the fringes and the phylacteries. Those are all physical things of nonsense. *What's in your heart is what counts!*

28. One who spills liquid on the soil where anything is apt to grow, is guilty of violating the law against "sowing," because the liquid accelerates the growth....

Terrible, what happens if it rains on the Sabbath, folks? Is God guilty of something?

...Therefore, one should be careful not to eat in a garden on the Sabbath, because it

is impossible to be so careful as not to spill some liquid upon the soil...

Well, what if it falls on concrete?

...and, besides, in a garden there is a law forbidding the moving of articles.

29. It is forbidden to wipe anything with a sponge that has no handle.... [Stupid!]

30. It is forbidden to spit in a place where the wind will scatter the saliva.

31. A maiden is forbidden either to make braids or to take them apart on the Sabbath. But she is allowed to fix her hair with her hands. The hair must not be combed with a brush made of bristle if it is very hard, because it is impossible not to pluck out some hair with it... [So then you're working.] ...but if it is not hard, the hair may be set with it, and especially so if it is made for that particular purpose.

Now, if water spills on a table:

34. ...it is forbidden to wipe it with a cloth which one values, for since it absorbs much water, one might wring it out...

And wringing it out is work.

35. If one is caught in the rain and his clothes get wet...

Oh, I like this one. This is really something:

...he may go home and remove the clothes, but he is not allowed to spread them out so that they may dry; even if one's clothes are only moist with perspiration, he is not allowed to spread them out, certainly not in front of a fire. Even when one has the wet clothes on, he is not allowed to stand in front of a fire where it is very hot. One is likewise forbidden to shake off water from a garment. A costly garment, of which one takes special care, must not even be handled when taken off, for fear that he might wring it.

36. If one walks and reaches a brook, one may jump over it even if it is wide; jumping is better than the effort of walking round about it. One is not permitted to cross it by wading, lest he will wring his clothes after crossing. One must not walk along the sloping bank of a stream on the Sabbath, for he might slip, fall into the water, wet his clothes and then wring them.

Oh, that would be a terrible crime—wouldn't it?

42. On the Sabbath, it is forbidden to paint anything even with a dye that is not permanent. Therefore, a woman is not allowed to use rouge. When our hands are

colored by fruit juice, we must not touch any garment, because we thus dye it... [And we are working.] ...We are likewise forbidden to wipe a bleeding nose or wound with a cloth.

If you have a bleeding nose, just sit there and let it drain on the Sabbath, huh? Spare me this stupidity! I imagine that most of you never even heard of these things. Most of you didn't have a clue as to what Jesus was saying there in Mark 7, 'Full well you reject the commandment of God by teaching the tradition of men. For in vain do you worship Me.' *I'm reading you vanity of worship.* This has nothing to do with God. When we come to Acts 15 and the Pharisees say the Law of Moses, they mean all of this, as well as the commandments of God.

Now maybe you understand. Acts 15 is not talking about what most people think about and it's not doing away with the Law of Moses. It's not releasing people from keeping the commandments of God. By the time we get done with that, and I might not finish it this time, I might have to finish it next time, but you are going to know and understand without a shadow of doubt that every Protestant theologian doesn't have a clue as to what it means. If you follow them and reject the commandments of God and reject the Sabbath, and keep Sunday because of that, God is going to judge you.

46. It is forbidden to untie any knot which may not be tied on the Sabbath. If a knot causes us pain, it may be loosened by a non-Jew.

Let's just think about this for minute. What if you get all wet and then just by evaporation it starts drying. What if you got your necktie all wet and it started shrinking up and choking you, and you couldn't breathe, and you couldn't find a non-Jew. What do you do? *You die! Silliness beyond belief!*

52. It is forbidden to catch any living thing on the Sabbath, even a flea, but if an insect stings a person, it may be removed and thrown off, but one is not allowed to kill it, because it is forbidden to kill on the Sabbath, anything that possesses life... [Nonsense!] ...It is, however, permissible to kill lice, since they are created only by perspiration....

This shows you how old these laws are.

...(nevertheless, those found on clothes may not be killed, but should be thrown off; only those found in the head may be killed).

53. It is forbidden to draw blood on the Sabbath, even to suck the blood from the gums....

What if you have bleeding gums, what are you supposed to do? How are you going to handle that one? Fill your mouth with gauze? *No!* You're soaking, you can't do that.

...It is likewise forbidden to put a plaster on a wound to draw out blood and pus. And it is certainly forbidden to squeeze blood or pus from a boil.

Lie there and suffer all Sabbath—huh!? We're going to read some very hilarious ones here in just a minute.

86. It is forbidden to wind a clock on the Sabbath or on a festival even if it is still going. It may be wound up on the second day of a festival when it is still going, only as much as it is needed for this particular day, but not for what will be needed for the following day. For the sake of a sick person, it is permissible under all circumstances, if a non-Jew cannot easily be found to do it.

You make someone else sin in that case. *Nonsense!*

87. On the Sabbath, it is forbidden to make a musical sound, either with an instrument or with the limbs of the body, (except the mouth). It is even forbidden to snap the fingers or to strike on a board to make a sound, or to rattle with nuts, or ring a bell to silence a crying child. It is forbidden to clap with the hands or to dance, but it is permissible to do so in honor of the Torah...

How do you decide?

...neither should a person be prevented from doing it for the sake of a crying child, since there are some authorities who permit it.

88. Making unmusical sounds on the Sabbath is permissible. One may, therefore, knock on a door to make known his presence....

Well, well, well. Hallelujah for that liberty.

...Some authorities hold that it is, nevertheless, forbidden to knock on the door with anything attached to it for that purpose, or to ring a bell attached to the door. Clocks that are made to strike the hour means of pulling a chain, may likewise not be operated on the Sabbath or on a festival.

This goes on and on and on and on. God made the Sabbath Day, so that He will fellowship with His

people and His people with Him, not all of these silly added laws which indeed reject the commandments of God.

Vol. II, Chp. 84:

6. One who is fettered with chains, may walk out with them on the Sabbath.

Is he escaping jail? It makes you wonder what they have in mind there.

7. It is forbidden to walk out on stilts; long poles in which there is a place for the feet, and my means of which people walk in mud and in water.

You cannot do that.

11. When walking in a place of mud and clay, one may raise one's clothes slightly so as not to soil them, but one must not raise them too high...

Lest it is breaking some other law.

Here's really a funny one:

18. Baldheaded persons who put on their heads a toupee of combed flax or wool...

That tells you how old these laws are.

...to look like hair, may walk out with it on the Sabbath in a public premise, because it is considered as an ornament (providing it has been prepared before the Sabbath).

Vol. II, Chp. 85: If a Fire Breaks Out on the Sabbath. Now, you think about this:

1. If, God forbid, a fire breaks out on the Sabbath, our Rabbis, of blessed memory, were fearful that if the owner of the house and the members of his family were to engage in saving what they can, they might forget that it is the Sabbath and extinguish the fire, due to their being excited and frightened at the prospect of losing their property.

Well, that's not only natural. God did not intend you to burn down your house on the Sabbath if there's a fire. What if you have wreck in your car going to Sabbath services and you're bleeding to death? Do you tell the ambulance attendants, 'Don't take me?' You're losing blood on the Sabbath, 'Don't lift me, it's a burden.' *Well, you're going to die, sir!* 'Then let me lie here and die.' That's all against God. I tell you, it's amazing!

They therefore, decreed that the owner is forbidden to save even those articles which may be handled and carried out into

a place where it is permissible to remove them. Only that which is required for the needs of the day may be saved.

With a fire blazing in your house, how are you going to figure that out?

If the fire breaks out on Friday evening before the mean, we may save food for three meals, and also food for the animals; if it occurs on Sabbath morning, we may save food for two meals, and if it occurs in the afternoon, we may save food for one meal. If one vessel contains much food, like many loaves of bread, or a barrel full of wine, since it can be taken out at one time, it is permissible to do so. If we spread out a sheet, and put therein large quantities of food and drink, it is likewise permissible to take it out. We are also allowed to take out all the vessels we need for that day.

2. One may say to others: "Come and save anything you can for yourselves," and everyone may save the food that he needs, or one vessel that contains even much food. Whatever they save belongs to them, since the owner renounced his ownership, and thus they take possession of abandoned property.

While the fire's going on. Can you image that? Don't let the rioters know this. That gives them license to steal everything under the sun, start a fire in the building, break the windows, and go in and rescue it, and take it, because the owner now has abandoned right and title to it.

Nevertheless, if they are God-fearing people, they should restore to the owner, whatever they saved, since they are aware that he has not abandoned it with his good will, and they are allowed to receive compensation for saving it.

They have to come and buy it back, their own stuff, because someone saved it. This is nonsense! No love, no charity, no help, no understanding. This is a burden!

4. The houses in which there is no fire, but are close to the fire, and the owners fear that the fire may spread to them, they are allowed to save anything and bring it to a place which it may be carried, since they are not so excited. Some authorities hold that money and other valuables, although they may not be handled on the Sabbath, may be saved from a great sudden loss, such as a fire, a flood, or a robbery, by

placing them on some edibles and carry them out together...

In other words, take all your money, take all your jewels, put it in a basket with bread, then you can take it out. But *woe be to you* if you put it on, or *woe be to you* if you put it in your pocket, or *woe be to you* if you put it in your purse and carry it out, because you are going against the law of Judaism. Now do you understand what Jesus said? Now do you understand why Paul was so upset with this thing back in Acts 15? *Yes!*

5. All sacred books, whether written or printed, may be saved from a fire or from a flood on the Sabbath...

Vol. II, Chp. 86: *Bathing on the Sabbath*: This is great!

1. One is forbidden to wash his whole body, or even the greater part of the body, in warm water even if the water was warmed before the Sabbath. It is forbidden even if he washes the body, a small part at a time. It is forbidden to enter a bathhouse for the purpose of perspiring there. It is, however, permissible to wash one's face and bathe one's feet with water made warm before the Sabbath.
2. It is permissible... [Listen to this.] ...to wash the entire body with water which flows warm from its origin, such as the hot springs of Tiberias...

This tells us how old these laws are, going right back to the times of Jesus Christ—right?

...if the water is on the ground and the place is not covered with a roof. However...

You've got to stop and think of all these things—warm water, is it covered with a roof, is it standing on a garden, it is naturally flowing there, do I dare wash myself?

...However, if the water is in a receptacle or if the place is covered with a roof, it is forbidden.

3. It is permissible to immerse the whole body in cold water, but one must not thereafter stand in front of a hot oven to warm up, for that would make it like washing with warm water....

How's that for stupidity?

...Even if one has washed only the hands in cold water, one is not allowed to warm them by an over while they are still wet...

You can't rinse them on a cloth, because you might put water in it and you might wring it out. So stand there and freeze.

...because it is equivalent to washing with water that has been warmed up today with which even one limb of the body should not be washed, but one must first dry them well.

4. A bather must be careful not to squeeze the water from his hair. He must likewise refrain from swimming, because swimming on the Sabbath and on festivals is forbidden. It is also forbidden to make anything float, such as chips of wood.

What a terrible crime that is! Then it talks about resting on the Sabbath, it talks about things forbidden to handle on the Sabbath, vessels on the Sabbath, concerning the base for things on the Sabbath, things you cannot do on the Sabbath.

Vol. II, Chp. 90:

3. On the Sabbath, one is forbidden to walk to the end of the Sabbath boundary, or even a lesser distance, and wait there until dark, in order to complete his journey sooner at the conclusion of the Sabbath...

This is nonsense! This is what it means, *the Pharisees interpretation of the Law of Moses*. I know I took a great deal of time to read these, but there are thousands of these. ***I think that will help you understand what 'works of law' really are.***

Scriptures from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order* by Fred R. Coulter

Scriptural References:

- 1) Acts 15:1-10
- 2) Deuteronomy 4:1-2, 34-40
- 3) Deuteronomy 5:28-29, 32-33
- 4) Deuteronomy 6:1-5
- 5) 1-John 5:2-3
- 6) John 14: 15, 23-24
- 7) Mark 7:5-9
- 8) Psalm 16:8

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Amos 9
- 1-John 2:3
- Mark 2:27-28

Also referenced:

Sermon Series:

- *Romans*
- *Holy Sabbath*

Books:

- *Code of Jewish Law* by Solomon Ganzfried & Hyman E. Goldin
- *Sunday Facts & Sabbath Fiction* by Dr. Russell K. Tardo

Refuting Sunday-Keeping VI

Fred R. Coulter

As you remember, last time we finished by going through this book, *Code of Jewish Law*, and reading certain excerpts. If you're a Sunday-keeper and you go to a Protestant church or you go to a Catholic church, what I'd like you to do is ask your minister or priest have they ever seen or read the *Code of Jewish Law* by Ganzfried and Goldin? And I will imagine that 99.9-percent of them have never heard of it.

For those people who are Sabbath-keepers, you ask your minister if he's ever heard of it or read any of it. This is so vital and important because if you don't understand what the *Code of Jewish Law* is, you do not understand what was going on in the New Testament. If you have never read it, you do not understand what a 'work of law' is according to Judaism.

As we saw last time, the commandments of God are for our good, for our blessing, that we live long. They are *right, perfect, and good*—but all Protestants and Catholics dismiss the laws of God, reject them, so that they can keep their own righteousness. As I have said before, that if you keep Sunday and do not keep Sabbath, then you are committing two sins:

1. You're breaking the 4th commandment of keeping the Sabbath and keeping it Holy.
2. You are rejecting God's command, according to the doctrine of men, and establishing your own righteousness

—which God says is an abomination to Him. *If*

- God is righteous
- God is perfect
- God is true

—which He is—

- and *if* God is Lawgiver and He's given these commandments for us

—then who is any man to go against what God has said?

As I've pointed out, it's an idol in your mind, it is a condemning of God. This is what all of these Sunday-keeping doctrines do. They condemn God, they hate His law, they despise His law, and yet they say they are good enough in their hearts so that God will have to accept them. You try this with a Sunday-keeper some time, and you find out what kind of reaction that you get.

I did this once, it was really something, it was a woman who was in a store, she was a clerk. We were talking about different things and I said, 'Oh, you're new here.' She said, 'Yes, but I won't be very long.' And I said, 'Oh, why is that?' She said,

'Because I want to be with my grandchildren to pick them up after school and then I have my Wednesday night Bible study.' I said, 'Well, what do you study? What church are you with?' She said, 'Well, I'm a fundamentalist.' I said to her, 'If you do not keep the seventh-day Sabbath, you are not a fundamentalist.' 'Oh, I go to church on Sunday.' I said, 'That is a sin. That's the same as murder and adultery and lying and stealing, bearing false witness and coveting, all of those things.' She said, 'Well, God won't hold me responsible for that, will he?' I looked her right in the eye and said, 'You better believe He will.'

Why will God hold people responsible for it? *Because God created the time and He gave the commandments!* Nowhere in the Old Testament nor in the New Testament do you find anywhere that God ever changed the Sabbath. We've gone over that so many times that ought to be fundamentally clear.

What we will see today is the heart and core of the problem concerning circumcision. Let's understand something clear: *Those who believe in the Sabbath believe in salvation by grace as a gift of God through the sacrifice of Christ, through His resurrection, and our High Priest sitting at the right hand of God.* We do not believe at all that Sabbath-keeping brings us salvation. In order words, Sabbath-keeping is what God requires, but Sabbath-keeping of itself does not give justification before God. Only the sacrifice of Jesus Christ can do that.

But most people are so upset with it that they just don't understand what Paul is talking about here. Let's go to the book of Romans and let's see what Paul is talking about. So we understand this, so we have it clear, so we realize what is taking place we have to understand that *grace is the means by which God calls us, by which we are forgiven, and it is gift of God.* We also have to understand that *through grace we are justified by the blood of Jesus Christ and His sacrifice.* No law can substitute for the sacrifice of Jesus Christ.

See sermon series' on justification by faith where we go through the book of Galatians, you write for that, and the series *Circumcision Wars*, whereby we go through Galatians again. We approach it from two different ways, so you understand the difference between one and the other. It's very important that you do.

Let's pick it up here in Romans 3:28: "Consequently, we reckon that a man is justified by faith..." That is, believing in the sacrifice of Jesus Christ. Mind you, there is a sacrifice, and *it is Christ.* Animal sacrifices never justified to God the

Father in heaven above. Those who were under the Old Covenant did not receive the Holy Spirit, were not granted eternal life, it was just obedience in the letter of the Law.

Verse 28: “Consequently, we reckon that a man is justified by faith, **separate from**.... [‘without’ (KJV) in English today means the *absence of*. So people read that and they think that it is the absence of law, but no, it is]: ...**separate from** works of law.”

Romans 2:14 shows where Paul commended the Gentiles for keeping ‘*the works of the Law.*’ And please understand, that this is the only place in all of Paul’s writings where he uses ‘*the works of the Law,*’ to show that he is meaning the laws of God. The translators here in translating it ‘without the deeds of the Law,’ (KJV) is a complete mistranslation. That should read “...**separate from works of law.**”

Last time we read a whole bunch of *works of law* out of this book *Code of Jewish Law*. That’s what works of law means. There are ‘*the works of the Law,*’ which we will see is called *righteousness*. We’ll talk about Cornelius and the Gentiles here in a little bit and go through that so you completely understand it.

Romans 2:14: “For when *the Gentiles*, which do not have *the Law*... [here he’s referring to the laws of God] ...practice by nature the things contained in the Law, these who do not have *the Law* are a law unto themselves.... [Paul is commending them for it] ...Who show the work of the Law written in their own hearts...” (vs 14-15). The commandments of God are to be written in our hearts and in our minds, as we have seen, Heb. 8 & 10. That is the New Covenant: not the abolition of law, not the removing of commandments, not destroying or abrogating the Law.

“...written in their own hearts...” In other words, with the Spirit of God, with the love of God. If we love God we’ll ‘keep His commandments and His commandments are not grievous,’ as we’ve seen how many times in this series. Therefore, we will do the proper works, yes we will, which then will be keeping the commandments of God because we love Him and because God says so. ***If you believe God, you must obey Him.*** If you say you believe God and do not obey Him, you do not believe God. Do you understand that? Do you realize what that is saying? James said, ‘You show me your faith without your works and I will show you my faith by my works’; and how that Abraham was justified by his works, ***because he believed God and did what God said.*** So that’s very important.

Here Paul is talking about the Gentiles which do not know God, but yet have an

understanding of some of the laws of God, so he says: “...written in their own hearts....” We’re going to see a lot of these Scriptures as we go through this series. If anyone comes along and says that the commandments of God have been done away, that the Sabbath has been done away, that these things are no longer in force and we can do whatever we want, and we are good people from the heart inside, listen, you’re going to understand and find out that if you’re a Protestant and you follow along with those teachings, you have been deceived.

Protestants accuse Sabbath-keepers of being deceived, but when we examine these Scriptures the way we should, you are going to understand that *you have been deceived*. It says: “...their consciences bearing witness, and their reasonings also, as they accuse or defend one another” (v 15). So there they’re commended for it.

Romans 3:28, again: “Consequently, we reckon that a man is justified... [Having his past sins forgiven, put in right standing with God through the sacrifice of Jesus Christ.] ...**separate from works of law**.... [these works of these laws] ...*Is He* the God the Jews only?... [Why did he say that? *Because the Jews* figured that He was the God of the Jews only; that even if Gentiles came in they had to be circumcised and they remained perpetually second-class citizens. That’s why Paul brings it up here.] ...*Is He* not also *the God of the Gentiles*? YES! *He is* also God of the Gentiles. Since *it is* indeed one God Who will justify *the* circumcision by faith, and *the* uncircumcision through faith... [it’s the same operation] ...Are we, then, abolishing law through faith?....” (vs 28-31).

- I want you to read this verse
- I want you to look at it
- I want you to think about it

because that’s exactly what Protestantism and Catholicism teaches that, yes, Christ made void the Law of God and you have no obligation to keep it.

Notice what Paul says here. I want you to think about it. If you have bought the notion that God did away with His Sabbath and God did away with the commandment for idols, *then you have got another thought coming*. If you believe that He retained the fifth commandment to honor your father and mother and to do no murder (#6), and not commit adultery (#7), to not steal (#8), to not bear false witness (#9), and to not covet (#10)—if you believe those are in force and those only have to do with dealing with your brethren and your neighbors, don’t you understand that ***the first four are still in force so that you can worship God?*** That you can do so in Spirit and in Truth? That you can do it in a right way so that God will bless you? Let’s ask the question the other way around.

- Do you think that you can worship God if you have any other gods before you?
- Do you think that you can worship God if you make idols and bow down to them?
- Do you think that you can worship God by taking His name in vain?

And, yea, every Sunday those who go to Sunday services take God's name in vain, because God is not there, God is not among them. That's why they have to have all these carnal means for services, all this music, all the emotion, all the razz-a-ma-tazz.

I've been listening to a sermon by a Protestant minister and that's all he does. It's gushy emotion. He says he's going to read the Scripture, but he doesn't. He says he's going to explain it, but he doesn't. When he finally gets to turn there to read a Scripture or two, he doesn't have a clue as to what he's talking about. But, 'Oh, yes, if you open up your heart and let Jesus in, you're saved.'

I want to tell you *in the name of Jesus Christ, and by the authority of that name, that phraseology is a misleading lie!* You don't open your heart and let Christ in; *He calls you!* You need to understand that. You're not good enough to open your heart. Christ says you're to *repent*, you're to *be baptized*. If you believe what the Protestants teach, you have a counterfeit. You believe in a lie and you're taking the name of God in vain. I want you to think about it. These are deep and serious questions and are right on the heart and core of salvation.

Verse 31: "Are we, then, abolishing law through faith? MAY IT NEVER BE!.... [Don't even let this thought come into your mind. Yet millions believe it.] ...Rather, **we are establishing law.**" How is law established?

1. by getting rid of the man-made laws
2. by living by every Word of God instead

Let's come over here to Romans 6:1; I want you to think about it. I want you to really understand what this is saying. "What then shall we say? Shall we continue in sin, so that grace may abound?" What is sin? *1-John 3:4 says, 'Sin is the transgression of the Law!'* A literal translation is, '*Sin is lawlessness.*' Lawlessness comes from the Greek, 'anomia,' which means *against the laws of God*. Not only is it transgressing, but it is also *against*. Sunday-keeping, my friend, is against the Law of God. If you keep Sunday, you are a follower of lawlessness, and you're a sinner before God.

Verse 1: "What then shall we say? Shall we continue in sin... ['sin is the transgression of the Law'] ...so that grace may abound?... [Every Protestant minister will say, almost unanimously, 'yes, because we have freedom in Christ.' That's not what Paul wrote.] ...MAY IT NEVER BE!.... [Are

you willing to say that with Paul?] ...MAY IT NEVER BE!.... [Or are you willing to go along with the Protestants and Catholics which say, 'Well, it doesn't make any difference.' *It does!* Mark the words of the New Testament.] ...We who died to sin, how shall we..."

How do you die to sin? Not through the operation of opening your heart and saying, 'Christ come in.' You say the silly little prayer and supposedly you are saved. 'Oh, Christ, I know you died for my sins, come into my heart.' No! There has to be a deep and a profound repentance and there has to be baptism in full immersion by water. That's what the New Testament teaches. Do you not know what it teaches? And a lot of people turn to Romans to justify their law breaking.

Verse 2: "...We who died to sin... [you die to sin through baptism.] ...how shall we live any longer therein? Or are you ignorant that we, as many as were baptized into Christ Jesus, were baptized into His death?" (vs 2-3). Let's understand something: The New Testament is not a testament. I use the name because that's the common name that is applied to what we call the New Testament. But it more correctly should be called 'covenant.' And there's a vast difference between testamental law and covenantal law.

Now if you don't have the book, *The Christian Passover*, you write for it. There are three chapters in there, which covers the covenantal law and the covenant with Abraham. Paul says, 'If you are Christ's, then are you Abraham's seed and heirs according to the promise.' Unless you understand what the covenant is that God made with Abraham, and unless you understand that baptism is a covenantal death, then you don't understand the rudimentary foundation for true Christianity as the New Testament teaches, though you may be able to go through the New Testament and have your timeworn Scriptures that you go to.

Verse 4: "Therefore, we were buried with Him through the baptism... [because it's full immersion in water] ...into the death..." You die a covenant death. You cannot die a covenant death unless you're baptized and put fully under the water. You can't die a covenant death by saying, 'Oh, Christ, enter my heart. Oh, how good I am, how wonderful I feel.' That why Protestantism and Catholicism, but mostly Protestantism, runs on an emotion. It's all emotion! If you go to a Sunday-keeping church, you go ahead and sit down and listen and ask yourself

- How many stories am I told?
- How many analogies have I been given?
- How many Scriptures do we study?
- Are we given the right explanation for them?

- Do they rightly divide the Word of God?

Those are the questions you need to be asking, because those are critical questions.

“...we were buried with Him through the baptism into the death, so that, just as Christ was raised from *the* dead by the glory of the Father, in the same way, we also should walk in newness of life. For if we have been conjoined together in the likeness of His death, so also shall we be *in the likeness* of His resurrection” (vs 4-5). By the way, the New Testament teaches resurrection; no one goes to heaven. If you go a Protestant church or a Catholic church and they say, ‘Well, he’s in heaven looking down on us right now,’ it’s a great big lie, because that’s a doctrine of men and demons. Do you understand that?

If that makes you mad, I’m happy to make you mad. If you are offended, I am glad you are offended; *you’re offended at the Truth!* If the Truth offends you and causes you to repent and change and really come to God on the terms that He has set, then I’m glad for that. If otherwise you don’t, then you’ve had a witness and God is going to hold you to that witness. You can rest assured on that. God is going to judge on that witness, you can be guaranteed of that.

Verse 6: “Knowing this, that our old man was co-crucified with *Him* in order that the body of sin might be destroyed, so that we might no longer be enslaved to sin.” If you are a Sunday-keeper, *you serve sin*. If you keep Christmas and Easter and New Years and all the pagan holidays, *you serve sin*. You need to realize it. You need to understand it.

Let’s go look at the question concerning *circumcision*; come to Acts 15:5 and let’s see that: “But there stood up certain of those who believed, who were of the sect of the Pharisees...” They didn’t understand what God was going to do with the Gentiles, so they would go down to where the churches were raised up and they would think that this is an operation of Judaism, but such is not the case.

“...saying, ‘It is obligatory to circumcise them, and to command *them* to keep the Law of Moses.’” Their view of the Law of Moses is this, the Bible’s view of the Law of Moses is this—two different things. It’s like saying democracy in Russia and democracy in America. Well, today it’s kind of getting blurred and almost the same. But you need to understand that’s exactly what it’s like. You can say the word, but the meaning is entirely different.

Furthermore when you get the series on *The Mystery of Lawlessness*, you will understand that one of the mysteries of it is that it appears righteous and those who preach the mystery of lawlessness—

which Protestantism is, and Catholicism is, and Judaism is, and Buddhism, and Islam and all of that—because there’s only way and that is the way of God with His Word. When you understand that, then you will begin to realize what is happening here and the great war that took place.

Verse 6: “Then the apostles and the elders gathered together to see about this matter. And after much discussion had taken place, Peter stood up and said to them, ‘Men, brethren, you know that from *the* early days, God made *the* choice among us *that* by my mouth the Gentiles should hear the word of the gospel, and believe. And God, Who knows the heart... [That is, the heart-knowing God.] ...bore witness to them *by* giving them the Holy Spirit, even as *He did* to us” (vs 6-8).

Now we’re going to see how and under what circumstances that the Holy Spirit was given, and this becomes very important for us to realize.

Verse 9: “And made no difference between us and them...” Judaism put a difference between the Gentiles and the Jews. God the Father did not, Jesus Christ did not. True Christianity is not an extension of Judaism. See sermon series *Scripturalism vs Judaism*. You will understand that beginning with the ministry of John the Baptist that the Kingdom of God was preached, rather than the Law and the Prophets.

- the Kingdom of God is a higher standard.
- the Kingdom of God is by faith and grace
- it is also keeping the commandments of God

You’ve got a lot you need to understand.

Verse 9: “And made no difference between us and them, *and* has purified their hearts through the faith. Now therefore, why do you tempt God by putting a yoke upon the necks of the disciples, which neither our fathers nor we were able to bear?” (vs 9-10). That’s called a *yoke of bondage*. We saw last time what that was. This bound people in so much law-keeping that it was a *yoke of bondage*.

Now let’s look at the circumstances under which God called the first Gentiles, then we will understand about the circumcision, what it’s talking about, why the Pharisees said they required it, why Paul said *no*, God did not require it, and why Peter should have known better when he got all mixed up with a problem in Gal. 2.

Come here to Acts 11:19; this becomes a key important verse. I’m going to begin where we will end up. Acts 11:19: “Now those who had been scattered by the persecution that arose concerning Stephen...” These were all Jews. The New Testament says, ‘To the Jews first, then the Gentile. The Jews had no knowledge or understanding or

consciousness in their thinking that God was going to deal with Gentiles. And furthermore the New Testament will bear out that they expected Christ to return within their lifetimes. They had no concept at all what God was going to do with the Gentiles.

Notice what they did: "...went through Phoenicia and Cyprus and Antioch, **speaking the Word to no one except Jews only**. But certain men among them who were Cypriots and Cyrenians came to Antioch *and* spoke to the Greeks... [You have Greek-speaking Jews and you have Greek-speaking Greeks. We're talking about Gentiles here.] ...preaching the Gospel *of* the Lord Jesus. And *the* hand of *the* Lord was with them, and a great number believed *and* turned to the Lord. Now, the report concerning them was heard in the ears of the Church that *was* in Jerusalem, and they sent out Barnabas to go as far as Antioch. When he arrived and saw the grace of God, he rejoiced; and he exhorted *them* all to cleave to the Lord with purpose of heart... [These were Greeks. These were the very ones to whom certain ones came down from Jerusalem, saying later, 'You need to be circumcised.' We're going to understand what that real problem was.] ...For he was a good man, and was filled with *the* Holy Spirit and with faith. And a large multitude was added to the Lord" (vs 19-24).

Let's understand something about Barnabas. Barnabas was a Levite and as such then, he taught the laws of God. When he went down there to Antioch, he didn't bring in Sunday-keeping, he brought in Sabbath-keeping. Later, in about 125_{A.D.} Ignatius turned that whole church upside down in Antioch and split it and they had the first Sunday-keeping group. But please understand that Ignatius was not a true Christian. He was a Catholic and *a Catholic is not a true Christian*. He may profess it, but he's not. Those are strong words, but you check your Bible.

If you're Catholic and you just accept everything that they say, well then you've been deceived. Furthermore the priests won't let you read the Bible and study it, really and truly. If you get mad at what I say, you don't even comprehend what is being said. You're just mad because you're a Catholic or a Protestant and after all, that's your religion. Well, you need to understand that is not God's way, and you're following something that is vain and empty and going to lead to destruction. So when Barnabas went down here

- he taught them the Sabbath
- he taught them the Holy Days
- he taught them the commandments of God
- he taught them the grace of God
- the receiving of the Holy Spirit and all of that.

Verse 25: "Then Barnabas went to Tarsus to seek Saul; and after finding him, he bought him to Antioch. And it came to pass *that for* a while year they assembled together with the church and taught a great multitude. And in Antioch the disciples were first called Christians" (vs 25-26). ***They were keeping the Sabbath.***

Let's see what led up to this. Let's see the backdrop that took place. Acts 10 is a profound chapter in the New Testament, because ***this shows what God did***. When you understand the 'mystery of lawlessness' with Judaism, Judaism figures that it is greater than God and can improve on God by adding many, many laws. Just like Protestantism figures it's greater than God by keeping Sunday, as does Catholicism, and the Muslims keep Friday, so they think they're greater than God. You might say 'they are fightin' words'—well they are because *you're fighting against God*, not against a man and not just what he's saying.

Acts 10:1: "Now, *there* was in Caesarea a certain man named Cornelius, a centurion... [he was a Roman captain, as we would say today] ...of a band that is called *the Italian band*. A devout man who also feared God with all his house, both in giving many alms to the people and in beseeching God continually *in prayer*. He clearly saw in a vision, about the ninth hour of the day, an angel of God coming to him and saying to him, 'Cornelius.' But as he fixed his eyes on him, he became afraid *and* said, 'What is it, Lord?' And he said to him, 'Your prayers and your alms have gone up for a memorial before God'" (vs 1-4).

The Jews of the circumcision party said that the prayers cannot come up to God, they cannot be a full citizen of the Jews unless they are circumcised.

Let's come to Proverbs 15:8 and let's see something very important here that is profound in the Scriptures, which agrees with this. "The sacrifice of the wicked *is* an abomination... [Who are the wicked? Stop and think about it. *The wicked are those who transgress the commandments of God!* If you're a Sunday-keeper, you may not think yourself wicked, but you're wicked in two ways:

1. You don't keep the Sabbath
2. You keep Sunday

Verse 8: "The sacrifice of the wicked is an abomination to the LORD, but the prayer of the upright *is* His delight.... [What is uprightness? '*All your commandments are righteousness,*' (Psa. 119:172).] ...The way of the wicked is an abomination to the LORD, but He loves him who pursues righteousness" (vs 8-9). Is this not what Cornelius was doing? *No doubt about it!* That's what it's telling us in Acts 10.

Verse 28: “The heart of the righteous studies to answer... [knows what it’s talking about] ...but the mouth of the wicked pours out evil things. The LORD is far from the wicked, but He hears the prayer of the righteous” (vs 28-29).

Now then, let’s go back to Acts 10. If he was a devout man—what does that mean? *It means he worshiped God! He kept His commandments! He understood them!* We are going to see that Peter even calls it the *one who works righteousness*.

Acts 10:5—the angel said to him: “And now send men to Joppa, and call for Simon who is surnamed Peter. He is lodging with a certain Simon, a tanner, whose house is by *the* sea. He shall tell you what you must do” (vs 5-6). The word here ‘ought’ means *obligatory*, what is *necessary*, what is *mandatory* for you to do. There’s something mandatory for those whom God calls that they are to do. It’s not just to have a warm fuzzy feeling within your heart.

Verse 7: “And when the angel who had spoken to him departed, Cornelius called two of his servants and a devout soldier from among those who continually waited on him; And after relating everything to them, he sent them to Joppa” (vs 7-8). God timed this. The angel worked this whole thing out. The angel went and told Cornelius to go and find Peter in Simon the tanner’s house. When they were coming then an angel caused this vision to come upon Peter, so the timing would be perfect. God’s hand was in this.

Verse 9: “And on the next day, about the sixth hour, as they were journeying and approaching the city, Peter went up on the housetop to pray. And he became very hungry and desired to eat. But while they were preparing *the meal*, a trance fell upon him. And he saw the heaven opened; and a certain vessel descended upon him, like a great sheet, bound by *the* four corners and let down upon the earth; in which were all the four-footed beasts of the earth, including the wild beasts, and the creeping things and the birds of heaven” (vs 9-12).

Why would God bring this symbolism to Peter this way? *Because Judaism counted all Gentiles as beasts, called ‘goyim.’* And ‘the goyim’ were only fit to be vassal slaves of the nation of the Jews. God is giving a very profound thing here.

Now please understand, *this has nothing to do with clean and unclean meats*. If want to know about clean and unclean meats, write for our booklet, *The Beliefs of the Christian Biblical Church of God*. You will see that in the New Testament is absolutely clear in 1-Tim. 4, when you properly understand it, that *the law of clean and unclean meats applies to Christians today*. If that makes you mad, well then, be mad, I’m just telling you the Truth. Do you want

to know the Truth? Jesus said, ‘The truth will set you free.’ You think you’re free, but you are not free. You’re bound up in the bondage of Protestantism, or Catholicism.

(go to the next track)

Acts 10:13—I want you to read this carefully: “Then a voice came to him, saying, ‘Arise, Peter, kill and eat.’ But Peter said, ‘In no way, Lord; for I have never eaten anything *that is* common or unclean” (vs 13-14). Was Peter a Christian? *Yes!* Had he ever eaten anything common or unclean? *No!* Let me tell you what something common, according to the *Code of Jewish Law*. We are dealing with Jewish law that God is going to get rid of. We are not dealing with the Ten Commandments nor with the laws of clean and unclean meats.

According to Jewish law, there is such a thing as unclean bread. The Bible doesn’t teach that. But unclean bread is bread made by a Gentile in a Gentile’s house or a Gentile’s bakery—that is unclean. Bread can be *common*. Common is, it is bread made by a Gentile under the supervision of a Jew. There can be *clean bread*, which is bread made by a Jew, in a Jewish home or Jewish bakery and that clean is called *kosher*. But nowhere in the Bible does it talk about clean, or unclean, or common bread. We will see the same thing applies to men and we will see what categories they are and we will understand it very clearly before we’re done. Notice that he never ate it.

Verse 15: “And a voice came again the second time to him, *saying*, ‘What God has cleansed, you are not to call common.’” And we will see Cornelius was considered a common Gentile.

Might as well just tell you right here. An *unclean* Gentile was a Gentile who just lived according to their own ways, their own religion, had nothing to do with God. A *common* Gentile was one who was keeping the commandments of God, as we will see that Cornelius was, but he was not circumcised. A *clean* Gentile was one who had been circumcised and agreed then to join the nation of the Jews and follow Judaism and the *Code of Jewish Law*. That’s what we’re talking about here.

Verse 16: “Now this took place three times... [The reason this was done three times was because three Gentiles were sent.] ...and the vessel was taken up again into heaven. And as Peter was questioning within...” (vs 16-17). Right well he should. If God commanded that you are not to eat of these things back in Deut. 14 and Lev. 11, the laws of clean and unclean meats, and now here comes a vision saying to eat, but he never ate, he would doubt. Of course he would!

Verse 17: “And as Peter was questioning within himself what the vision that he saw might

mean, the men who were sent from Cornelius, having inquired for the house of Simon, immediately stood at the porch; and they called out, asking if Simon who *was* surnamed Peter was lodging there. Then, as Peter was pondering the vision, the Spirit said to him, ‘Behold, three men are seeking you... [that’s why it came down three times] ...now arise and go down, and go forth with them, doubting nothing...’ (vs 17-20).

We are going to see why this had to be done supernaturally, why it could not be done by the teaching of any man. We will see the reaction that the circumcision party and Jerusalem had when they found out about this whole incident with Cornelius and his household. The reason that it is put in the Bible is so that we will understand that God, in calling the Gentiles, gave them the Holy Spirit without requiring circumcision. That’s the whole long and short of it; we’ll see it. Peter went down, they gave him the explanation, he went with them.

Verse 24: “And on the next day, they came to Caesarea. Now, Cornelius was expecting them *and* had called together his kinsmen and his intimate friends. And as Peter was coming, Cornelius met him *and* fell at *his* feet, worshipping him” (vs 24-25). And Peter said, ‘Thanks for recognizing me as the first pope.’ *No, he didn’t*, because Peter was *never* the first pope. And God never gave to Peter what you think the Catholic Church says that was given to Peter. Now that’s another whole topic. We’ll cover that at a later time.

Verse 26: “But Peter raised him up, saying, ‘Stand up, for I myself am also a man.’ And as he was talking with him, he went in and found many gathered together. And he said to them, ‘**You know that it is unlawful for a man who is a Jew to associate with or come near to anyone of another race. But God has shown me that no man should be called common or unclean.**’” (vs 26-28). *That is the explanation of it, having nothing to do with food.*

If Cornelius was righteous, which it says he was, *he was not eating unclean foods*. Where was he? *He was in the nation of Judea, right there at Caesarea*. You’ve got to put all the facts together. You have to line them up correctly. Cornelius could not be called *righteous*—which we’ll see in a minute he was—unless he were doing so, that is not eating unclean foods.

Verse 29: “For this reason, I also came without objection when I was sent for. I ask therefore, for what purpose did you send for me?’ And Cornelius said, ‘Four days ago I was fasting until this hour, and *at* the ninth hour I was praying in my house; and suddenly a man stood before me in bright apparel, and said, ‘Cornelius, your prayer has been heard... [because he was a righteous man] ...and

your alms have been remembered before God’” (vs 29-31).

That is in heaven above. This is unheard of, because at the temple you have the place which was for the Gentiles, a court of the Gentiles. They couldn’t go any further into the temple area. And then you had the court of the women and then the court of the men. So, this is a tremendous revelation from God. Only God could do this, no man could make this decision. Because if any man made this decision, then it was a decision of a man and could be undone.

Verse 32: “Now then, send to Joppa and call for Simon who is surnamed Peter; he is lodging by *the* sea in *the* house of Simon, a tanner. When he comes, he will speak to you.’ Therefore, I sent for you at once; and you did well to come. So then, we are all present before God to hear all things that have been commanded you by God.’.... [How about that!] ...Then Peter opened *his* mouth *and* said, ‘Of a truth I perceive that God is not a respecter of persons... [whether they’re circumcised or uncircumcised] ...but in every nation the one who fears Him and works righteousness... [which is commandment keeping] ...is acceptable to Him’” (vs 32-35).

If you take the opposite, if you’re not keeping the commandments of God, you’re not accepted of Him, regardless of what you may think, regardless of how you twist and pervert the gift of God and the grace of God. There it is right there.

Verse 36: “The word that He sent to the children of Israel, preaching the Gospel of peace through Jesus Christ (He is Lord of all), You have knowledge of... [Cornelius knew it, no doubt about it.] ...which declaration came throughout the whole of Judea, beginning from Galilee, after the baptism that John proclaimed, *concerning* Jesus, Who was from Nazareth: how God anointed Him with *the* Holy Spirit and with power, and He went about doing good *and* healing all who were oppressed by the devil, because God was with Him. And we are witnesses of all *the* things that He did, both in the country of the Jews and in Jerusalem. They killed Him by hanging *Him* on a tree. *But* God raised Him up the third day, and showed Him openly, not to all the people, but to witnesses who had been chosen before by God, to *those of* us, who did eat and drink with Him after He had risen from *the* dead. And He commanded us to preach to the people, and to fully testify that it is He Who has, been appointed by God *to be* Judge of *the* living and *the* dead. To Him all the prophets bear witness, *that* everyone who believes in Him receives remission of sins through His name.’ While Peter was still speaking these words....” (vs 36-44).

It had to be done this way. It could not have been done any other way. It could not have been

done that a man decided this. After God decided it, it intervened supernaturally to show this, by a miracle. Even then there were the circumcision wars between the Jews because they didn't want to give in. They figured they were the 'chosen people.' They figured Judaism was going to eventually be exalted over all the nations. *No, no, no, never happened that way!* Here's what happened:

Verse 44: "While Peter was still speaking these words, the Holy Spirit came upon all those who were listening to the message. And the believers from the circumcision were astonished... [they didn't think this would ever happen to Gentiles uncircumcised] ...as many as had come with Peter, that upon the Gentiles also the gift of the Holy Spirit had been poured out" (vs 44-45).

Now think on that, because Judaism was saying that you cannot receive the Holy Spirit unless you are circumcised. To take those Jews who were in Judaism and move them away from Judaism to the Truth of the Gospel, was a great and a difficult thing to accomplish. Remember, Peter was the apostle to the circumcision and therefore, God used him to do this as a perpetual witness *that God did not require physical circumcision of Gentiles in order to be saved.* This is what it's teaching us.

Verse 46: "For they heard them speak in other languages and magnify God.... [What tongues were they speaking in? Obviously, they being Italian were speaking in Hebrew or Aramaic or Greek, because Italians were Latin speakers. This was amazing!] ...Then Peter responded by saying, 'Can anyone forbid water... [If you forbid water and baptism with this hand of God upon the people, then you're going against God—are you not? *No doubt about it!*] ...that these should not be baptized, who have also received the Holy Spirit as we *did?*'.... [There it is—baptism! Baptism is the circumcision made without hands.] ...And he commanded them to be baptized in the name of the Lord. Then they besought him to remain *for* a number of days" (vs 46-48).

So, he stayed there. Others of the circumcision party went on back. Let's move right on to Acts 11:1, because it flows right from there. "Now the apostles and the brethren who were in Judea heard that the Gentiles had also received the Word of God... [This went like wildfire, even without telephones, by the way.] ...and when Peter went up to Jerusalem, those of *the* circumcision disputed with him... [These later were called the *circumcision party*. And some of these were the very ones that were going down to Antioch later on and causing the problem as we saw there in Acts 15.] ...saying, 'You went in to men who were uncircumcised and did eat with them.... [Which was a sin according to the *Code of Jewish Law*, but not a

sin according to the Law of God.] ...But Peter related *the event* from the beginning and expounded *everything* in order to them, saying, 'I was in the city of Joppa praying... (vs 1-5)—and so forth and he gave the whole account.

Verse 15: "And when I began to speak, the Holy Spirit came upon them, even as *it* also *came* upon us in the beginning. Then I remembered the Word of the Lord, how He had said, 'John indeed baptized with water, but you shall be baptized with the Holy Spirit.' Therefore, if God also gave them the same gift that *was given* to us, who believed on the Lord Jesus Christ, who was I *to dissent?* Do I have the power to forbid God?... [I want you to ask that same question concerning Sabbath-keeping. Who are to withstand God? You think about it.] ...And after hearing these things, they were silent; and they glorified God, saying, 'Then to the Gentiles also has God indeed granted repentance unto life'" (vs 15-18)—without circumcision. That becomes very important. ***Baptism is a circumcision of the heart, so that you can receive the Holy Spirit.***

Under the New Covenant there is a greater circumcision. It is the circumcision of the heart and the mind. Romans 2:28: "For he is not a Jew who is *one* outwardly, neither is that circumcision which is external in *the* flesh; rather, he is a Jew who is *one* inwardly, and circumcision is *of the* heart, in *the* spirit *and* not in *the* letter; whose praise is not from men but from God" (vs 28-29).

Now let's go to Colossians 2, and we will see that this circumcision made without hands is accomplished through the operation of baptism and receiving of the Holy Spirit. You are complete in Christ. Colossians 2:6: "Therefore, as you have received Christ Jesus the Lord, be walking in Him; Being rooted and built up in Him, and being confirmed in the faith, exactly as you were taught, abounding in it with thanksgiving. Be on guard so that no one takes you captive through philosophy... [We are to watch out for the philosophies of men, the teachings of men. Just like Jesus said, 'Beware of the leaven of the Pharisees and Sadducees,' as we've already covered.] ...and vain deceit, according to the traditions of men, according to the elements of the world, and not according to Christ. For in Him dwells all the fullness of the Godhead bodily; and you are complete in Him, Who is the Head of all principality and power..." (vs 6-10).

Our sermon series on Colossians tells you the full meaning of it. I'm not going to concentrate on the full meaning of Col. 2 today, I'm going to concentrate on the higher circumcision, which is the *circumcision of the heart* that Paul talks about which is done, and does not require the circumcision of the flesh, which then became a problem.

Verse 11: “In Whom you have also been circumcised with *the* circumcision not made by hands, in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ.” All those who are Christ’s and have repented of their sins and have been baptized have had the circumcision of the heart, so that the laws and commandments of God can be written in their heart and mind through the power of the Holy Spirit that they will be led to walk in the way of the Lord, and go the way of God. That’s what the circumcision of the heart does.

Now notice how this is done, v 12: “Having been buried with Him in baptism, by which you have also been raised with Him through the inner working of God, Who raised Him from the dead... [that ties right in with what we read there in Rom. 6 concerning baptism] ...For you, who were once dead in your sins and in the uncircumcision of your flesh, He has now made alive with Him, **having forgiven all your trespasses**. He has blotted out the note of debt...” (vs 12-14).

That is the *debt of your sins*. That is not blotting out any commandments of God, or ordinances of God, or handwriting of God. Anyone who teaches that does not have a clue as to what the Bible is really teaching. So you need the series on Colossians, which fully explains this.

“...which was contrary to us... [none of the laws of God are contrary to us] ...and He has taken it away, having nailed it to the cross?” (v 14).

The only thing that was nailed to the cross was Christ, and symbolically all the sins of the world. That’s the true circumcision. Now then, let me bring to you some very important information out of this book called, *Early Christianity and Hellenistic Judaism*. We need to understand that there was what is called Normative Judaism, which was in Palestine. Then you had Hellenistic Judaism, which originated in Alexandria, Egypt, where also the Old Testament was translated into the Greek language. That’s why it’s called Hellenistic Judaism, because they only use the Greek Old Testament. It has a great bearing as to what happened in the New Testament church.

Then you also have Gnostic Jews, which I’ve covered in a series of different sermons. But the Gnostic Jews were those who believed in circumcision, and yet did not believe in keeping the commandments of God, and as we’ll see a little later on, strangely enough were Sunday-keepers. How about that! This book is very important and profound book. They’ll be several things that we’ll read out of this as we go along, but what I want to cover here is talking about circumcision and how that Judaism had three different levels of circumcision, and how this conflicted with Christian evangelizing of the Gentiles.

Judaism made proselytes out of them. Proselytes then were in these different categories. Although there are parallels between *compelled to be circumcised* { write in for the *Circumcision Wars* and get a full explanation of that.

Early Christianity and Hellenistic Judaism, pg 259:

All demonstrate that it was common to regard circumcision as such as a basic identity marker for the Jew, and that when needed, Gentiles were forcibly circumcised. By this act, they were made citizens of the Jewish nation, though they could be considered in the Diaspora with the Jews.

The Jews regardless of where they were, were considered part of the Jewish nation.

There are several aspects other than circumcision involved in becoming a Jewish proselyte. For example, Philo of Alexandria...

Philo in Alexandria was the chief leading Jew in Hellenistic Judaism, which was during the days of the ministry of Jesus Christ, and on over into the beginning of the New Testament church. And this Judaism, out of Alexandria, caused a great deal of problems because they believed in circumcision. These were also like those that came down from Jerusalem to say that you cannot be saved unless you are circumcised and that you must be circumcised and keep the Law of Moses, meaning all the traditions and laws that the Jews had.

For example, Philo of Alexandria generally concentrates on three aspects:

1. The religious conversion

He describes a religious conversion as:

A change from worshiping many gods, to worship the one true God.

2. The ethical conversion. The change here is from pagan vices to Jewish virtues.

3. The social/national conversion—The proselytes have left their family, their country, their customs, and have entered the Jewish nation a new and Godly commonwealth.

Philo gives an answer to the question, ‘When does a person receive the status as a proselyte in the Jewish community and ceases to be a heathen?’ In this saying, ethical circumcision and not bodily circumcision was a basic requirement for entering the Jewish community and then

they would become common. They could attend the synagogue. And there was a place for the Gentiles to attend. They couldn't go into the other part of the synagogue, because they were not circumcised. This then is ethical circumcision.

When Paul was preaching and teaching the Gentiles, the Jews that came along said, 'Well, look, all he's doing is preaching ethical circumcision, and he needs to have the final circumcision, which is of the flesh. But God showed, through what He taught through the incident there with Cornelius and Peter and the giving of the Holy Spirit to the Gentiles, that they don't need to be circumcised to receive the Holy Spirit.

(pg 261): Bodily circumcision was one of the commandments which the proselytes had to obey upon receiving the status of a Jew.

Then they could be called clean. So there you have the whole problem that we find in Acts 15. Those who were from Judaism wanted to continue the proselytizing process that Judaism had. Namely, that the Gentile would forsake worshipping many gods and worship the true God. Then he would have the ethical conversion then, where he would then follow the commandments and laws of God. Then he would have the final circumcision, which was the circumcision of the flesh, to make him a bona fide member of the Jewish nation. That's very important to understand.

In all of this, there is no question whatsoever concerning Sabbath-keeping, that it has been abrogated. We need to continue on in Acts 15 to get the sum of the whole question. Then when we do, we will understand it.

After Peter said what he had to say, Acts 15:12: "Then all the multitude kept silence and heard Barnabas and Paul... [You can read what they did, Acts 13 and 14, all the Gentiles that were converted, all that were given the Holy Spirit, the miracles that were done. None of the Gentiles were compelled to be circumcised.] ...heard Barnabas and Paul relate what signs and wonders God had done among the Gentiles through them. And after they were silent, James answered and said, 'Men, brethren, listen to me. Simeon has related how God first visited *the* Gentiles to take out a people for His name'" (vs 12-14). Remember how we saw in *Refuting Sunday-Keeping IV*, that there is a direct commandment in Heb. 4:9, which says, '**Therefore, there remains Sabbath-keeping for the people of God,**' which includes the Gentiles. Right here it says, 'take out of them a people for His name.' They are the people of God.

Verse 15: "And with this the words of the prophets agree, as it is written, 'After these things, I will return and will build again the tabernacle of David which has fallen; and its ruins I will build again, and will set it up; so that the residue of men may seek the Lord, and all the Gentiles upon whom My name is called, says *the* Lord, Who does all these things.' Known to God are all His works from the beginning of the world. Therefore, my judgment is... [It is in the Greek, my 'krinos,' my judgment is.] ...*that* we do not trouble those of the Gentiles who have turned to God" (vs 15-19). Sunday-keepers say, 'We trouble not them concerning anything concerning the Law of Moses.' *Not true! Not true! Not true!* Showing that they do not know their Bibles.

Verse 20 [transcriber's correction]. Let's understand something here, very carefully. "But *that* we write to them to abstain from pollutions of idols... [Is that not the 2nd commandment? *Yes, it is!* Is not the 2nd commandment found in the true Law of Moses? *Yes, it is!* Were they then commanding them to keep the true Law of Moses? *Yes, he was!*] ...and *from* sexual immorality... [Fornication is based upon the commandment, 'You shall not commit adultery.' We have the second commandment, which is part of the first four; and now we have from fornication, which then is the 7th commandment, 'You shall not commit adultery.' Is that not in the true Law of Moses? *Yes, no question about it!*] ...and *from* what been strangled... [That has to do with how meat is killed, because they are not to have any blood.] ...and *from* blood."

I remember when I was a kid growing up, we had a neighbor and every year he'd kill his hog. He would clean it up and then he would kill it and right when he killed it, he would take a cup and get that first blood right as it came out from the throat he slit, and he would fill it up and drink it. The Gentiles would do that. Now that I know how unclean swine are, no wonder the man was sick.

Verse 21: "For from *the* generations of old, Moses..." That's the whole first five books of the Bible—is it not? Does that contain the commands to keep the Sabbath? *Yes, it does!* Does it show the things that we have already covered leading up to this? *Yes!* Does that show the things that we covered in the series on the Holy Sabbath? There are many things that you need to get and put together to understand this subject and don't run off half-cocked and run down the road and think that your Protestant minister understands. He doesn't! He doesn't have a clue. His mind and heart is blinded because he only reads what he wants to read and he twists and distorts the Word of God to his own destruction and yours.] ...Moses has had in every city those who proclaim him in the synagogues... [the Law of

Moses was preached] ...being read every Sabbath Day.”

Where did the Gentile converts come from to begin with? From attending as common, uncircumcised Gentiles, who attended the synagogue in their special little second-class section, or Gentiles who were proselyte and who accepted circumcision. But I want you to read this again. “Moses... being read in the synagogue every Sabbath Day.” We find Sabbath-keeping enforced here—don’t we? Endorsed at the very least. We don’t find any abrogation of the commandments of God. We don’t find any abrogation of the Law of Moses. We do find an abrogation of the Law of Moses as defined by the Pharisees and also as it is in this book, *Code of Jewish Law*.

But the true books of Moses, the true Laws of God, and the keeping of the Sabbath and all of these things, were done as a matter of accepted fact. They did not tell the Gentiles, ‘Now, you can go keep Sunday.’ They didn’t say ‘You can go eat clean and unclean meats.’ They did not say that you can go back to your Saturnalia and Brunalia and all of your pagan holidays.’ If this sounds strange to you, you better ask yourself the question: How deceived am I really? Maybe you’re beginning to understand. You’ve never heard the Word of God truly preached and taught and expounded.

This man, Dr. Russell K. Tardo (*Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction*) does not know the Word of God. He does not understand it. Not one of his 25 explanations in here have any substance whatsoever, and continue in this series until we cover all 25 of them, regardless of how long it takes. This is fundamental and this is profound, and this is important, and this is salvational.

Do you think you’re going to get in the Kingdom of God by rejecting the commandments of God? Let’s go to Revelation 22 and again I will say, if you have an *NIV Bible*, you’re already deceived, because that’s the wrong Greek text from which they translated it. What you essentially have is a Catholic Bible. What you have is a corrupted Bible.

Revelation 22:12—this is Christ speaking about His return. He says: “**And behold, I am coming quickly; and My reward is with Me, to render to each one according as his work shall be.**” What is your work? You have to have the right works. And those right works are proper commandment-keeping, including all the Ten Commandments. And as we will learn later, all of the Holy Days, according to

- whether you *believe in faith*
- whether you *trust in God*
- whether you *stand in His grace*

- whether you have *allowed the mind of Christ to be developed in you*

Those are all the works that God has given us. So the works it’s talking about here is a full passel of works.

Verse 13: “I am Alpha and Omega, *the Beginning and the End, the First and the Last...* [I want you to read this. We may have covered it before, but I want you to read it again in the context of what we’ve said today.] ...**Blessed are those who keep...** [The Greek there is the verb ‘poieo,’ which means to practice, to practice as a way of life the commandments.] ...**His commandments**, that they may have the right to *eat of the tree of life*, and may enter by the gates into the city” (vs 13-14). Now then,

- If you reject the commandments of God, *you have no right to the tree of life.*
- If you don’t keep them, *you have no right to the tree of life.*
- If you hate them and think that God has abrogated them, *you have no right to the tree of life.*
- If you think you have salvation by your means, *you are wrong.*

You can only have salvation by the means of Jesus Christ and all of the New Testament, including Sabbath-keeping. Now that is a fact.

Now let’s go back to Acts 15, and let’s finish it here, so that we understand what’s really going on. Acts 15:22: “Then it pleased the apostles and the elders, together with the whole Church, to send chosen men from among them to Antioch with Paul and Barnabas; and *they chose* leading men from among the brethren: Judas, *who was* surnamed Barsabas, and Silas. And they wrote *letters* by their hand, as follows: ‘The apostles and the elders and the brethren, to those brethren *who are* of the Gentiles in Antioch and Syria and Cilicia’” (vs 22-23). So they cleared up the whole problem.

We will understand ***why God demands Sabbath-keeping and Sunday-keeping is sin against God.***

Scriptures from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order a Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter

Scriptural References:

- 1) Romans 3:28
- 2) Romans 2:14-15
- 3) Romans 3:28-31
- 4) Romans 6:1-6
- 5) Acts 15:5-10
- 6) Acts 11: 19-26
- 7) Acts 10:1-4
- 8) Proverbs 15: 8-9, 28-29
- 9) Acts 10:5-20, 24-48

- 10) Acts 11:1-5, 15-18
- 11) Romans 2:28-29
- 12) Colossians 2:6-14
- 13) Acts 15:12-21
- 14) Revelation 22:12-14
- 15) Acts 15:22-23

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Hebrews 8, 10
- 1-John 3:4
- Galatians 2
- Psalm 119:172
- 1-Timothy 4
- Deuteronomy 15
- Leviticus 11
- Acts 13, 14
- Hebrews 4:9

Also referenced:

Sermon Series:

- *Galatians*
- *The Circumcision Wars*
- *Mystery of Lawlessness*
- *Scripturalism vs Judaism*
- *Colossians*
- *The Holy Sabbath*

Books:

- *Code of Jewish Law* by Solomon Ganzfried and Hyman E. Goldin
- *The Christian Passover* by Fred R. Coulter
- *Early Christianity and Hellenistic Judaism* by Peder Borgen
- *Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction* by Dr. Russell K. Tardo

Booklet: *The Beliefs of the Christian Biblical Church of God*

Refuting Sunday-Keeping VII

Fred R. Coulter

We're going to cover an awful lot concerning Sunday-keeping; it is so deeply imbedded in what is called Christian thought today. As a matter of fact, anyone who keeps the Sabbath is looked upon as a cult or is looked upon as having deficient or weak faith. even the Jews view it in such a way that Christians who keep the Sabbath are actually an oxymoron. In other words, the Jews claim it for themselves alone. And yet we've seen in the series on the Holy Sabbath that we've done, and if you don't have that series, be sure and write for it, that God created the Sabbath. Christ said it was created for mankind. It is not the prerogative of the Jews to say it's exclusively theirs. And they are saying that they are God's, when God has said that He gave it for all of mankind.

What we're going to see in all of this, and what we'll learn as we go along is this: When men get into religion and leave the way of God, and leave the Scriptures, or take the Scriptures and use them improperly, then they are setting themselves in the seat of God, and they are taking prerogatives to them which only God has. So therefore, they're coming right back to the same original sin as Adam and Eve in the Garden of Eden that they are deciding what is right, they are deciding what is wrong, they are judging God. We're going to see today that the true colors of Protestantism comes out; the true colors of their hatred toward God's laws comes out; their true twisting of the Scriptures really comes out. And we'll take it step-by-step as we go through, because this is very important for you to understand and follow through and realize exactly what is being done.

So, again I'll begin reading from page 25 of this book, *Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction* by Dr. Russell K. Tardo. What we are going to see is that this man is what you would call someone who believes in lawlessness. We'll define lawlessness a little clearer, so we understand it. See the sermon series on *The Mystery of Lawlessness*, and the sermon series that we've done, which goes through the book of Galatians and *Circumcision Wars*.

Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction by Dr. Russell K. Tardo, pg 25:

4. Jesus cancelled the Sabbath

A lot of people believe it. As a matter of fact, in the book, *Early Christianity and Hellenistic Judaism*, many of the Jews took the same thought of God canceling the Sabbath as these men have done when they look at John 5.

The words used in John 5:18 to describe exactly what Jesus did, are extremely significant.

First of all you have to understand what He did do and what He did not do.

And therefore the Jews persecuted Jesus and sought to slay Him because He had done these things on the Sabbath day, but Jesus answered them, 'My Father works hitherto and I work. Therefore the Jews sought the more to kill him, because not only had He broken the Sabbath, but He said also that God was His Father, making Him equal with God.' Now the phrase, 'not only had He broken the Sabbath...

This is the phrase that they are looking at:

...the expression, He, Jesus, had broken the Sabbath, actually declares that Jesus had done nothing less than to cancel the Sabbath commandment.

I want you to think about that. 'To cancel the Sabbath commandment.' In other words, He abolished the Sabbath. That's what they are saying. Let's go along, and we'll read this through and then we will go back and we will examine these statements again, and we will look at the Scriptures properly and we will understand exactly what Jesus did. You just can't take that one verse out of the middle of the context of the whole chapter and not understand what was going on.

Numerous Greek scholars have stated this to be true. For instance, M. R. Vincent translates: 'have broken' literally 'was loosing' in the imperfect tense...

That's correct. Comes from the verb 'luo' in the Greek, which means *to loose*.

...not 'broke the Sabbath' in any particular case.

That is not necessarily a correct statement, because it would be proper to say that Jesus broke the Sabbath in relationship to the 'code' of Jewish laws which we have already previously covered. In other words, if there was anything broken indeed, it was that Jesus transgressed the traditions of the elders, because the traditions of elders are Judaism, and the laws that the Jews have made, which are not binding upon anyone who believes in the Bible.

...but was annulling the Law and the duty of Sabbath observance.

That's quite a statement. That is really profound. You need to understand that.

This is exactly what John meant. The word translated 'was loosing' has profound legal significance—meaning and context—dealing with laws and judicial decisions. It is the same word Jesus used in Matt. 16:19, 'Whatsoever you loose on the earth, shall have been loosed in heaven.' This is used to show legal divorce in the New Testament Church.

What we're going to understand is: You take a bit, you take a piece, and you put them together, but you're not rightly putting together, you're not 'rightly dividing the Word of God.' Because a 'loosed' marriage is based upon law that the marriage was violated and Jesus said, 'Saving for the cause of fornication,' and Paul was inspired to write, 'If the non-believer leaves, then the believer is not bound.' Only those two cases. So it is used in the sense of loosing when there is transgression, not abrogating in the sense that you're doing away with the marriage law, nor are you doing away with the two exceptions that Jesus gave for loosing a marriage.

Then he quotes the verse:

'Are you loosed from a wife? (1-Cor. 7:27)

and the full verse reads, 1-Corinthians 7:27: "Have you been bound to a wife? Do not seek to be loosed. Have you been loosed from a wife? Do not seek a wife." Again, once sentence out of a whole chapter twists and turns the meaning of the Scriptures.

Then he quotes:

2-Peter 3:11-12: "Seeing then that all these things shall be dissolved, wherein the heavens being on fire shall be dissolved."

And the verb there comes from the base root verb of 'luo.'

It was even translated to destroy the Son of God was manifest that He might destroy the works of the devil.

Destroy in the sense of annulling, so that when it's all annulled, they will be as if they never have been.

And Vincent said it meant in the Greek, 'to annul laws, and duty of Sabbath observance.'

But notice who he's quoting that says that. He's quoting Vincent. He's not quoting the Scripture, because we're going to see some Scriptures which completely refute this.

Noted Greek authority, V. E. Vine, translates it 'to loosen,' especially by way of deliverance...

And all of these things you're going to see to loosen them from sin, be delivered from sin.

...sometimes has the meaning of breaking or destructively of breaking commandments, not only infringing them, but loosing the force of them rendering them not binding.

That can be a true statement when applied to the laws of men. But *God is not going to throw away His commandments. His Word stands true and sure forever.*

Now next Bullinger defines it: to loose, loosen, unbind, unfasten. Arndt and Gingrich translate it loose, untie, set free, release, to set free from bondage, to break up, destroy, bring to an end, abolish, do away with. Of commandments, laws, statements it means to repeal, annul, abolish, abolish the Sabbath.

What they're all doing in here is reading in what they want.

Thus we see that John 5:18, Jesus is accused not merely of breaking the Sabbath, but of doing away with it entirely. While it's possible to cite many such scholarly renditions, it would only be redundant. The point is clearly made. Jesus annulled, abolished, and did away with the Sabbath forever. It is no longer binding on any New Testament believer. In fact, the whole of the Law of Moses has been rendered inoperative. The New Testament is clear for all the rabbis to hear, the whole of the Law of Moses has been rendered operative by the death of the Lord Jesus. The law in its entirety no longer has any immediate or forensic authority or jurisdiction over anyone and this is evidenced in three ways.

We will go into those three ways a little later.

Let's stop right here, and let's begin with some very basic Scriptures. Let's go to Psalm 111 first. Now you need to understand something very important and always remember it. The One Who was the Lord God of the Old Testament was the One Who divested Himself of His Divinity and became the Lord Jesus Christ. Anything that it talks about here concerning God's laws, concerning God's commandments, are binding not only Old Testament, but New Testament.

Psalm 111:7: "The works of His hands are Truth and justice; all His precepts are sure. They stand fast forever and ever; they are done in Truth and uprightness" (vs 7-8). Let's compare this

statement. The Bible says that all His commandments *are sure, they stand fast forever* and ever, they are done in *truth and uprightness* compared to this, here's what Tardo wrote:

Jesus annulled, abolished, did away with the Sabbath forever.

Who's telling a lie, the man or God? We know the Scriptures tell us that it's impossible for God to lie, so this man who wrote this book is a liar. He may be lying in ignorance or in blind deception, but nevertheless he's still lying.

Verse 9: "He sent redemption unto His people; He has commanded His covenant forever; Holy and awesome [reverend] is His name.... [That's why no man who professes to be a minister of any kind should take the name reverend or the title father, nor should he be called master; or in the case of the eastern oriental religion, gurus, because that means master. Christ has forbidden all of that! **Only God's name is sanctified. Only God's name is Holy!**] ...The fear of the LORD is the beginning of wisdom; a good understanding have all those who do His commandments. His praise endures forever" (vs 9-10).

God says His commandments are going to endure forever. A man who hates the Sabbath says, 'It's been done away.' Let's find out the truth concerning what Jesus said. Let's go to Matthew 5, we need to have this in our minds when we come to John 5 so we understand exactly what it's saying.

Either this is true and Christ spoke the truth—and He is 'the Way, the Truth and the Life' understand that, (John 14:6), or this is a lie. And if this is a lie, then the Scriptures cannot be true and whatever you believe then is in vain, because you believe a lie.

Matthew 5:17, Jesus said: "'Do not think... [Which means, don't even let it enter into your mind. Don't even let this thought proceed in your head, let alone write and print it as he has here.] ...Do not think that I have come to abolish the Law... ['luo' Oh, he wouldn't quote that there with 'destroy'—would he? *No!* Then he would lose his case. So selective picking and choosing of Scriptures so you can tippy-toe your way through the false Protestant doctrine and Catholic doctrine shows the lying errors of their ways.] ...Do not think that I have come to abolish the Law or the Prophets; **I did not come to abolish, but to fulfill.**"

Fulfill does not mean to destroy. Fulfill does not mean to do away. Fulfill means, in the sense of Jesus and the Prophets, *everything concerning His first coming was fulfilled*, but that didn't do away with it. That now becomes evidence and proof of His coming, the reason why He came. The fact that

God's Word is true and the fact that these things were prophesied shows the veracity and truth and inspiration of the Word of God, which you can depend upon it. And the very things back there in the book of Moses, which prophesied about Jesus Christ, have been fulfilled. But was that Scripture done away? *Absolutely not! No way!*

This is really something. We are dealing with lawlessness of the highest and most clever degree that men have come up with to keep their own carnal ways and to keep Sunday. They won't repent from it. And I tell you what, it's about time some of these Protestant ministers start repenting of their lies and their cheating and using God's Word in the way that they do to say things and represent to God, represent to people things that God has never done. It says there in the book of Isaiah that 'you made Me to serve with your sins,' said God. And that's exactly what they're doing.

Now notice Deuteronomy 18:15: "The LORD your God will raise up unto you a Prophet..." The sermon explaining all about that *That Prophet* will go through the whole thing in great detail showing that Christ was that Prophet and He fulfilled it. But these Scriptures are still living proof. Once it's fulfilled does not mean it's done away. It now becomes evidence of the *truth* and *power* of God. It now becomes evidence that the prophecies of God being fulfilled, spoken thousands of years before, shows the power of the living God to carry His Word through all generations.

"...from the midst of you, of your brethren, One like me. To Him you shall hearken.... [That means you shall listen to Him. And if you don't listen to Him, you're in trouble.] ...According to all that you desired of the LORD your God in Horeb in the day of the assembly, saying, 'Let me not hear again the voice of the LORD my God, neither let me see this great fire any more, so that I do not die.'" (vs 15-16).

That's exactly what carnal nature is. They cannot stand to hear the Word of God. They cannot stand to have the commandments of God. So the children of Israel said, 'Oh, Moses, you go speak with God and we will hear you.' But the fact is, even though God spoke to Moses first, it did not change the reality that what was spoken was the Word of God, as we saw last time concerning the Law of Moses.

Verse 17: "And the LORD said to me, 'They have spoken well what they have spoken.'" That's why Christ came. And He really said this, what He's doing with this: 'Since you won't listen to Me in My glorified form, I'm going to come to you in the flesh, since you want to hear someone who's flesh and blood,' and that's exactly what Jesus did. He

gave up all His glory and Divinity as God, and came to this earth as a human being, born of the virgin Mary, had flesh and blood just like we have.

Now notice, because it is a fact what God is going to hold responsible, v 18: “I will raise them up a Prophet from among their brethren, *One* like you, and will put My words in His mouth. And He shall speak to them all that I shall command Him. And it shall come to pass, whatever man will not hearken to My words which He shall speak in My name, I will require *it* of him” (vs 18-19). You’re under that judgment.

- Will you hear the words of Christ?
- Will you hear the inspiration of the New Testament?
- Will you listen to Heb. 4:9 which says, ‘*Therefore, there remains Sabbath-keeping for the people of God, meaning Jews and Gentiles?*

A direct command for keeping the Sabbath. That’s under the inspiration of the Holy Spirit from Jesus Christ to the Apostle Paul. Will you hear those words? If you won’t hear those words, God is going to require it of you. He is going to judge you every time you justify yourself and say, ‘Well, God knows my heart’—*He does!*

- Is your heart repentant?
- Are you obedient?

OR

- Are you carnal and making excuses?

‘Well, I’m so good, God knows my heart, so if I keep Sunday that’s just fine with God.’ ***No, it’s not!***

Russell Tardo ought to read this, v 20 “But the prophet who shall presume to speak a word in My name which I have not commanded him to speak... [All the commands are right here in the Bible.] (Notice what’s going to happen): ...or who shall speak in the name of other gods, **even that prophet shall die.**” Why? *Because what he’s doing is sin and ‘the wages of sin is death!’*

Let’s come back here to Matthew 5. These are the words of Christ. We just read it. God is going to hold you responsible. God is going to hold every human being on earth responsible, especially if you have received the Word of God in your house. If you have the Bible in your house, but you haven’t read it, that’s not God’s fault. How ever you got it there, God made sure you had it. So it’s about time as some have said, ‘You better pick it up and blow the dust off so that you can understand the Word of God.’

Matthew 5:17: “Do not think... [don’t even let it enter into your mind] ...that I have come to abolish the Law or the Prophets; I did not come to

abolish, but to fulfill. For truly I say to you, until the heaven and the earth shall pass away, one jot or one tittle shall in no way pass from the Law until everything has been fulfilled” (vs 17-18). Now what are jots and tittles? *Jots and tittles are part of the Hebrew alphabet!* What does this tell us? *This tells us very clearly it’s referring to the Old Testament.*

There can be no blanket abrogation of those laws by a decree of man. Notice what Jesus said, ‘Heaven and earth shall pass away,’ but heaven and earth has not passed away. We’re still on the earth and the heaven is still above us; and yea, Christ is returning from the heavens. He’s going to bring the power and glory of God and the Kingdom of God and they are going to keep the Sabbath and the Holy Days all the way through the Millennial reign of Jesus Christ. You need to understand that.

We are dealing with profound and deep issues. We are dealing with the Truth of God vs the lies of men and Satan the devil. We are dealing with the purity of the Gospel of Christ vs the corruption of it by those who are Gnostics and bringing in their own ideas and own false interpretations.

Verse 19: “Therefore, whoever shall break one of these least commandments...” Where? What commandment? *Jot and tittle in the Old Testament!* What do you consider the least commandment? Apparently Russell Tardo considers the Sabbath one of the least commandments—doesn’t he? *You think about that!* Now before you say in your mind, ‘Boy, he’s sure going after them.’ Listen, if you think what I’m saying is tough, do you want to go before Christ and explain it to Him? Now you better listen to the words of the Bible. You better listen to the Scriptures, because that’s going to judge you, not any man. Protestant doctrine is not going to judge you, Catholic doctrine is not going to judge you, Muslim, Buddhist, Hindu doctrine is not going to judge you. *The laws and commandments of God and Christ are going to judge you.* Jesus said all judgment was given to Him. Here’s part of the judgment.

“...whoever shall break one of these least commandments, and shall teach men so, shall be called least in the Kingdom of Heaven... [Which means that you won’t even exist, because no sinner is going to enter into the Kingdom of God. All sinners are going to be cast in the Lake of Fire, which is the second death.] ...but whoever shall practice and teach *them*, this one shall be called great in the Kingdom of Heaven.... [Now then, let’s understand what would be necessary to have in the New Testament, if there were a change in the Sabbath from Sabbath to Sunday. Let’s understand what it would take.] ...For I say to you, unless your righteousness shall exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees...” (vs 19-20). Theirs was all

letter of the Law with Judaism, which made void the laws and commandments of God. Your righteousness has to be based upon

- the Scriptures of God
- the Word of God
- with the Spirit of God

and that's how it will exceed the righteousness of the scribes and Pharisees.

"...there is no way *that* you shall enter into the Kingdom of Heaven...[You want eternal life? You're not going to get it your way. You're only going to get it God's way and it has to come through Christ.] ...You have heard that it was said to those *in ancient times*, 'You shall not commit murder; but whoever commits murder shall be subject to judgment.' But I say to you, everyone who is angry with his brother without cause shall be subject to judgment. Now, *you have heard it said*, "Whoever shall say to his brother, 'Raca,' shall be subject to *the judgment of the council.*" *But I say to you*, whoever shall say, "You fool, " shall be subject to the fire of Gehenna" (vs 20-22). Those are pretty strong words—aren't they? If you believe in the sweet, little Lord Jesus who has long hair you've got the wrong Jesus. You don't understand the Bible at all. And if you want to understand it, you better get your nose into it and read it and understand it.

Let's come over here to v 27: "You have heard that it was said to those *in ancient times*, 'You shall not commit adultery.' But I say to you, everyone who looks upon a woman to lust after her has already committed adultery with her in his heart" (vs 27-28).

Notice, here's what Tardo writes:

In fact the whole Law of Moses has been rendered inoperative.

- Where do you find 'You shall not commit adultery'?
- Where do you find 'You shall not kill'?
- Where do you find 'You shall not steal'?
- Are those not the laws of God,
- Are those not the Ten Commandments?

No question about it.

If the Sabbath had been changed from the seventh day to the first day, you would have to have a clear defined statement by Jesus Christ, which you cannot find. You would have to find it in the New Testament first person by Jesus Christ, because He is the One Who gave the Sabbath commandment. He's the One Who created the Sabbath. That statement would have to read, 'You've heard it said in old time, you shall remember the Sabbath Day to keep it Holy, but I say unto you, you shall remember the first day of the week to keep it Holy.' No such

command exists in the Bible anywhere! Not in the New Testament, you can search in vain you will never find it.

What men did later in twisting and turning the Word of God so they can justify Sunday-keeping, now that's another whole story. We'll get to that as we come in this series. Let's understand what's happening here. Let's come back to James, the fourth chapter, and let's realize what's occurring, one of the greatest sins that's occurring with this kind of thinking and this kind of judgment concerning God's law.

James 4:12: "But here is **only one Lawgiver...**" No man, no church, no council, regardless of how religious they may be, how high their office in the world may be accepted, can change the laws of God.

Let's just prove a point, James 2:10: "For *if* anyone keeps the whole law, but sins in one *aspect*, he becomes guilty of all.... [You think about that! The reason the Sabbath isn't mentioned here is because he wrote this to Sabbath-keeping people. There was not the Sunday controversy at the time that James wrote.] (notice, he focuses in on these commandments): ...For He Who said, 'You shall not commit adultery,' also said, 'You shall not commit murder.... [This ties exactly in with what we covered in Matt. 5 with what Jesus said—right?] ...Now, if you do not commit adultery, but you commit murder, you have become a transgressor of *the Law*'" (vs 10-11).

Now let's come back and see the greatest transgression of the Law, James 4:11: "Brethren, do not talk against one another.... [That doesn't mean that we don't point out wrong in doctrine, or evil in doctrine.] ...The one who talks against a brother... [Of course, a brother is one who has been baptized and is in the Church with you.] ...one who talks against a brother, and judges his brother, is speaking against the Law... [That's exactly what is happening with these statements. Is this not speaking evil of the Law? *No question about it!*] ...But if you judge the Law, you are not a doer of the Law; rather, you are a judge. But there is only one Lawgiver..." (vs 11-12).

Since there is one Lawgiver, who are you judging? *You're judging God!* And if you say, 'Well, that Sabbath commandment was just for the Jews. We Gentiles don't have to keep it today.' Yet, we saw last time how that the Gentiles were in the synagogues keeping the Sabbath—didn't we? *Yes!* You judge the Law, you judge God. When you say God did not mean this, you are judging God. Did God ever speak a lie? Did God ever do anything in vain? Did He? *No!* But this man [Tardo] thinks so and this is his Sunday-keeping philosophy where he makes God the villain, where he makes the Law evil.

He's judging the Law and he's certainly not a doer of it. He's judging God because he's accusing Christ of abolishing the Sabbath, when Christ said in His own words that He 'did not come to abolish or destroy the Law or the Prophets, but to fulfill.'

Concerning His personal life on earth in the flesh, everything was fulfilled. But that didn't fulfill the entirety of the Scriptures, because there is the whole prophecy of the Church. There's the whole New Testament Church. There are all the prophecies concerning His second coming. None of those have been fulfilled in the sense as it was with His first coming. Those are all yet to be fulfilled. But God's Word is living and true and will carry its weight. It's going to go the way that God has said.

Now let's understand something concerning lawlessness. We have covered this before, but I want to cover it again and I want to make sure that we fully grasp what is being said, and what is being done, and how Christ looks at it. Let's come back here to Matt, 7. It seems as though lately there's so much going around in the way of false doctrine, in the way of teaching contrary to the commandments of God—yet all done in the name of God. This is important to understand and grasp.

Matthew 7:13: "Enter in through the narrow gate... [that means *it's difficult*] ...for wide *is* the gate and broad is the way that leads to destruction... [And what is the ultimate destruction? *The Lake of Fire, that's the ultimate destruction!*] ...and many [the majority.] are those who enter through it."

Do you think that all of these churches with all of their billions of members, counting the Catholics and orthodox and Protestant, that they are on the straight and the narrow? *No*, they're on the *broad* way and it's going to get even more broad. And they are going to accept all kinds of things in the name of ecumenism, which are nothing but pagan, heathen lies. They will be responsible for taking Christ in the image of other people, and pulling Him down to being a 'good man.' ***Christ was the very God in the flesh, the Son of God the Father!*** Not an ordinary man, not just a prophet, but:

- a Savior
- a King
- a Redeemer

That's why he gives these warnings, because people go out and they want to set up their 'religion' and they want to be Holy and they want to be sanctimonious. They want to have people and they want to have power and they want to have money and numbers and buildings and land and control. *That's all of this world*, that's not of God. That's the *broad* way.

Verse 14: "For narrow is the gate and difficult is the way that leads to life, and **few** are those who find it.... [Have you found it? Are you looking for it? It's here in the Bible, but you've got to rightly divide the Word of God. You've got to believe it, and you've got to follow it. No question about it!] ...But **beware of false prophets**... [You want an interesting study, get out your concordance and look up *false prophets*. How many times did Jesus said, 'Beware of false prophets. Let no man deceive you. Let no one steal your crown.'] ... who come to you in sheep's clothing..." (vs 14-15).

- they try and appear Christian
- they name themselves Christian
- they call themselves Christians

—but Christian means follower of Christ. Are they following Christ? *No, they're following their way*. They're following their own ideas. They are making their own traditions. They are using their own interpretations and they are believing satanic lies and have no Truth in them.

(go to the next track)

He says, 15: "But beware of false prophets who come to you in sheep's clothing, for within *they* are ravening wolves." This is what is produced by ravening wolves: they hate the Law of God—they despise it; they won't obey it—and yet they claim the name of Jesus Christ. You can't have it both ways. You can't live in a state of sin and be accepted as righteous. An impossibility!

"You shall know them by their fruits. They do not gather grapes from thorns, or figs from thistles, do they? In the same way, every good tree produces good fruit, but a corrupt tree produces evil fruit.... [This is evil fruit, no question about it.] ...Every tree *that* is not producing good fruit is cut down and is cast into the fire. Therefore, you shall assuredly know them by their fruits.... [Jesus made it clear. He's talking about the false prophets; let's see how He describes them. This is very profound to grasp.] ...Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,' shall enter into the kingdom of heaven... [We just read back here in Matt. 5 how you're going to enter into the Kingdom of Heaven, by doing and practicing the commandments of God.] ...but the one who is doing the will of My Father, Who *is* in heaven" (vs 16-21).

- What is the will of the Father?
- Is it the will of the Father to do away with His laws and commandments?
- Did He not create them?
- Did He not create the Sabbath?

Yes, He did He created it for a special time so we can fellowship with God the Father and Jesus Christ on the Sabbath Day:

- a day wherein we don't work
- a day in where we study the Word of God
- a day wherein we assemble together as brethren
- we come together and let the Spirit of God bring us
 - ✓ His love
 - ✓ His Truth
 - ✓ His understanding right from the Word of God.

If you're not doing the will of God, you're not going to enter into the Kingdom of Heaven—which, by the way, is coming to the earth when Christ returns.

“...but the one who is doing the will of My Father, Who *is* in heaven.... [The Greek for ‘doing’ there is ‘poieo,’ in the present tense, meaning *the one who is doing or practicing* the will of My Father Who is in heaven.] ...Many will say to Me in that day... [What day is that? *That’s the judgment day* we read of back there in Deut. 18.] ...Many will say to Me in that day, ‘Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy through Your name?’” (vs 21-22). This means bringing forth prophecies, but also it means speaking in Your name. Are not these men using these things, using the name of Christ?

“...And *did we not* cast out demons [devils] through Your name? And *did we not* perform many works of power through Your name?” And then I will confess to them, **“I never knew you. Depart from Me, you who work [practice] lawlessness”** (vs 22-23). It says here (KJV) ‘you who work iniquity,’ The Greek word there is ‘anomia,’ which means *lawlessness*. The meaning of lawlessness is this: ***You reject the laws of God, and you embrace your own laws instead!*** That in 2-Thess. 2 is called the ‘mystery of lawlessness,’ which religiously is going to encompass all the religions of this world before Jesus Christ returns. It is a mystery because it looks so good and retains some of the laws of God.

Is it the will of God that you practice part of the laws? Part of the commandments? *or* Is it the will of God that you practice all of His laws and all of His commandments? If you don't think it's His will that you do all, then you better read James 2 again. If you don't believe that we should do all, then what you are doing, you say that God did it in vain. Now where are they going? *They're going to the Lake of Fire!* “Depart from Me, you who work lawlessness” (v 23).

Now let's come back here to the Epistle of 1-John, and let's see something very profound, very important, a very basic Scripture. Then we will come to understand even more concerning sin and concerning righteousness and concerning the things of justification. We're going to go through all of it.

We're going to do it step-by-step, going through the Word of God, explaining it, understanding it, believing, realizing what God has said what we need to do.

1-John 3:4 is a very basic Scripture, which you need to memorize. And always understand this: **“Everyone who practices sin is also practicing lawlessness, for sin is lawlessness.”** This is New Testament doctrine—isn't it? John wrote it, didn't he? *Yes, he did!* In the Greek it reads, ‘for sin is lawlessness,’ or ‘anomia.’ You reject the laws and commandments of God.

1-John 2:3—let's read something very important here: “And by this *standard* we know that we know Him: if we keep His commandments.” Don't let anyone trick you into saying, ‘Well, these are just the commandments of Jesus.’ Did Jesus ever change the Sabbath command to Sunday? **No!** Did any of the commands of Jesus Christ conflict with any of the commands that we could say came from God the Father? **No!** *Jesus came to do the will of the Father!* So if you know Christ, you keep His commandments.

Verse 4: “The one who says, ‘I know Him’ and does not keep His commandments... [And this is ‘poieo’ again, is not practicing His commandments.] ...is a liar, and the Truth is not in him.” What does that make Russell Tardo? *John said he's a liar!* Very clear!

Let's come back over here to 1-John 3 and let's understand this very clearly. We're dealing with some profound things here. 1-John 3:5: “And you know that He [Christ] appeared in order that He might take away our sins... [What is sin? *Transgression of the Law!* What did Jesus tell the man in John 5? ‘*Go and sin no more!*’] ...and in Him is no sin.”

Since in Christ is no sin, He did not transgress the Law. Therefore, if He had abolished the Sabbath as claimed by this man and other men, He would have sinned grossly, and He could not be our Savior. That's how important that what we're talking about really is.

“Everyone who dwells in Him does not *practice* sin... [What we're talking about is practicing sin or practicing righteousness.] ...anyone who *practices* sin has not seen Him, nor has known Him.” There were those men going around at that time and saying, ‘I've seen the Lord, I was one of the 4,000. I was one of the 5,000. I heard Him speak.’ And yet he's practicing sin.

One thing we need to understand, there were a lot of Jewish Gnostic sects which believed in sun-worship and Sunday-keeping. They were coming around saying to the brethren who were keeping the

laws and commandments of God, ‘You don’t have to keep them. You don’t have to keep the Sabbath. You don’t have to do any of those things.’ He’s fighting that right here by saying:

“...anyone who practices sin...” (v 6). That is living in sin. If you’re breaking the Sabbath and living in adultery, or if you’re stealing, or if you’re lying, or if you have idols, or you bow down to them or you have other gods, *you are living in sin*.

“...has not seen Him, nor has known Him. Little children, do not allow anyone to deceive you; the one who practices righteousness is righteous, even as He is righteous. The one who practices sin is of the devil...” (vs 6-8). What is sin? ‘*Sin is the transgression of the Law.*’ Who was the first lawless one? *Satan the devil!* If you are against the laws and commandments of God, you are on the devil’s side. It says so right here. You are a child of the devil.

“...because the devil has been sinning from the beginning....” (v 8). Do you grasp that? If you are breaking the Sabbath and if you are keeping Sunday, you have two sins to your credit already that you are living in. You can use the name of Jesus Christ ten million times over ten million times, and you’re still living in sin. You need to understand that.] ...For this purpose the Son of God appeared that He might destroy [annul] the works of the devil” (vs 6-8).

Now let’s understand something concerning sin, and let’s understand something concerning law, Romans 2:11: “Because there is no respect of persons with God.” Do you understand that? *That means no man is above the laws and commandments of God.* God is not going to let one live in sin and condemn another who lives in sin. God is not going to let some keep Sunday, and let some keep Sabbath, and let some keep Friday, or any other day of the week that He has not commanded. *God is no respecter of persons.*

Verse 12: “For as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law... [Without the knowledge of the laws of God. They’re still going to die, because they are living in sin; the wages of sin is death.] ...and as many as have sinned within *the Law*... [knowing the laws of God.] ...shall be judged by *the Law*.... [‘Sin is the transgression of the Law.’ Sin is lawlessness and the Law will judge you.] ...(Because the hearers of the Law *are* not just before God, but the doers of the Law shall be justified)” (vs 12-13). Why don’t the Protestant ministers read that? *Because it wipes away their whole case of cheap grace and lawlessness!* That’s why they don’t read it. They don’t dare read it and yet they claim that the Apostle Paul has given them liberty to do these things. Those are *satanic lies!*

Verse 25 is going to talk about the Jews and the Gentiles. Let’s understand something concerning New Testament doctrine and law, v 25: “For on the one hand, circumcision profits if you are observing the Law... [‘God is no respecter of persons.’ If the Jews have all their laws of Judaism, which cancel the laws of God, they are breakers of the Law.] ...on the other hand, if you are a transgressor of *the Law*, your circumcision has become uncircumcision. Therefore, if the uncircumcised is keeping the requirements of the Law... [That is in Spirit and in Truth.] ...shall not his uncircumcision be reckoned for circumcision?” (vs 25-26). {See sermon series, *Circumcision Wars.*} We have a greater circumcision today and that is the *circumcision of the heart and the mind* through the baptism of Christ.

Verse 27: “And shall not the uncircumcised, who by nature **is fulfilling the Law** judge you, who, with the letter and circumcision, *are* a transgressor *the Law*? For he is not a Jew who *is one* outwardly, neither *is* that circumcision which *is* external in the flesh; rather, he *is* a Jew who *is one* inwardly, and circumcision *is* of the heart, in *the spirit* and not in *the letter*; whose praise *is* not from men from God” (vs 27-29).

Let’s understand something very profound concerning sin. Let’s look at some of these things, and we’ll talk a little bit about grace. I don’t know if you’ve ever gone to any Protestant revivals; the minister gets up there and says, ‘Oh, open your heart and give your heart to the Lord and He’ll forgive your sins. The wages of sin is death and the gift of God is eternal life.’ Then turn right around and say that God has done away with the Law. Well, they’re stuck with a profound problem and here it is.

Romans 4:15 ^[transcriber’s correction]: “For the Law works out wrath... [if you transgress it] ...because **where no law is, there is no transgression.**” Do you understand that? If truly the laws of God were done away as claimed here, where he says in fact, the whole of the Law of Moses has been rendered inoperative, there would be no sin, because there would be no law; there would be no commandments. God could not hold you accountable for sin. But there is law and there is sin, and the Law stands as Christ said, ‘As long as the heaven and earth are here.’

Romans 3:9: “What then? Are we... [That is those Jews who first had Christ preached to them as Paul says.] ...of ourselves better?... [that is the Gentiles] ...Not at all! For we have already charged both Jews and Gentiles—ALL—with being under sin.” *All!* The laws and commandments of God are going to judge *all*, because *all* have sinned.

Verse 23: “For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God.” We’ll talk about justification a little later when we get to it, but I want to cover this thing concerning law.

Verse 31: “Are we then, abolishing law through faith? MAY IT NEVER BE! Rather, we are establishing law.” How do you establish the Law? Because with faith and belief and baptism and the receiving of the Holy Spirit, and entering into the New Covenant, there is a different way that the Law is. It’s not written on the tablets of stone, but in your heart.

Let’s go to Hebrews 10. Here’s how law is established by giving you the desire to do it, by when you hear the laws and commandments of God you say, ‘Oh, Lord, help me to do them’—rather than—‘Well, why did God give that law? Why, that takes away all my fun. I can’t go lusting and whoring around, and gambling and drinking and carousing and swearing and cursing, and stealing and robbing and murdering and committing idolatry, and having other religions.’ No, there’s repentance. Where there’s repentance and where there is baptism and receiving of the Holy Spirit of God, then you enter into the covenant.

Hebrews 10:16: “‘This is the covenant that I will establish with them after those days,’ says the Lord: ‘I will give My laws into their hearts, and I will inscribe them in their minds; and their sins and lawlessness... [sins and iniquities, which are transgressions of the Law. These are sins and lawlessness.] ...I will not remember ever again’” (vs 16-17). That’s how law is established.

- you believe God
- you believe what He says
- you believe Christ

Romans 6:1—we’ll see what I just said is born out right here. “What then shall we say?.... [Concerning the grace of God that He will forgive your sins, concerning the grace of God that He would call you and open your mind and grant you the Holy Spirit and grant you repentance.] ...Shall we continue sin, so that grace may abound? MAY IT NEVER BE!.... [the Greek means *don’t ever let this thought come into your mind*] ...We who died to sin, how shall we live any longer therein?.... [‘Sin is the transgression of the Law’—correct? You died to lawbreaking. When you are baptized, you die to lawbreaking that you may live to law-keeping in Christ, in the Spirit and in Truth.] ...Or are you ignorant that we, as many as were baptized into Christ Jesus, were baptized into His death?” (vs 1-3).

See sermon: *The True Meaning of Baptism*. It is a profound thing. It is not just a simple little dunking or sprinkling. You enter into a *death*

covenant with God. That’s why these things are so profound.

Verse 4: “Therefore, we were buried with Him through the baptism into the death; so that, just as Christ was raised from *the* dead by the glory of the Father, in the same way, we also should walk in newness of life.” And newness of life is:

- walking in the Spirit
- walking in the Truth
- keeping the commandments of God
- walking in the light of Christ

Here’s a promise, v 5: “For if we have been conjoined together in the likeness of His death, so also shall we be *in the likeness* of His resurrection. Knowing this, that our old was co-crucified with *Him* in order that the body of sin might be destroyed...” (vs 5-6).

And what they want to do here, the Protestant doctrine is, that they want to destroy the body of Truth and the commandments of God, not sin. They want to live in sin and perpetuate sin. You need to think on that.

“...so that we might no longer be enslaved to sin... [Let’s translate that into very clear terminology: *That henceforth we should not serve lawbreaking*. Do you grasp that?] ...Because the one who has died to sin has been justified from sin” (vs 5-7). You are not freed from the Law. You are freed or justified from sin—there is a vast difference.

Let’s look at the whole thing here, John 5:1: “After these things *there* was a Feast of the Jews, and Jesus went up to Jerusalem. And there is in Jerusalem at the sheep gate a pool, called Bethesda in Hebrew, which has five porches. And in these *porches* were lying a great multitude of those who were sick, blind, lame *and* withered. They were waiting for the stirring of the water. For from time to time, an angel descended into the pool and agitated the water; and the first one to enter after the agitation of the water was made well from whatever disease he had. Now, a certain man was there who had been *suffering with* an infirmity for thirty-eight years. Jesus saw him lying *there*, and, knowing that he had been there a long time, said to him, ‘Do you desire to be made whole?’ And the infirm *man* answered Him, ‘Sir, I do not have anyone to put me in the pool after the water has been agitated. But while I am going, another *one* steps down before me.’ Jesus said to him, ‘Arise, take up your bedroll and walk’” (vs 1-8).

Now what kind of bed was it that he had? Just a little roll out, what we might call a sleeping bag, probably not weighing any more than 5-10 pounds at the most. But the Jews had a law that if you lifted anything greater than the size of an olive,

you were carrying a burden on the Sabbath. We will see *that that is the Law* which Jesus loosed, not the Sabbath law.

Verse 9: “And immediately the man was made whole; and he took up his bedroll and walked. Now that day was a Sabbath. For this reason, the Jews said to the man who had been healed, ‘It is the Sabbath Day. It is not lawful for you to take up your bedroll’” (vs 9-10). By whose law? Can you find it in the Old Testament? ‘Thou shalt not on the Sabbath Day carry your bedroll?’ Find it if you can, it isn’t there. Therefore, since it’s not a law, it is lawful for him to carry it and Jesus would never command anyone to sin—would He? If He did, Christ then would be the minister of sin—wouldn’t He? *Yes!* And if He’s the minister of sin, then He’s not a Savior. But who is the minister of sin? *Those who do away with the commandments of God, teach lies, those who misinterpret what was going on!*

And I’ll tell you right here once again, if you are not familiar with the book, *Code of Jewish Law*, which we covered in Refuting Sunday-Keeping #5, then you don’t have a clue as to what Judaism is. What you might do if you are a Protestant and you go to church on Sunday, you might go to your Protestant minister and ask him, ‘Have you ever heard of the book, *Code of Jewish Law*? Do you know what it is? Do you know of the thousands of laws that are in there?’ That, my friend, is Judaism!

Commandment-keeping is not Judaism. These Jews were preaching Judaism. That’s why they hated Jesus, because they would lose power. Not only did they lose power, they lost their nation, they lost their city, they lost their temple, and were scattered into the four winds of the world, scattered across the face of the earth for a hissing, a curse, *because they rejected Jesus Christ!* That is not anti-Semitic; that is a fact of history. The Jews will say, ‘That’s anti-Semitism.’ *No, it’s not!* It’s a fact of history, that’s what it is.

Verse 11: “He answered them, ‘The one Who made me whole said to me, “Take up your bedroll and walk.”’.... [Would Jesus command someone to sin? *No!* Would He command someone to break the Sabbath? *No!*] ...Then they asked him, ‘Who is the one Who said to you, “Take up your bedroll and walk?”’ But the man who had been healed did not know Who it was, for Jesus had moved away, *and* a crowd was in the place. After these things, Jesus found him in the temple and said to him, ‘Behold, you have been made whole. Sin no more... [What is sin? ‘*Sin is the transgression of the Law.*’ *Sin is lawlessness!* Why was he sick? *Because he was living in a state of sin!*] (Jesus said): ...Sin no more, so that something worse does not happen to you’” (vs 11-14). In other words, sin is still

binding. If you sin, what’s going to happen to you is going to be worse than your first estate.

Verse 15: “The man went away and told the Jews that it was Jesus Who had made him whole. And for this cause, the Jews persecuted Jesus and sought to kill Him... [This is the verse that they took right out of the middle of the context there, not even explaining what was going on.] ...because He had done these things on a Sabbath” (vs 15-16). Didn’t Jesus say, ‘Is it not lawful to do good on the Sabbath Day?’ Didn’t He say in another place, ‘Don’t you even take your animals out and water them on the Sabbath day?’ And in that case where there was a man whose arm was all withered, He said, ‘Should not this man be healed on the Sabbath Day?’ And all the people rejoiced and the Pharisees and scribes were hateful and angry. That same hatred and bitterness is in Judaism to this day.

Verse 17: “But Jesus answered them, ‘My Father is working until now, and I work.’”

- What kind of work was being done on the Sabbath?
- Was Jesus laboring?
- Was He fishing?
- Where was He? *He was at the temple!*
- What was He doing? *He was teaching!*
- What kind of work is that? *That’s a spiritual work!*

The Father does *spiritual* work on the Sabbath to build the character that Christ can be created in you, that you are His workmanship. *That’s what He’s doing.* There is the work of healing. There is the work of releasing from sin. That’s what the Sabbath is all about. Not about whether you carry a burden bigger than an olive.

Verse 18: “So then, on account of this saying, the Jews sought all the more to kill Him, not only because He had **loosed** the Sabbath...”—‘broken’ (*KJV*) is an unfortunate translation. He didn’t annul it, He didn’t destroy it, He didn’t abrogate it, because He said, ‘Think not that I’ve come to destroy the Law.’ And Jesus did not contradict Himself, because if He contradicted Himself then He would have lied. And if He would have lied, then He cannot be our Savior, because He would have sinned. Do you understand that? So therefore, He **loosed** the Sabbath from this commandment of Judaism about not carrying a burden on the Sabbath. All he was doing was carrying his bedroll, no more than a sleeping bag. *He didn’t break the Sabbath, He loosed the Sabbath.*

“...but also *because* He had called God His own Father, making Himself equal with God” (v 18). That’s why it’s important when you’re studying the Bible, you read not just a single verse, you read

the verses before and the verses after. You take it in context. You have to ask:

- What does it say?
- What does it not say?
- Who is it said to?
- Who said it?

Get all the other Scriptures concerning it, put it together properly. Jesus said right here, ‘Go sin no more. Take up your bedroll and walk.’ That didn’t break the Sabbath. That loosed the Sabbath *from that stringent law which men connived to put on it*, so they could have their religion.

Verse 19: “Therefore, Jesus answered and said to them, ‘Truly, truly I say to you, to Son has no power to do anything of Himself, but only what He sees the Father do.... [Clear indication right there, absolute proof not an indication, but *proof* that Jesus did not abrogate the Sabbath, because the Father would not abrogate the Sabbath, because it was the will of the Father that the Sabbath commandment be given.] ...has no power to do anything of Himself... [Christ could not unilaterally do it.] ...but only what He sees the Father do. For whatever He does, these things the Son also does in the same manner.’”

Verse 30: “I have no power to do anything of Myself...” In telling the man here to take up his bedroll and walk that was the will of God the Father in heaven above. Did it break the Sabbath? *No!* Did it abrogate the Sabbath? *No!* Did it make all the laws of Moses inoperative? ‘I speak as if I’m insane!’ *No, it did not!* Let me read this again from *Sunday Facts & Sabbath Fiction*:

Thus we see that in John 5:18, Jesus is accused not merely of breaking the Sabbath, but of doing away with it.

Nonsense! If He would have done away with it, do you think that the Jews would have been after Him even more? Do you not think that they would have come on Him right then and killed Him? And had He done it, God would have allowed them to, because ‘the wages of sin is death.’ Jesus would have to have died for that sin of abrogating the Sabbath.

Verse 30: “I have no power to do anything of Myself; but as I hear, I judge; and My judgment is just because I do not seek My own will but the will of the Father, Who sent Me.” Profound! You need to understand: ***the will of God is to keep the Sabbath.*** That’s why it’s Holy, because God puts His presence in it. God does not put His presence in Sunday, a day that *man* has declared, a day in which *man* has judged God, the Lawgiver, and said, ‘God, Your law is not worthy of me. Your law has been abrogated by Christ.’ *That is a lie!*

Verse 36: “But I have a greater witness than John’s; for the works that the Father gave Me to complete, the *very* works that I am doing, themselves bear witness of Me, that the Father has sent Me.... [God is not lawless. The Father is not lawless, He would not abrogate those.] ...And the Father Himself, Who sent Me, has borne witness of Me. You have neither heard His voice nor seen His form at any time. And **you do not have His Word dwelling in you...** [They didn’t have the Word of God in them. All they had were their own laws. They had Judaism, they didn’t have the Scriptures of God.] ...**you do not have His Word dwelling in you**, for you do not believe Him Whom He has sent. You search the Scriptures, for in them you think that you have eternal life; and they are the ones that testify of Me.... [We read that in Deut. 18.] ...But you are unwilling to come to Me, that you may have life. I do not receive glory from men; but I have known you, that you do not have the love of God in yourselves” (vs 37-42).

If they do not have the love of God in them, what does John say about that? I know we’ve covered this before, but sometimes it’s good to come back and look at it again from a different perspective after we’ve covered other things.

1-John 5:2: “By this *standard* we know that we love the children of God: when we love God and keep His commandments. For **this is the love of God: that we keep His commandments...** [Again, the Greek there is ‘poieo,’ practice His commandments.] ...and His commandments are not burdensome” (vs 2-3).

Every Protestant minister needs to repent of proclaiming that the Sabbath is a burden. They need to repent of the fact, and every Sunday-keeper needs to repent of the fact, that they don’t know anything about Judaism, nor what Judaism did to the Law of God, nor understand that that was the fight and the battle going on there, not whether the laws of God were abrogated or not. That’s nonsense!

If they say it’s abrogated, then you have to prove that the heaven and earth does not exist, that it has passed away. *It hasn’t passed away.* This is the love of God, and those Pharisees did not have the love of God. They buried the commandments of God and His Truth under thousands and thousands and thousands of man-made laws and traditions to where they couldn’t even have the common sense of being joyful that a man was healed of a 38-year-old infirmity. Amazing!

“For this is the love of God: that we keep His commandments, and His commandments are not burdensome” (v 8).

Scriptures from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order a Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter

Scriptural References:

- 1) 1-Corinthians 7:27
- 2) Psalm 111:7-10
- 3) Matthew 5:17
- 4) Deuteronomy 18:15-20
- 5) Matthew 5:17-22, 27-28
- 6) James 4:12
- 7) James 2:10-11
- 8) James 4:11-12
- 9) Matthew 7:13-23
- 10) 1-John 3:4
- 11) 1-John 2:3-4
- 12) 1-John 3:5-8
- 13) Romans 2:11-13, 25-29
- 14) Romans 4:15
- 15) Romans 3:9, 23, 31
- 16) Hebrews 10:16-17
- 17) Romans 6:1-7
- 18) John 5:1-19, 30, 36-42
- 19) 1-John 5:2-3

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- John 5
- John 14:6
- Hebrews 4:9
- 2-Thessalonians 2

Also referenced:

Sermons:

- *That Prophet*
- *The True Meaning of Baptism*
- *Refuting Sunday-Keeping V*

Sermon Series:

- *Holy Sabbath*
- *Mystery of Lawlessness*
- *Galatians*
- *Circumcision Wars*

Books:

- *Sunday Facts & Sabbath Fiction* by Dr. Russell K. Tardo
- *Early Christianity and Hellenistic Judaism* by Peder Borgen
- *Code of Jewish Law* by Solomon Ganzfried & Hyman Goldin

Refuting Sunday-Keeping VIII Handling the Word of God Deceitfully

Fred R. Coulter

We're going to keep on going through *Refuting Sunday-Keeping* until we're done with all the 25 reasons that are given here in this book, *Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction*. What we're going to see today is something I think that's very profound and important in understanding how on earth can all of these things be so turned upside down and to make the Scriptures say the exact opposite of what they really mean. It reminds me of a debate that I heard between Alan Keyes and Alan Dershowitz. Alan Dershowitz kept saying, 'Well, I do this because it's right, not because God says so, or because someone else says so, but because it's right.' Then he was asked the question from someone in the audience, 'How do you know what is right?' And he said, 'Well, that's very hard to tell. However, we can more easily tell what is wrong.'

This is classic doublespeak and the long and the short of it is, if you do not have the Word of God to tell you what is right and what is wrong, you set your own standard. When you set your own standard, you sit in the seat of God. Then you make your own laws, which you profess are better than the laws of God. This is exactly what Protestantism has done with Sunday-keeping vs Sabbath-keeping.

Let's look at some Scriptures and see that Paul confronted these same things and we are warned about this. We are warned that we are not to get trapped in it. Let's first of all go to 2-Corinthians 2, and let's see even in Paul's day what they were doing with the Word of God. There were two things that they were doing.

I. Corrupting the Word of God

2-Corinthians 2:17: "For we are not like the many, who for *their own* profit are corrupting the Word of God..." Meaning to *make it say something that it does not say*, or even worse like they have done with these New Age Bible versions which we have today, to remove and take away words out of the Scripture to make it say what you want.

Several years ago I did a sermon the *Inclusive Version Bible*. The *Inclusive Version New Testament* is the ultimate translation, which is really not a translation, but a **corruption** of the New Testament, which those who are on the committee of the *New Revised Standard Version* want to do, which is this: *They want to make it neuter gender, meaning that God is not our Father—God is 'Mother/Father.'* That the Son of man is not the Son of God, but the 'Human One.' ***Now that's corrupting the Word of God!***

When Paul wrote this [2-Cor.], there were the Gnostics who were coming along with their gospels, and they were corrupting the Word of God by saying that they had a better word of God than the true Word of God. We're going to see that Protestantism is kind of a combination of both of them. We're also going to see that a lot of their reasoning is just like I brought out the same kind of reasoning that Alan Dershowitz said in trying to define right and wrong.

Here's the way that it should be: "...but we speak with sincerity, as from God, *and* before God, *and* in Christ" (v 17). In other words he wasn't doing it with a hidden agenda. He wasn't doing it with his own ideas. He wasn't preaching the things out of his own mind, which sounded good to a rebellious carnal mind. *No!*

- Paul was converted
- Paul was led of God's Spirit
- Paul was an apostle of Jesus Christ

He was pointing out what these different false apostles were doing in bringing these false doctrines, they were corrupting the Word of God.

II. Handling the Word of God Deceitfully

Now let's look at the second thing that they do with it. Now for anyone who does any preaching or anyone who claims to represent God, they have an extra burden placed upon them and they have an extra responsibility before God, which is this:

2-Corinthians 4:1: "Therefore, having this ministry, according as we have received mercy, we are not fainthearted. For we have personally renounced the hidden things of dishonest gain, not walking in *cunning* craftiness... [That is having an agenda different from what the Word of God is.] ...nor handling the Word of God deceitfully..." (vs 1-2).

Today we're going to see how some people really handle the Word of God *deceitfully* and with the *sleight of hand*. Let's go to Ephesians, the fourth chapter, where Paul talks about that and where there are confusing doctrines that come along because of:

1. *corrupting* the Word of God
2. *deceitfully* using the Word of God
3. *sleight of hand* for the very purpose of establishing false doctrine in place of true doctrine

Ephesians 4:14: "So that we no longer be children, tossed and carried about with every wind of

doctrine...” The wind comes and the wind goes, as Solomon said, turns to the north and turns to the south. Jesus told Nicodemus that the Spirit is much like wind. It comes and it goes, but you don’t know from where it comes or where it goes. So many of these doctrines are just like that. It’s like a wind comes whistling in. People say, ‘Oh, that’s interesting.’

When those come in and you hear of them, first of all you’re to search the Scriptures to see whether they’re so or not, and next you’re to prove all things, ‘rightly dividing the Word of God’ and see if it stacks up ‘line upon line, and precept upon precept,’ and it fills the whole picture as we find in the Bible. Most of these doctrines—which are illegal attempts, lying attempts, corrupt attempts, sleight-of-hand attempts to establish Sunday as the day of worship instead of the Sabbath—fall into those categories. And it’s just like a wind and it appeals not to the Truth of God, but it appeals to the carnal mind. We’ll see what the carnal mind is and why it is so appealing to people.

“...every wind of doctrine by the sleight of men in *cunning* craftiness... [we’re going to see some cunning craftiness here] ...with a view to the systematizing of the error...” (v 14)—‘they lie in wait to deceive’ (KJV) Let me tell you something, this book by Russell Tardo is a “...**systematizing of the error**”

Now let’s look and see what appeals to the carnal mind. Let’s look at a couple basic Scriptures, which we should have memorized when we were first converted; or if you’re not yet converted, you should memorize right now so that when you are converted you won’t forget it.

Romans 8:6: “For to be carnally minded *is* death... [carnally minded means just *the human mind with its own ability and rationale*. The way that it goes is death. What does the Bible say death is the result of? ‘*The wages of sin is death!*’ So, the carnal mind will be one to which sin will be justified, because it leads to death. We’re going to see very clearly how this happens.] ...but to be spiritually minded *is* life and peace, because the carnal mind *is* enmity against God... [What does enmity mean? It means *hatred!* It means *an enemy!* As a matter of fact, enmity is spelled very similar to enemy—isn’t it? *Yes, it is!*] ...for it is not subject to the Law of God; neither indeed can it *be*.... [All of these things concerning Sunday-keeping are rejecting the laws of God. What I’m reading here is New Testament doctrine, which is very profound and important.] ...**But those who are in the flesh...** [carnal minded] ...**cannot please God**” (vs 6-8).

Let’s go to 1-John 3 and let’s see we are to do those things that please God; but the carnal mind

cannot do those things that please God. We’re going to see that Sunday-keeping is not pleasing to God, because it’s all carnal rationale. 1-John 3:22: “And whatever we may ask... [in prayer] ...we receive from Him because we keep His commandments and practice those things that are pleasing in His sight.” So therefore, if one has the Spirit of God and is spiritual-minded, then he will keep the commandments of God and he will do the things that please God. But the one who is carnal-minded cannot please God, because he’s not subject to the Law of God. What can we deduce out of this? Commandment-keeping is pleasing to God! To do it based upon the love of God and the love of Jesus Christ is pleasing. To let it become a very part of heart and mind and being is the whole goal and purpose that Christ has established for us.

Let’s come to 2-Peter 3 and let’s see why it is that these Scriptures which they use to justify Sunday-keeping, which are no more than misinterpreted Scriptures by

1. corrupting the Word of God
2. handling the Word of God deceitfully
3. being carnal minded

—to establish false doctrine. Here’s how it happens:

2-Peter 3:15: “And bear in mind that the longsuffering of our Lord *is* salvation, exactly as our beloved brother Paul, according to the wisdom given to him, has also written to you; as *he has* also in all *his* epistles, speaking in them concerning these things; in which are some things *that are* difficult to understand, which the ignorant...” (vs 15-16). That means they don’t know the Scriptures; they use them, but they don’t know them. There are a lot of people that use the Scriptures. There are a lot of ministers who use them. There are a lot of them who have memorized their favorite little pathways through the Scripture, but they don’t understand it and we’ll see why.

“...which are ignorant and unstable... [Meaning, they are not grounded in the Word of God. Being unstable, they’re subject to ‘every wind of doctrine’ and ‘tossed to and fro,’ just like the wind moves the water.] ...are twisting *and* *distorting*, as *they* also *twist and distort* the rest of the Scriptures... [referring to New and Old Testament Scriptures] ...to their own destruction” (v-16).

That’s what we’re going to see has happened here. Now let’s go back and let’s review John 5, because in the book [*Sunday Facts & Sabbath Fiction*], we’ll turn here and I’ll read the quote concerning what he says happened in John 5. We will see that they believe in a form of lawlessness that is absolutely incredible.

John 5:18: “So then, on account of this saying, the Jews sought all the more to kill Him, not

only because He had loosed the Sabbath, but also because He had called God His own Father, making Himself equal with God.” In whose eyes had He broken the Sabbath? It doesn’t say abolished. The Greek there is ‘luo,’ which means *loosed*. What do you use for your authority? Do you use the Word of God to go back and put it together properly? *You should!*

Jesus said in Matthew 5:17: “Do not think that I have come to abolish [‘luo’] the Law or the Prophets...” So here (John 5:18) they accused Him of doing it, but He said, **‘Don’t think that I did.’**

Now let’s see on whose authority he [Tardo] relies on. (*Sunday Facts & Sabbath Fiction*):

Numerous Greek scholars... because he said the expression ‘Jesus had broken the Sabbath’ actually declares that Jesus had done nothing less than to cancel the Sabbath commandment.

You need to think about those words. Those are stout words against God. Remember what we’ve covered in Job 40 about Job where God says to Job, ‘Will you disannul My judgment that you may be righteous?’ ‘Will you condemn Me,’ says the Lord? That’s what he’s saying here (John 5). Let’s look at it carefully. *Jesus did not say*, ‘I abolish the Sabbath.’ He was accused of breaking the Sabbath and in this case we will see it means *‘loosing’ a law of Judaism*, as we pointed out very clearly. But notice how they take it:

Jesus had done nothing less than cancel the Sabbath commandment.

Is that ‘enmity against’ God’s Law? Is that not ‘subject to the Law of God and neither indeed can be’? *Absolutely! Yes!* Then Tardo quotes several Protestant authorities. There are others who do not agree with him, but nevertheless, he takes the ones that agree with him:

M.R. Vincent translates ‘had broken’ literally was ‘loosing’—in the imperfect tense—not broke the Sabbath in any particular case, but was annulling the Law and duty of Sabbath observance.

Nothing could be further from the truth. They are

1. corrupting the Word of God
2. deceitfully handling it
3. it’s the sleight of men trying to systematize the error

This is exactly what John meant. The word translated ‘was loosing’ has profound legal significance in the meaning of its context dealing with laws and judicial decisions. The same word is used

in Matthew 16:19 about loosing. ‘Whatsoever you bind on earth shall be bound in heaven. Whatsoever you shall loose on earth shall be loosed in heaven.’

But that has to show that it has to be legal. God is never going to be bound to sin. Christ is not the minister of sin.

- God is righteous
- God is Holy
- God is perfect
- God is true

He’s not the minister of sin, so these explanations are just the figment of the imaginations of men. Now he quotes another one, W. E. Vine, who translates it:

“To loosen, especially by way of deliverance sometimes has the meaning of breaking destructively, of breaking commandments, not only infringing them, but loosing the force of them, rendering them not binding.”

Let’s understand something very important here. When Jesus healed the man and told him to take up his bedroll and walk, that was not a burden on the Sabbath. But He *loosed that law of Judaism*—and let’s understand again, re-emphasize: ***The Jewish code of law is not the Scriptures of God.*** This was a Jewish law where he couldn’t carry his bedroll. That’s what He loosed. He didn’t say, ‘I proclaim that you have heard it said in olden times, You shall remember the Sabbath to keep it Holy, but now I say to you, You remember the first day of the week, because that’s the day on which I am going to be resurrected upon.’ Can you find that in the Scriptures anywhere? **NO!** And unless you find it that way, all of the twisting and turning and misrepresenting and misinterpreting the Scriptures here and actually plain lying about it, *will not make Sunday acceptable to God.*

Bullinger [*Bullinger Bible*] has done some things which are good and right. He’s done some things which are not. He defines it:

“To loosen, unbind, unfasten.” Arnt and Ginrich translates it: loose, untie, set free, release, to be set free from bond, break up, destroy, bring to an end, abolish, do away with—of commandments, laws. Statements it means: repel, annul, abolish—abolish the Sabbath.

- On whose authority did he establish that that’s what this Scripture meant?
- On the authority of the Word of God, or on the authority of men? *On the authority of men!*

- Does a man have the right to tell God what to do?
- Does a man have the right to tell God that since he doesn't like this Sabbath commandment, he's going to change it?
- Does man have the right to tell God, that if he does it God must honor it?
- *Of course not!*

What this means here is, it's very simple. You read it for what it is. Jesus healed him, told him to take up his bedroll and walk. The Jews wanting to get something on Him, wanting to say that He was not from God, wanting to refute that He was the Son of God, to reject Him as One Who was bringing the Truth of God, had to find something to accuse Him of. They said He broke the Sabbath.

Let's go to John, the ninth chapter, and let's where else He did this, where he healed man that was born blind. In this case, so that he would see, Jesus took some dirt and spit it in and made a little mud plaster and put it on his eyes. Let's pick it up here when they were questioning the man about how he was able to see!

John 9:24: "Therefore, they [the Pharisees.] called a second time *for* the man who had been born blind, and said to him, 'Give glory to God. We know that this man is a sinner.'" Isn't that true? Isn't that the way that it always happens? When there's someone that is not liked, because they are doing the Truth and what is right, you accuse them of the exact opposite of what they really are. Jesus never sinned, so they said He's a sinner.

Verse 25: "Then he answered and said, 'Whether He is a sinner, I do not know. One *thing* I do know, that I was blind, and now I see.' And they said to him again, 'What did He do to you? How did He open your eyes?' He answered them, 'I have already told you, and you did not listen. Why do you want to hear it again? Do you desire to become His disciples, too?' Then they railed at him and said, 'You are His disciple, but we are Moses' disciples. We know that God spoke to Moses. As for this man, we do not know where He has come from.' The man answered and said to them, 'This is truly an amazing thing, that you do not know where He has come from, yet He opened my eyes. Now we know that God does not hear sinners. But if anyone is God-fearing and is doing His will, He hears him. From the beginning of the world it has never been heard that anyone has opened *the* eyes of *one* who was born blind. **If this man were not from God, He could do nothing**'" (vs 25-33).

This is true to the prophecy of Isaiah that 'out of the mouths of babes' comes the Truth. Verse 34: "They answered and said to him... [Notice the

attitude of demonizing now this man.] ...'You were born wholly in sin, and you are teaching us?' And they cast him out."

Let's come back here to John 5 and understand we cannot rely upon a false accusation of the Jews to establish a new doctrinal Truth that the Sabbath has been abolished. That ought to be abundantly clear. This leads into the next thing. The next thing, then, really shows you the heart and core and the meaning and the whole spiritual deception behind their way of thinking, which we will see is *lawlessness*—not Truth—*lawlessness*. Now he concludes:

Thus we see that in John 5:18 Jesus is accused not merely of breaking the Sabbath, but of doing away with it.

But Jesus is only *accused* of it. Are you going to base doctrine on an accusation from your enemy? You know what the word is today—spare me! *No way!*

While it is possible to cite other such scholarly renditions, it would only become redundant.

Why not cite some in opposition to? You might try that.

The point is clearly made... [dogmatic statement]: ...Jesus annulled, abolished, did away with the Sabbath forever.

What does *forever* mean? ***Forever!*** Yet the prophecy in Isa, 66:23 says that during the Millennium when Christ returns, that from Sabbath to Sabbath, and new moon to new moon, and year to year, 'all flesh shall come before the Lord to worship Him.'

- Will there be Sabbath-keeping in the Kingdom of God? in the Millennium? *Of course!*
- Who is going to King over the earth? *Jesus Christ!*
- Who's going to enforce Sabbath-keeping? *Jesus Christ and the saints of God!*

There won't be much problem enforcing it, because that will be the Law of the world; totally different than what we have today. Remember where we started. Jesus said He was Lord of the Sabbath Day all during His ministry, and still is today as we've seen from the Scriptures. Will He still be Lord of the Sabbath in the Millennium when He's here on the earth and teaching human beings to love God and keep God's commandments? *Of course!*

...did away with the Sabbath forever.

God has a special judgment coming for those people who treat the Word of God like this. Anyone who

would make these claims and boast in it and remain recalcitrant, and hardhearted, and carnal-minded in it, lying in it, deceptive in it, saying they're representing God, they better get a little fear of God.

Isaiah 5:20: "Woe to those who call evil good... [That's what they're doing, they're saying, 'Sunday-keeping is good.'] ...and good evil... [That's what they are doing, because Sabbath-keeping is good, which they call *evil*.] ...who put darkness for light and light for darkness; who put bitter for sweet and sweet for bitter! Woe unto *them that are* wise in their own eyes... [What we're reading here is a dissertation of wisdom in one's own eyes.] ...and prudent in their own sight! Woe unto *them that are* mighty to drink wine, and men of strength to mingle strong drink; who justify the wicked for a bribe, and take away the righteousness of the righteous from him! Therefore, as the fire devours the stubble, and the flame burns up the chaff... [Have you ever seen stubble devoured by a flame? It just explodes and it's no longer in existence; same way with chaff.] ...their root shall be like rottenness, and their blossoms shall go up like dust because they have cast away the Law of the LORD of hosts, and despised the Word of the Holy One of Israel" (vs 20-24). Have they done that? *No question about it!*

Let's see how far they carry this. Let's see the real basic, hard-rock, Protestant, lawless philosophy; which is the foundation of Sunday-keeping, and Christmas and Easter, which then also is the same foundation that the Catholics have, except they're just a little more honest about it. They say, 'We keep Sunday because 'the church' has proclaimed it so.' While at the same time we saw that they admit what? That throughout the whole Bible, if you're going to go by the Bible and Bible alone, you better keep the Sabbath Day. So at least the Catholics are honest, but the Protestants are not. And they have deceived themselves and lied to themselves, and given themselves over to the same doctrines so much that their hatred and lawlessness is almost unbounded.

In fact, the whole Law of Moses has been rendered inoperative...

What did we just read here in Isa. 5:24? 'Woe to *them*.' The New Testament message is clear for all who have 'ears to hear.'

The whole Law of Moses has been rendered inoperative by the death of the Lord Jesus. The law in its entirety no longer has any immediate and forensic authority or jurisdiction whatsoever over anyone. This is evident in three ways.

We'll look at those in just a little bit here, but let's understand something right now—let's go to

Matthew 7. We've been to this Scripture several times in this series, but let's again go to it so we will see now a perfect example of lawlessness using the name of Jesus, thinking that they are doing good. That's exactly what he thinks right here. You probably have this all memorized.

Matthew 7:21: "'Not everyone who says to Me, 'Lord, Lord,'... [or Jesus, Jesus] ...shall enter into the Kingdom of Heaven; but the one who is doing the will of My Father, Who *is* in heaven.'" Now what is the will of the Father? Is it the will of the Father that you live a lawless life and He still accept you into His kingdom? Is it the will of the Father that you totally live in sin and you are exonerated from anything because of another false doctrine, 'Once saved, always saved'? Martin Luther said, I'll just paraphrase it, but I've got a good quote that I put in *A Harmony of the Gospels*, which goes like this:

Since on this earth we cannot quit sin, therefore let the grace of Christ reign. If you sin, let the grace of Christ be even more. If you murder or commit adultery a thousand times a day, the grace of God is greater.

That's just out of one of the newly translated letters of Martin Luther. Now you know where Protestantism gets its lawlessness. He is one of the fathers of lawlessness, which is that once you're under grace regardless of what you do, you're already saved; there's nothing that can take away from your salvation, which is contradictory to what this says.

Verse 22: "Many will say to Me in that day... [the day of judgment] ...'Lord, Lord, did we not prophesy through Your name?... [Is this not prophesying, writing in Your name? Is this not in the name of God? Is this not using the name of Jesus and God the Father? *No question about it!*] ...And *did we not* cast out demons through Your name? And *did we not* perform many works of power through Your name?' Then I will confess to them, 'I never knew you. Depart from Me, you who work lawlessness'" (vs 22-23). Now 'iniquity; (*KJV*) comes from the Greek 'anomia,' which means *lawlessness*. When you say all the Law of Moses has been abrogated, you believe in a doctrine of lawlessness.

You cannot come back and say, 'We'll recapture eight or nine of these commandments, and God will accept us for that. And if we just have love in our heart, it really doesn't matter what we do.' What they're talking about is not the love of God, they're talking about the human feeling of love, their own *feelings*, rather than facts. They're workers of iniquity.

1-John 3:4 says: "...sin is the transgression of the Law" (KJV), OR in the Greek it is '...sin is lawlessness.' To take and abolish the laws and commandments of God, all of them, is lawlessness.

(back to *Sunday Facts, Sabbath Fiction*):

Christ is the complete end and fulfillment of the laws, 613 commandments, ending their jurisdiction over us completely. We are no longer justified through law keeping.

What we're going to see is this: With their sleight of hand and their deceitfulness and their wrong thinking, they trip themselves up in their own reasonings, because they are comparing apples and oranges and do not even know it.

We are no longer justified through law keeping.

That sounds like a good statement and that has a grain of truth. We'll have to see there's a difference between justification and commandment-keeping.

Let's go on here with a little more. We will come back and see some of these. We'll read some of the Scriptures that he uses. Let me get to another section here. This has to do with Christ fulfilling the Law. Let's begin by going to Romans 10:4. Let's understand what this is talking about. Here's a Scripture that they use and we will see how they misapply it and twist it and turn it and use it to their own destruction, not knowing what they're even saying. It's like Paul wrote Timothy that there are many who desire to be teachers of the Law, not understanding what they are saying, or what they are strongly affirming. This is the case here. To the carnal mind that does not want to keep the commandments of God, oh boy, does this sound like a great commandment to do away with all the laws of God.

Romans 10:4: "For Christ *is the end of works* of law for righteousness to everyone who believes." 'So therefore, brother, all you have to do is just believe and you're saved.' But remember, James said if 'you believe in one God, you do well. The demons also believe and tremble,' because they know that they have sinned unto judgment and their final eternal judgment they know is coming. Christ is the end of the Law, therefore all 613 of the commandments of God have been done away. You don't have to keep the Sabbath, you can have idols, you can have other gods. You can dishonor your parents, you can murder, you can steal, you can lie, you can commit adultery, you can covet, you can do all of those things because Christ ended the Law.

- *But the problem is, He didn't!*
- And the problem is *they do not understand* what this says.

- And the problem is *they took it clear out of context!*

(go to the next track)

How do we begin to understand this? Let's first of all understand what *it does not mean*.

- It does not mean that the Law has been abolished.
- It does not mean that all 613 commandments of God no longer exist and it's forever done away.

Now let's go to Romans 5:13 and let's see what it says concerning law. "For before *the Law*..." Let's understand something important. There are several ways that the word *law*—'nomos'—is used in the New Testament. Here in this case 'the Law' refers to the covenant that was made with Israel. This is the one that Tardo says is completely abolished. There are those who say from the time of creation, up until Moses was given the Law, there were no commandments.

But let's notice how Paul answers that question: "For before *the Law*... [the covenant given to Israel] ...sin was in *the* world. However, sin is not imputed when law does not exist." He's clearly saying since there was sin, there was law and there was transgression, which is 'sin is the transgression of the Law,' so therefore there was death.

If there is no law, God cannot impute sin to you. It's the same way in the land. Let's just use a simple example. A police officer could not arrest you for driving through a stop sign at an intersection where there was no stop sign—could he? Well, if he did, would you be convicted in court? *No!* The Law is if there is a stop sign, you must stop. If you go through it, you transgress that law. But *if there is no stop sign, there is no law of the stop sign* at the place where there is no stop sign. So therefore, *there is no transgression* or there is no sin, and you cannot be condemned as guilty or convicted of it.

Now let's understand something concerning God's laws. They are there. They work all the time. If they weren't there and didn't work all the time, then you would not see the penalty of sin that people suffer. Most noticeably understood in the sex lives of people who, in their promiscuity, commit: adultery, fornication, homosexuality, bestiality, and every other sex sin under the sun. They have broken the Law which says, 'You shall not commit adultery,' therefore the penalty of the Law in their bodies is:

1. their thinking ends up *messed up*
2. their emotions are *ruined*
3. they *come down with venereal diseases*

—which you need to understand that when a man and woman marry and remain faithful to each other throughout their lives, there has never been one recorded incident of venereal disease, because they are living within the Law. That ought to be abundantly clear.

Now let's go to Romans 4:15: "For the Law works out wrath..." That is, *if you break it!* The Law does not work wrath if you don't break it; it works blessings. Wrath is a curse. We'll also understand, as we go through this series, that the Law is not the curse, but there is a curse *of* the Law for sin. There are the blessings *of* the Law for obedience.

"...because **where no law is, there is no transgression**" (v 5). If there's no law, there can't be sin. If there's no sin, then you don't need a Savior. If you don't need a Savior, it was completely unnecessary for Christ to come.

Now let's carry this one step further. Let's go to Romans 7:7: "What then shall we say? *Is the Law sin? MAY IT NEVER BE!....* [Men say, 'Yes, the Law is sin. Do away with it!'] ...But I had not known sin, except through the Law..." How can you repent, if you don't know what sin is? *Sin is the transgression of the Law. Whoso sins transgresses the Law, for sin is the transgression of the Law.* And when you become a Christian, you *repent of your sins*, which are law-breaking and transgressions, and you look to Christ to forgive you for your sins—don't you? *Yes! That is justification!*

But we will see some very important things. The man (John 5) found Him and he worshiped Him, and Jesus told him, 'Go sin no more, lest a worst thing come upon you.' Also the woman who was taken in adultery and improperly brought forth without the man (John 8). When no one condemned her, Jesus said, 'I condemn you not. Go and sin no more.' Those are very important things to understand. **Where there is no law, there is no sin!** So, the carnal mind says, 'Since I don't want the Law, the Law is sin.' Paul says, 'No, it's not sin. It cannot be sin.'

"...Furthermore, I would not have been conscious of lust, except *that* the Law said, 'You shall not covet.' But sin..." (vs 7-8). Which is in our members. All of us have it. That's why the 'carnal mind is enmity against God,' because you have the *Law of sin and death* in you, and you do not want to admit that you're a sinful person. You only want to admit that you're righteous or that your conduct—though it may be condemned by others; though it may be condemned in the Bible—yet, you have a Savior Who has done away with all the laws and commandments of God. Therefore, whatever you do is right. Oh, what a blessed conscience that you may have. **No, it's cursed!**

Verse 8: "But sin, having grasped an opportunity by the commandment, worked out within me every *kind of* lust because apart from law, sin was dead."

There could be no such thing as sin without the Law. Therefore:

- you could never have a guilty conscience
- there's no such thing as murder
- there's no such thing as adultery
- there's no such thing as idolatry
- it's all right to have as many gods as you want
- or to lie and cheat and steal and covet and break all the commandments of God.

Verse 9: "For I was once alive without law; but after the commandment came, sin revived, and I died." What does he mean by that? How could he have died and yet write this epistle? 'When sin revived,' that means it came to his consciousness of what really sin really, really was. And he died the death of baptism, as we will see a little later.

"And the commandment, which *was meant to result in life*, was found *to be* unto death for me... [because he broke it] ...because sin... [which is the transgression of the Law] ...having taken opportunity by the commandment... [Because the commandment defines what sin is. Understand that! Since the commandments define what sin is, the commandments or laws cannot justify. I just want you to understand that concept.] ...sin, having taken opportunity by the commandment, deceived me, and by it killed *me*.... ['The wages of sin is death.' That's what it says over here in Rom. 6:23, 'The wages of sin is death, but the gift of God is eternal life through Jesus Christ our Lord.'] ...Therefore, the Law *is* indeed Holy... [not a curse] ...and the commandment Holy and righteous and good" (vs 10-12). That's what we need to understand concerning the commandments of God.

Let's understand something; this is very profound. This is New Testament doctrine, and this shows the lying deception that all the commandments have been done away.

Verse 1: "Are you ignorant, brethren (for I am speaking to those who know law)... [If Christ had done away with the Law, how is it that he's speaking to brethren who are Christians who know the Law? *Because if it's done away, there's no need to know the Law*—correct? You don't have to be bothered with any of it—do you? You see how ridiculous that thinking is?] ...(for I am speaking to those who know law), that the Law rules over a man for as long a time as he live?" And then he uses the example of marriage.

If the marriage law has dominion over a man and a woman as long as they live, pray tell, do you

not think that all the other commandments of God, which are of greater importance, has dominion over you as long as you live? *You better understand that that's true!*

Romans 6:1: "What then shall we say?... [That is concerning the whole thing of justification] ...What then shall we say? Shall we continue in sin, so that grace may abound? **MAY IT NEVER BE!** We who died to sin... [you died to sin through baptism] ...how shall we live any longer therein?" (vs 1-2).

This is Christian doctrine—isn't it? By the Law is the knowledge of sin, if all the Law has been done away, you can't have any knowledge of sin—can you? How would you know what sin is? Paul says, 'How shall we that are dead to sin live any longer a sinful life?' If you're no longer living a sinful life, then you must be leading a law-obedient life—correct? Have to be!

Verse 3: "Or are you ignorant that we, as many as were baptized into Christ Jesus, were baptized into His death?... [That's how Paul died, yet lived.] ...Therefore, we were buried with Him through the baptism into the death, so that, just as Christ was raised from *the* dead by the glory of the Father, in the same way, we also should walk in newness of life" (vs 3-4). If your old way of life has been sinning, if your old way of life has been commandment-breaking, what is going to be a new way of life? *Commandment-keeping!*

Verse 5: "For if we have been conjoined together in the likeness of His death, so also shall we be *in the likeness* of His resurrection. Knowing this, that our old man was co-crucified... [That's what you do with sin and carnal nature.] ...with *Him* in order that the body of sin might be destroyed... [If there is no sin, how can you destroy it? You see how contradictory that it would be if you followed this kind of thinking.] ...so that we might no longer be enslaved to sin" (vs 5-6). Now, how clear is that?

Now let's look at a couple of other Scriptures. Let's come back to Romans, the third chapter, and let's understand where they get confused in this. The very first time I read this, I was confused myself, and I didn't understand it. It wasn't until sometime later that I understood that in the *King James* there was a mistranslation. This mistranslation led to the confusion, so let's read it and let's understand what it's talking about.

The first part of it he condemns all under sin. Romans 3:19: "Now then, we know that whatever the Law says, it speaks to those who are under the Law... [Everybody's under the Law. The Law has dominion over a man as long as he lives.] ...so that every mouth may be stopped... [That they're not going to tell God what to do.] ...and all the world

may become guilty before God." And if there is no law, there is no guilt. If there is no guilt, there has been no transgression. If there is no transgression, then it doesn't need to be made right. 'Because all have sinned and come short of the glory of God.'

Now then v 20 is the difficult one, one of those that Paul wrote some things that 'are very hard to be understood, which those who are unlearned and unstable twist and wrest to their own destruction.' "Therefore, by the deeds of the Law there shall no flesh be justified in His sight" (*KJV*) There you got it, you don't have to keep any law. Now, let's unravel that just a little bit. Let's understand something profound here.

1. The definite article 'the,' by 'the deeds' is not there in the Greek.
2. And 'the Law,' the definite article is not there either.

So this should read: "Therefore, by works of law shall no flesh be justified before Him; for through *the Law is the* knowledge of sin" (*FV*). Let's stop and ask what the function of the Law is.

- To give knowledge of sin. 'Where there is no law, there is no sin.'
- Sin cannot be imputed where there is no law.

Justification has nothing to do with keeping the commandments of God. **No law can justify you.** Why? In that they are true, and in that one statement they have a greater truth. The Law can never justify you because—***the Law was made to define sin, not forgive sin!*** That's the easiest way to remember. In order to be justified, you must have forgiveness; you must have payment made by Christ. That is *justification*. The reason you need justification is because you have sinned. You have broken the Law. If you did not break the Law, you do not need justification. ***Justification, or righteousness, achieved by that justification is to put you in right standing with God.*** The only thing that can do that is the sacrifice of Jesus Christ.

Under the Old Covenant they had a justification to the temple. This justification in the flesh was by works of law. In order to be justified to God the Father in heaven above, *it is only through Christ.* That's what this is talking about.

Verse 21: "But now, *the* righteousness of God... [which gives you justification] ...*that* is separate from law... [When I read that the first time, I said, 'Without the Law!' (*KJV*). *Without* in English means *the absence of*, but the Greek means 'separate from the Law' and that is the key you need to understand.] ...*the* righteousness of God *that* is separate from law..." Meaning, it's a separate operation.

- You have the Law, which defines what you are to do
- You have sin, which is the transgression of the Law

Now in order to be made right, you have to have those sins forgiven. That is done by justification.

You need to understand how that principle works. When we get back to Rom.10:4, we'll understand it crystal clear. There will be no doubt that the claims of this man that all 613 commandments of the laws of God have been done away forever. *That statement is complete wrong!* That is a lawless, carnal statement made to justify the sin of Sunday-keeping and the sin of twisting and turning and deceitfully handling the Word of God, to a carnal end, to a carnal purpose, to give justification to people where there is no justification through Christ in that at all.

Let's go back and review v 20 again. "Therefore, by works of law there shall no flesh be justified before Him... [works of law cannot substitute for the sacrifice of Christ—period!] ...for through *the Law is the* knowledge of sin. But now, *the righteousness of God...* [Achieved by this justification and also the righteousness of God, God's righteousness in sending Christ to be the perfect sacrifice for the forgiveness of sin, to justify men] *...the righteousness of God that is* separate from law has been revealed, being witnessed by the Law and the Prophets" (vs 20-21).

Now how could you have something witnessed by the Law and the Prophets, if you had the total absence of it? That's what really got me hung up when I first read this. It just blew me away! I couldn't understand it. And this really means this: The Law and the Prophets told us what?

- about the coming of Christ
- the need of a Redeemer
- Isa. 53 that He died for the sins of many
- we're healed by His stripes
- Isaiah 42 that He was so disfigured more than any man
- Psa. 22 that He would die on the cross

And all of those were witnessing of the coming of Christ.

Verse 22: "Even *the* righteousness of God... [This is to put you in right standing with God.] *...that is* through the faith of Jesus Christ..." You have to believe in Him. Under the Old Covenant, if someone sinned, they could go to the temple and they could offer a sacrifice, a work of law, and they were justified to the temple. They were forgiven to the community of Israel, but not to God the Father in heaven above until after Christ came. Christ came

and here we have now "...*the* righteousness of God through *the* faith of Jesus Christ..."

Meaning you have to believe on Jesus Christ, you have to accept His sacrifice as the payment for the forgiveness of your sins, and that the blood of Jesus Christ has purchased you. That is the work of righteousness that God has done, which no other work can do. Do you not understand that that which Christ did is far greater than someone going to the temple to offer a bullock or a ram or a lamb or a sacrifice of a turtle dove or a meal offering or an incense offering? Is that not greater? *Yes!* Especially when you understand that Jesus Christ was God before He became a human being. How marvelous indeed that is that He did that.

"...through *the* faith of Jesus Christ, toward all and upon all those who believe; for there is no difference" (v 22). God accepts the repentance directly from heaven above through Jesus Christ and forgives your sin. No law can substitute for that. That's where they get all mixed up. They accuse Sabbath-keepers and say, 'Well, you keep the Law to be justified.' No, we don't keep the Law to be justified. We keep the Law so we're not living in sin. We look to Christ and the blood of Christ, and the forgiveness of God the Father, to justify us to God the Father through Jesus Christ. And in that we believe, *we know*, that all the Sabbath-keeping in the world in the letter of the Law cannot substitute for the sacrifice of Jesus Christ. We understand that. They do not.

Here's why, v 23: "For all have sinned, and come short of the glory of God; but are being justified freely..." (vs 23-24). There's no charge for you to get on your knees and repent to God. You don't go before a machine and put the money in the slot. You go before a machine and it says, 'You want to be forgiven of this sin, it's \$10. You want to be forgiven of this sin, it's \$20.' Or like the Catholics, that's justification by works. You go confess your sins to the priest, and the priest says do 200 'hail Marys' and 500 'our fathers.' *You're justified freely; that is grace.*

"...being justified freely by His grace through the redemption that *is* in Christ Jesus" (v 24). Please understand, ***no law can redeem***; not possible! No law was ever created to redeem. Only upon repentance and belief in the sacrifice of Jesus Christ and the blood of Jesus Christ covering your sins and your life are you justified from your past sins. That's what it's talking about.

Verse 25: "Whom God has openly manifested *to be* a propitiation through faith in His blood..."—propitiation means that *Christ is always there as a continual atoning mercy seat and source of forgiveness* that as we walk in our Christian life.

Since we have sin to overcome which is in our members—and we do sin—Christ is there to forgive us. We can continually come back to God and received forgiveness, provided that we have not committed the unpardonable sin, provided that we are not living in sin, as Paul said, ‘God forbid! How shall we who are dead, that is baptized into Christ, live in sin any longer? *No way!* If that were the case, we would make Christ the minister of sin and He’s not the minister of sin. He’s a minister of righteousness.

Verse 25: “Whom God has openly manifested *to be* a propitiation through faith in His blood, in order to demonstrate His righteousness... [being made right with God, in right standing, the act of justifying] ...in respect to the remission of sins that are past, through the forbearance of God... [That’s what justification is. That comes from the righteousness of God. We need to understand the final result of this]: ...*yes*, to publicly declare His righteousness... [Rather than the righteousness of men. That’s important, because we will get to the righteousness of Israel (Rom. 10:4).] ...in the present time, that He might be just, and the one Who justifies the one who is of *the* faith of Jesus. Therefore, where *is* boasting? It is excluded....” (vs 25-27).

You can’t boast. What did you do? The only thing you could do is repent and confess your sins. You cannot say we’re special and privileged. You cannot say that God is bound to do this because of who and what ‘I am and who my parents are,’ and who they were, or as the Jews said to Jesus, ‘We’re of the seat of Abraham.’ No boasting!

“...Through what law?... [It’s not a law. There’s no law that you can boast in.] ...*The law of works?*... [Can you boast in your works? *No!*] ...By no means! Rather, *it is* through the law of faith” (v 27). This is the law of faith. There’s one for you. What is the law of faith? *It is a law that the only way you can have your sins forgiven is through repentance and the acceptance of Jesus Christ as the sacrifice in full payment for your sins.* That is the law of faith which you must believe *vs* the law of offerings *vs* the laws of works—any works, whether you use Buddhist beads, Muslim beads, Catholic beads, Orthodox beads, whatever your rosary may be—they have no standing before God. Those cannot forgive sin. Can’t be of works.

Verse 28: “Consequently, we reckon that a man is justified by faith, separate from works of law.” Some works of law are necessary, like the Ten Commandments, like the Holy Days. But those do not perform the operation of the sacrifice of Jesus Christ and the payment of your sins through His blood.

Verse 29: “*Is He* the God of the Jews only?... [They think so, even to this day, but *He’s not.*] ...*Is He* not also *the God of the Gentiles?* **YES!** *He is* also God of *the* Gentiles, since *it is* indeed one God Who will justify *the* circumcision by faith... [You’re going to have to do it that way, not because you’re circumcised, but because you believe in Christ.] ...and *the* uncircumcision through faith... [the very same operation] (Here’s the whole key, here’s the whole summary. Here is the thing that these lawless preachers do not understand.) ...Are we, then, abolishing law through faith? **MAY IT NEVER BE! Rather, we are establishing law**” (vs 29-31).

Why? *Hebrews 10:16*, here’s how you establish law. The laws and commandments of God are not meant to be an external thing written in tables of stone that you can go by like in a museum and look at them and they have no effect upon you. Rather the laws and commandments of God are to be part of you.

- Here’s how you establish it then.
- Here is how it is honorable.
- Here it is how it is spiritual.
- Here is how it is good and Holy and right and true.

Hebrews 10:16: ““This *is* the covenant...” That’s the covenant if you accept Jesus Christ as your Savior and repent of your sins and look to His sacrifice to blot out of those sins and the blood of Jesus Christ is full payment for you to buy you back from a life of living in lawlessness, to live in righteousness.

Verse 16: “This *is* the covenant that I will establish with them after those days,’ says *the* Lord: ‘I will give My laws into their hearts, and I will inscribe them in their mind; and their sins and lawlessness I will not remember ever again’” (vs 16-17). That’s how you establish the Law.

Now then, we’re ready to understand; let’s look at it. It will become crystal clear. It will be like turning on a light bulb. What do you know about that!

Romans 9:30: “What then shall we say? That *the* Gentiles, who did not follow after righteousness... [they didn’t have any of the laws of God] ...who did not follow after righteousness, have attained righteousness... [the righteousness of Christ through repentance] ...*even* the righteousness that *is* by faith... [to be put in right standing with God] ...But Israel, although they followed after a law of righteousness... [They had the Ten Commandments and they also had all the animal sacrifices—didn’t they?] ...did not attain to a law of righteousness... [Why? *Because they rejected Christ!*] ...Why? Because *they did* not seek it by faith, but by works of

law... [They didn't want to believe in Christ, but they wanted to keep their animal sacrifices and all of their rituals, so God destroyed Jerusalem, so it would no longer be.] ...for they stumbled at the Stone of stumbling [Christ], exactly as it is written: 'Behold, I place in Sion a Stone of stumbling and a Rock of offense, but everyone who believes in Him shall not be ashamed' (vs 30-33).

Romans 10:1: Brethren, the earnest desire of my heart and my supplication to God for Israel is for salvation. For I testify of them that they have a zeal for God, but not according to knowledge.... [A lot of people have zeal for God, but they go about it their own way, not according to the true knowledge of God.] ...For they, being ignorant of the righteousness that comes from God... [Which is what? *God's righteous method of justification for past sins.* They refused to accept it.] ...and seeking to establish their own righteousness... [through the code of Jewish law] ...have not submitted to the righteousness of God" (vs 1-3).

But have set themselves above God to create their own laws, to make themselves right in their own eyes, which is what not only the Jews have done, but which is what the Protestants have done, and the Catholics have done, and anyone who thinks that they can create laws more righteous than God or create a method of forgiveness of sin greater than the sacrifice of Christ. You have not submitted unto the righteousness of God.

Verse 4: "For Christ *is the end of works* of law for righteousness..." Or Christ has ended the law for justification.

- No longer do you need any animal sacrifices.
- No longer do you need a temple or a priesthood.

Christ ended that! He didn't end all the commandments of God. Now the Greek word for *end* is 'telos,' which also has a secondary meaning, which means *the goal or purpose*. And the whole purpose of the Law was to bring them to Christ.

On both accounts they have missed it. Christ ended the law for righteousness in order to achieve justification by works. He ended it. He didn't do away with all the laws and commandments of God. He ended it ***because His life, His death, His resurrection—as the Son of God—is infinitely superior to any animal sacrifice, any work of any law that any man can do, and only that justification through Christ is acceptable with God the Father and none other is.***

This is going to be more apparent as we come into the more ecumenical thing that this world

is getting into, which is going to be absolutely mind blowing.

Verse 4: "For Christ is the end *of works* of law for righteousness... [to achieve justification] ...to everyone who believes. For Moses wrote *concerning* the righteousness that *comes through* the Law, 'The man who has practiced those things shall live by them'" (vs 4-5).

Yes, he had to keep the commandments of God. So do we! But when he sinned what did he have to do? In order to live in them he had to offer an animal sacrifice or do a work of law for justification. Christ ended that! Now then he goes on to speak of the righteousness of Christ. Christ came down and provided it. Christ gave it so that you may repent and you may be forgiven by faith. There you have the substance and the understanding of it. This does not say by any means that He ended all the laws and commandments of God. It says, 'For Christ is the end of the law for righteousness,' which is achieved by *justification*. He ends that!

- Did He destroy the temple? *Yes!*
- Did He end the priesthood? *Yes!*
- Did He get rid of the altar? *Yes!*

That ended it!

Now there's a greater righteousness through Christ, a greater justification through Him. And that's what this means, not the doing away of the laws and commandments of God—whatsoever.

Scriptures from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order a Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter (except where noted)

Scriptural References:

- 1) 2-Corinthians 2:17
- 2) 2-Corinthians 4:1-2
- 3) Ephesians 4:14
- 4) Romans 8:6-8
- 5) 1-John 3:22
- 6) 2-Peter 3:15-16
- 7) Matthew 5:17
- 8) John 5:18
- 9) John 9:24-34
- 10) Isaiah 5:20-24
- 11) Matthew 7:21-23
- 12) John 3:4
- 13) Romans 10:4
- 14) Romans 5:13
- 15) Romans 4:15
- 16) Romans 7:7-12, 1
- 17) Romans 6:1-6
- 18) Romans 3:19-31
- 19) Hebrews 10:16-17
- 20) Romans 9:30-33
- 21) Romans 10:1-5

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Isaiah 6:23
- Job 40
- John 8
- Romans 6:23
- Isaiah 53, 42
- Psalm 22

Also referenced: Books:

- *Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction* by Dr. Russell K. Tardo
- *A Harmony of the Gospels* by Fred R. Coulter

Refuting Sunday-Keeping IX Sabbath Observance *Before* Mt. Sinai

Fred R. Coulter

There is just an unprecedented amount of twisting of the Scriptures, and as I pointed out last time, *of lawlessness*. Those who believe in Sunday-keeping, the first thing they have to do is ridicule and reject the Word of God.

There are many other things here in this book (Sunday Facts, Sabbath Fiction), but let's come to one now, which is a famous one that they always bring out:

7. No Sabbath observance before the Law

That's a famous one that is quoted over and over again. Let me just read a couple of things here.

Sabbath observance did not exist before the giving of the Law to Moses on Sinai. Though many Sabbatarians zealously claim otherwise, there is no commandment to observe the Sabbath before the institution of the Mosaic Law. There is no instance of Sabbath-keeping before the time of Moses.

One zealous Sabbatarian stated, although not mentioned by name, "The Sabbath was kept by the ancient patriarch Abraham."

Let's examine some of the things here; let's go back to the beginning and let's come down to Abraham and let's come down to the time of Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob and we will look at it. Let's understand exactly what the Bible is telling us. It may not say—which it does not, and there's some truth in what he says—it is not mentioned by name after Gen. 2. So, that's not a fair statement to say, 'it was not mentioned by name that the Sabbath was kept by the ancient patriarch Abraham.' *No! It is mentioned.*

It is so important, as a matter of fact, that it's part of creation. Many people have never even thought of this way, but if you try and do away with the requirement for keeping the Sabbath, then what you're trying to do is do away with part of the creation of God. And since this is a creation of time, it doesn't leave evidence of a destruction, like you would try and do away with part of the earth as it has been created. So therefore, people think that, 'Well, since nothing happened to us in rejecting the Sabbath, then it's perfectly all right not to keep it.'

Let's look and see what Genesis 2 says and then we'll look at Abel and we'll look at Enoch and then we will look at how the earth was during the days of Noah. We will see that you cannot have

righteousness without the keeping of the commandments of God, which includes the Sabbath. So therefore, after Gen. 2, though it is not mentioned by name specifically, if someone is going to be, as Abel was called, a preacher of righteousness and that he walked with God, then they had to keep the Sabbath.

Genesis 2:1: "Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them." What is the Law of God and the commandments of God based upon? Jesus said, as we've already covered back in Matt. 5:17—didn't we? *He didn't 'come to abolish the Law or the Prophets; He came to fulfill, and until heaven and earth pass away, one jot or one tittle shall in no way, or manner, pass from the Law!* So, Christ made it very specific that the laws and commandments of God are also tied to the creation. As a matter of fact, the very law of the Sabbath is *created time* and God makes it specific here in Genesis 2

"And by *the beginning of* the seventh day God finished His work which He had made. And He rested on the seventh day from all His work which He had made.... [Now if that would have just been the end of it, then we wouldn't have any controversy over the Sabbath. He just rested, because He finished His work.] ...And God blessed the seventh day and sanctified it..." (vs 2-3).

When you bless something, when God has made it and put His blessing on it, that is a profound thing. A lot of people want to have the blessings of God without keeping His laws or commandments. Just look at the world we have today for those who don't do it, for those who reject the laws and commandments of God. What do we have?

- trouble
- crime
- sickness
- disease
- venereal disease
- murder
- rape
- idolatry

—don't we? So God in starting off the creation made the Sabbath Holy.

1. He blessed it
2. He sanctified it

—'sanctified' means *to be made Holy*. If God makes something Holy, then if you say there was no

Sabbath observance before the Law, then what you have to find is someplace between Gen. 2 and Exo. 16 where God said that He has now made this time not Holy and you find no place.

“...and sanctified it because on it He rested from all His work which God had created and made” (v 3). God set us an example. God is the One Who rested. When we come to the case of Adam and Eve, as long as they walked with God—however long it was before they ate of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil—and of course, that’s just what we have today. People say that you cannot experience wholeness or you cannot experience the full expression of your being unless you experiment and you decide, by opinion, what is right and what is good. God says, ‘My thoughts are not your thoughts and My ways are not your ways. Because as high as the heaven is above the earth, so are My thoughts above yours and My ways above yours.’ That’s why God has given us His Bible, simply because we could never discover these things on our own, and we would just be left with opinions.

You have to understand and believe that the Word of God is the viable Truth of God, which He has inspired to be written, which He has preserved, which He calls *Holy*. In here [the Bible] we find the Truth of God revealed. Let’s come to Gen. 4 and let’s see something here concerning Abel, very important for us to understand. God is the One Who is the Lawgiver. God is One Who has set forth all laws—all spiritual laws, all physical laws by which man is able to use and make and create and do things from that which God has made. We’re held on the earth by the law of gravity, etc. Those laws still function—don’t they?

Let’s read here about Abel. Genesis 4:4: “And Abel also brought of the firstlings of his flock *and* of the fat of it...” This tells us that God gave the commandment for it. It wasn’t just his opinion that he was going to do. We don’t find any place else but here in Gen. 4 until we get to the law of the firstfruits and the firstlings of the herd in Exo. 13 and the firstfruits of the ground in Lev. 23 & 27. *No!* Does that mean that they ceased to exist? or Does it mean that in the history of man so few ever kept it that it crowded out everything? Look what happened to Abel because he was righteous Abel was a preacher of righteousness and he preached it (Heb. 11:4-5). What is righteousness?

What happens when you preach righteousness and show the way of God? That you live righteousness, the way that Abel did—what does this do to people who have their own self-righteousness? *Well, they want to kill them!* Is that not what Cain did to Abel? Cain brought an offering from the ground, which was not according to the firstfruits. He may have had an elaborate thing in

bringing this, because he was going to do it out of the goodness of his heart.

- It was how he felt!
- It was his opinion!
- It’s how he thought!

rather than what God has said. This is the whole philosophy that we’re dealing with in the controversies concerning Sabbath-keeping *vs* Sunday-keeping.

So, he brought the offering and what did God say? Verse 7: “If you do well, shall you not be accepted? But if you do not do well, sin lies at the door.” What is sin? *‘Sin is the transgression of the Law.’* So there is law. God is Lawgiver. Every time He deals with people He enters into covenant and law with them. Remember this: **All covenants have laws and commandments!** This one here did. The covenant that God originally made with Adam and Eve, which then they broke, they received the penalties, which we can read of here in Gen. 3. God still kept dealing with Adam and Eve and with Abel and with Cain, until Cain murdered Abel. Then he was punished for it.

Now let’s come over here to Genesis 5:21; let’s see about Enoch: “And Enoch lived sixty-five years and begat Methuselah. And Enoch walked with God...” (vs 21-22). Do you think you’re going to walk with God being sinner openly? If you walked with God, what did God do every Sabbath? *He rested every Sabbath*—didn’t He? So if you ‘walk with God’ that means you’re *keeping the commandments of God*. You don’t have to state which ones, because obviously the commandments of God—since God is eternal and Jesus is the same yesterday, today, and forever—that God gave them are no different than the commandments that God gave to Israel. They are no different than the commandments that God gave to us. We do, through the sacrifice of Christ, have a different means of justification for our sins, that is true. But having a different means of *justification*, does not eliminate law. You cannot eliminate the law of gravity because you disagree with it, but it’s still there, and so are God’s laws and commandments.

So Enoch walked with God and he had God’s favor so much that when they were after him to kill him, just like Cain did of Abel, God translated him to another place on earth. And Heb. 11 says that he died. ‘These all died in faith, not having received the promises.’

What are we dealing with? Look at the genealogies that we have in Gen. 4 & 5 the genealogies of Cain, we have a bare minimum history. Why do we have a bare minimum history? *Because that’s all we need to know!* The history of

Israel after that was nearly a repeat of what it was before the Flood.

Now let's see what happened during the days of Noah, Genesis 6:5: "And the LORD saw that the wickedness of man *was* great on the earth..." Remember what we covered last time: 'Where there is no law, there is no sin.' *and* 'by the Law is the knowledge of sin.' If there was no law, if there was no Sabbath, if there were no Ten Commandments, then God would not judge them because ***you cannot be judged unless there is a law which has been transgressed***, so then judgment comes.

"...the wickedness of man *was* great on the earth, and every imagination of the thoughts of his heart *was* only evil continually" (v 5). So they were living in such a way that every thought that they had was toward evil, just like what we have today. How many people are really righteous? Now there are some people who do good, but please understand and note this carefully: ***there is a vast difference between do-gooding and the commandments of God***. Do-gooding to help someone in trouble, or something, that's fine. God expects it. But the commandments of God then are those things which God has given and those come from the heart of God. Whereas, someone who is a do-gooder, it comes from their heart. There can be no comparison between the two. With God's way He does not give you a choice of your opinion *vs* His opinion, and if your opinion is good to you, He will accept. *No!* God gives you a choice of whether you will obey Him or not. There's a vast difference.

Now it was so bad, v 6: "And the LORD repented that He had made man on the earth, and He *was* grieved in His heart. And the LORD said, 'I will destroy man whom I have created from the face of the earth, both man and beast, and the crawling thing, and the fowl of the air; for I repent that I have made them.' But Noah found grace in the eyes of the LORD." (vs 6-8).

Grace is the *favor and blessing* from God. You find grace because you're repented and humbled and yielded to God in wanting to do *His* way; then God gives His grace to you. God is not going to give His grace to you because you hate His law. That's the whole point of everything before the Flood—is it not? Why did He destroy everything? The evidence is everywhere that the Flood did occur. *They were wicked, they were evil, they were sinners!*

Now let's read here about Noah, v 9: "These *are* the generations of Noah. Noah was a righteous man and perfect in his generations, for **Noah walked with God.**" Again, you're not going to walk with God unless you keep His laws and commandments which include the Sabbath.

Verse 11: "Now the earth also was corrupt before God, and the earth was filled with violence." Remember what Jesus said, '***As it was in the days of Noah, so shall it be in the days of the coming of the Son of man.***' They probably had their Professor Tardo telling everyone that they didn't have to keep the commandments of God, that the laws of God were done away, that after all, our forefather Cain who invented this 'religion'—*the way of Cain*—this is what it developed into. You need to understand that. You can't come to the Bible with a hostile attitude and expect to understand anything.

Verse 11: "And God looked upon the earth, and behold, it was corrupt—for all flesh had corrupted its way upon the earth.... [corrupted *God's way*. If there weren't laws and commandments, there could be no corruption.] (so this is telling us there was so bad that): ...God said to Noah, 'The end of all flesh has come before Me, for the earth is filled with violence...'" (vs 11-13). What defines violence? *The commandments of God!* What defines right behavior? *The commandments of God!* What is lacking here? Two important things:

- the love of God
- the love of neighbor

You corrupt the way of God so you don't love God; you have violence against your neighbor, so you don't love your neighbor. And Jesus said, 'On those two commandments hang all the Law and the Prophets.'

When you read these things and you're looking for a fight to pick against God and say, 'Well, I can't find any Sabbath observance here.' Okay, well then we'll have to be as he says, 'A zealous, well-intentioned Sabbatarian.' But one day all the Sunday-keepers who reject the commandments of God are going to have to stand before the judgment seat of God. As a matter of fact, are they not standing before that right now? Are they not being judged in their lives right now? *No question about it!*

The next person that we deal with is Abraham. What I want to cover is this: How many people really were keeping the laws and commandments of God *vs* those who had rejected them? *A very few!* All of mankind, the whole society, had rejected it. So much so that God said, 'Away with it all, I'm going to destroy all flesh.' When you start picking a fight with God, you think you're ever going to understand His Word? *No!* He gives grace to the humble.

Let's look at what God told Isaac. You had Abraham, Isaac, Jacob, and then the twelve tribes of Israel later. And in God dealing with every one of them—do you think that He would look upon

Abraham and call him righteous because he was a law-breaker? *No, he believed God!* It was imputed to him for righteousness, that is true. But does that mean once you have righteousness imputed to you that you can go do whatever you think and whatever you want and ignore the commandments of God and the Word of God and the Truth of God, in any generation, in any age? If God is going to come as He did to Abel and to Enoch and to Noah and to Abraham—and walk with them, talk with them, bless them and make covenants with them—do you think that He’s going to walk and talk with sinners who are living in sin? Who thumb their nose at the Word of God? Who reject the commandments of God? Reject the Sabbaths of God? And by the way, as we have seen in Gen. 15, that we have the foundation of the Passover and the Feast of Unleavened Bread right there going clear back to Abraham. ‘If you’re Christ’s, then you are Abraham’s seed and heirs according to the promise.’ So you see what happens to people when they reject the way of God. They have such hatred toward the Sabbath.

Genesis 26:2: “And the LORD appeared to him and said, ‘Do not go down into Egypt.... [Are we not, *as the Church*, likened unto Isaac who was the promised seed that was given to Abraham. Likewise we *of Isaac* are the promised seed of the covenant that God made with Abraham for the spiritual sons? *Absolutely, no doubt!*] ...Live in the land which I shall tell you of. Stay in this land, and I will be with you and bless you, for to you and to your seed, I will give all these lands; and I will establish the oath which I swore to Abraham your father. And I will multiply your seed as the stars of the heavens and will give to your seed all these lands. And in your seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed, because **Abraham obeyed My voice...**” (vs 2-5).

I’ve mentioned time and time again, the three most important words in the Bible are: ‘**Obey My voice.**’ The two most deadly words are ‘*I think.*’ Right after that is ‘*I believe*’—that is from *your own personal opinion* rather than on the Word of God. If you believe in Christ; if you believe in God the Father, and if you believe the Word of God to be true, that’s the kind of belief that you need to have. But to just have *an opinion*, to just have a belief, then everything becomes an opinion. **Abraham obeyed His voice!** Did it have to be written down if he obeyed His voice? *No, because he obeyed!*

Not everything in the whole life of Abraham is recorded for us here in the book of Genesis, just the major important things. You go back and analyze it. Gen. 12, God calls Abraham and says, ‘Leave your father’s house and go into the land I will show you and I will bless you and I will bless them that

bless you and curse them that curse you and in your seed shall all the world be blessed.’

We have nothing from the time that occurred when he was 75 until we come to Gen.15, we have very little except just the travels that Abraham took. Gen. 15 we have again very little until Gen. 17, when He gives the covenant of circumcision to Abraham and to Ishmael. Isaac wasn’t born at that time. When we read a summarized history—such as we’re doing here in the book of Genesis—we need to understand something. When it says ‘because he obeyed My voice,’ that’s important. That’s a major statement which includes everything, though we know not all of what God told Abraham—do we? **No!. But he still obeyed His voice!**

“...and kept My charge, My commandments, My statutes, and My laws” (v 5). This is something for someone who doesn’t have faith. The first thing they will do, they will look at that and say, ‘Well, this does not tell us which ones. How do we know what they are?’ That’s why they are then re-codified for the children of Israel from Mount Sinai.

- It doesn’t mean that they didn’t exist.
- It doesn’t mean that they weren’t viable at that time.
- It doesn’t mean that there were no laws and commandments from creation until the giving of the Law by God to the children of Israel after they came out of the land of Egypt.

This kind of thinking is really very hostile toward God.

Also, remember another thing: When Paul wrote to Timothy he said, ‘You have known the Scriptures from a child. And these Scriptures are **God-inspired and they are able to lead you unto salvation through faith in Christ.**’ If you truly have faith in Jesus Christ, and you go back and read these statements, you’re going to have absolutely no trouble with them. But if you have trouble with them, then you’re carnal minded and you’re not subject to the Law of God and you’re not willing to obey His voice. And by the way, remember that *the Sabbath commandment was spoken by the voice of God.* So you put yourself in some really terrible circumstances here.

Let’s read what else Tardo has here (*Sunday Facts & Sabbath Fiction*):

Of course, such statements are utter nonsense, being totally insupportable by Scripture or any historical record.

Well, recently we had Peter Jennings who—the nightly newscaster for ABC—went on a quest to find the historical Jesus. Totally ignored the

Scriptures, didn't even look at those. And you know what, he never found Him, because the historical record is in the Bible. You think you're going to find any history of those people before the Flood? *No, it was all destroyed!* Very little of the history of the world from the time after the Flood until we come down to the time of the children of Israel in Egypt is really very much discoverable. When we come down through the time of David and Solomon and all of those things, history for us does not begin until the axial period of the days of Hezekiah. But since he says here:

...utter nonsense...

Who's he accusing of utter nonsense, those who believe in the Sabbath? Well, if you believe in the Sabbath you can accuse us of that all day long, but who are you really accusing? *God!*

Nowhere does the Bible make such a declaration. For that matter we may as well allege that Abraham observed Sunday...

Now that statement is utter nonsense.

...since there is as much Scripture for either position.

Not so! Sunday-keeping is law-breaking. And Abraham was righteous, Enoch was righteous, Noah was righteous, Abel was righteous—meaning they were law-keepers, Sabbath-keepers, Holy Day-keepers. We are dealing with a carnal minded debate of one opinion vs another opinion, rather than what do the Scriptures truly tell us.

It's unfortunate that some in their zeal for Sabbath observance will stoop to the point of fabricating what cannot be found in the Bible.

This is about as hostile as the book written by Alan Dershowitz, *The Genesis of Justice*. An atheist who does not believe in God can find very little good in the Old Testament, and whole lot of fault with God because He didn't include this, and He didn't include that, and He didn't include the other thing. So we have the same thing here. Now he quotes this one from the *Daily Life in Bible Times*:

“There seems to have been no observance of a special day of rest among the Hebrews before the time of Moses. The first mention of the Sabbath is in Exo. 16:23 when the Hebrews...

That's an incorrect statement. They were the children of Israel, and the children of Israel did descend from Heber, but these were the children of Israel, not just Hebrews in general.

...when the Hebrews were camped in the Wilderness of Sin, before they received the Ten Commandments.”

Let's look at what God said to them. He revealed the Sabbath to them. We've already covered that, so if you don't have that, you can go back and look at *The Holy Sabbath* series again.

Exodus 16:23: “And he said to them, ‘This is *that* which the LORD has said, “Tomorrow is the rest of the Holy Sabbath to the LORD....”’ (v 23). When you keep the Sabbath you're not doing it to yourself, you're doing it unto God. And we're not looking to ourselves to justify ourselves, or to earn our salvation because we observe the Sabbath. You cannot *earn* salvation by Sabbath-keeping, but you **cannot be saved without Sabbath-keeping**. salvation comes through Jesus Christ to justify your sins so that you're put in right standing with God. Then you can walk in His ways and not be living a life of sin, which includes Sabbath-keeping. It's unto the Lord.

Then He says, “...Bake what you will bake *today...*” (v 23) and so forth. Verse 25: “And Moses said, ‘Eat it today, for today *is* a Sabbath to the LORD.... [It belongs to God, it's His, He created it. It's special time.] ...Today you shall not find it [manna] .in the field. Six days you shall gather it, but on the seventh day, the Sabbath, in it there shall be none.’ And it came to pass *that some* of the people went out on the seventh day in order to gather, but they did not find *any*” (vs 25-27). What did they do? ***They transgressed the Sabbath commandment right in the presence of God,*** literally right under His nose, because you had the pillar of fire by night and the cloud in the daytime and God's presence was there.

Verse 28: “And the LORD said to Moses, ‘How long do you refuse to keep My commandments and My laws?... [They belong to Him.] ...See, because the LORD has given you the Sabbath, therefore He gives you the bread of two days on the sixth day. Let each one stay in his place. Do not let any one go out of his place on the seventh day.’ So the people rested on the seventh day.” (vs 29-30). And the word ‘rested’ there means *to sabbathize the Sabbath*.

Then we come to the next one. What we're seeing in most of these cases, we're seeing an examination of human interpretation to base their rejection of the Sabbath. That's what they use to reject it. Not the Word of God. Oh, they try and reject it with the Word of God later on, but they really don't have that kind of success in doing so.

Sabbatarians claim that God's command to Israel to remember the Sabbath to keep it Holy (Exo. 20:8)...

and we've gone over that many times

...indicates that it was something previously known to them. Therefore they should remember or recollect it.

It means both—remember in the past and remember in the future. They choose not to remember in the past, so they say that was only for them to remember in the future.

So the recognized Old Testament Hebrew authorities, Keil and Delitzsch, however claim otherwise.

They didn't go to the Word of God, they went to men giving commentary on it. What if these men had their opinion? What if that opinion is contrary to the Word of God? Remember, God says, 'My thoughts are not your thoughts and My ways are not your ways.' Here's what they quote:

"Remember the Sabbath Day to keep it Holy, proposes an acquaintance with the Sabbath as the expression 'remember' is sufficient to show, but not that the Sabbath had been kept before this."

They actually did keep it before that, about a whole month before that.

From the history of creation, that had been handed down, Israel must have known that after God created the world in six days, He rested on the seventh day and by His resting sanctified the day. But hitherto there had been no commandment given to man to sanctify the day. This was given for the first time to Israel at Sinai.

A lot of people believe that is true, but that is not true.

Therefore, we see that God intended for Israel to remember the Sabbath by observing it in their future and by recalling that God had rested on the seventh creation day, but they themselves had no previous knowledge of any Sabbath observance.

Partially a true statement. They didn't, because when they were slaves in Egypt, they lost all knowledge of God's way. That's why God called them out to reveal His way, not to create something new, but to tell them of His laws and His commandments.

The method in their madness: Why would someone interested in keeping the Sabbath insist that Sabbath observance preceded the Law? Because it then could be alleged that what pre-dated the Law could not perish with the Law.

We're getting into some real convoluted thinking here.

Therefore the Sabbath began at creation, as alleged, and not on Sinai, then it is

escaped being nailed to Calvary's cross with the rest of the Law.

I'm not going to go through Col. 2. See the sermon series on Colossians Sufficient to say here is that the truth of Col. 2 is the exact opposite of what they allege. Jesus didn't nail any law to the cross, ***He took away the sins by blotting them out through His sacrifice.*** And that the Holy Days and that the Sabbath, and that he even refers to eating and drinking—that is the clean and unclean meats, and so forth—no man was to judge you. How can anyone judge you if you weren't doing it? That shows that in Colossians they were doing it. You can see—in the series on Colossians—for yourself that the way they interpret it and the way that the *NIV* does it is wrong.

(go to the next track)

Now let's see some more of this convoluted thinking that we're reading here. It shows that the 'carnal mind is enmity against God and is not subject to the Law of God and neither indeed can be.'

However, this reasoning is faulty on all accounts. The first reference to any human resting on the Sabbath is made in Exo. 16:23, where manna was given to Israel in the wilderness in which they were forbidden to gather on the Sabbath. The plain fact is no institution of a Sabbath observance was imposed upon anyone before the giving of the Law of Moses.

Did God impose it or did He command it? There's a difference. If you're going to impose it that means that you are going to enforce it and make them do it. and God did not do that.

Now therefore, in the name of honesty and fear of God, let's refrain from adding to His Word what simply isn't there.

We're not adding to what simply isn't there. We are discovering what is in there. That is the difference.

Where mankind is concerned, did the Sabbath begin with the Law? The answer yes. Sabbatarians deny this. What did not originate with the Law could not perish with the Law as hinted previously. They refer instead to God's own seventh day of rest at creation as the original institution of the Sabbath.

True, correct, yes!

But the Genesis account of God's rest on the Sabbath day was never imposed upon anyone until the exodus of Israel from Egypt.

It doesn't say that. Let's come to Deuteronomy 30. We've already covered this several times, but let's go there again so we can read it into the record. God didn't impose anything upon anyone and never will, because He has set before us choices. When you set before people choices, you do not impose upon them. That's an entirely inappropriate and completely silly argument.

- Is God imposing the Sabbath on anyone today? *No!*
- Are they sinning by breaking it? *Yes!*
- Do they suffer the consequences of it because they break it? *Yes!*

That's exactly what God gave to the children of Israel and exactly what God gives to us today. This is the same principle by which He also approached the thing with Adam and Eve—correct? He said, 'You can eat of every tree of the garden freely, except the tree of the knowledge of good and evil you shall not eat.'

- Did He not give them a choice? *Yes!*

Even in the presence of God, right in the Garden of Eden:

- Did God impose upon them? *No!*
- Did He give them choices? *Yes!*
- Did He hold them accountable for their choices and responsible for their actions? *Yes!*
- Did He judge them because of the sins that they committed? *Yes!*

Same way here.

Deuteronomy 30:15: "Behold, I have set before you this day life and good, and death and evil." This is what we are all confronted with in our lives—correct? *Yes!*

- The Truth and the good you find in the Bible.
- The death and the evil you find in the world.

Those things happen because 'the wages of sin is death.' God gave them the choice.

Verse 16: "In that I command you this day..." God does command, but a command is not an imposition upon you. You choose to do it. What is imposed upon you is the penalty for breaking it and what is graciously given to you for obedience are blessings from God. That's what God is saying here in the whole thing.

Verse 16: "In that I command you this day to love the LORD your God, to walk in His ways, and to keep His commandments..." It's not the Law of Moses. Moses never originated it. Moses never wrote one law from his own mind. He just conveyed

to the children of Israel the laws and the commandments of God and the ways of God. He was merely a mediator between God and the people.

"...walk in His ways, and to keep His commandments and His statutes and His judgments..." (v 16). Is that not what we read concerning Abraham? *Yes!* Did Abraham choose to obey God? *Yes!* Therefore, it included Sabbath-keeping. You can come to no other conclusion.

"...that you may live... [We're going to see a little later on that they say anyone who keeps the laws of God and the commandments of God are subject to death.] ...that you may live and multiply. And the LORD your God shall bless you in the land where you go to possess it. But if your heart turn away..." (vs 16-17). That means that you *think*, you get a different opinion, which you could have. You can *think* anything you want to, you can have any opinion that you want to, but know for sure you're going to be held accountable for it in this life, as God judges your life the way you are living now, and at the resurrection you will be judged in the day of judgment.

Verse 17: "But if your heart turn away so that you will not hear... [Remember what we read concerning Abraham, because 'he obeyed My voice,' he heard, he listened.] ...will not hear, but shall be drawn away and worship other gods and serve them... [This is automatic, living law has been from creation and will be through all eternity.] (If you're): ...drawn away and worship other gods and serve them, I denounce to you this day that you shall surely perish; you shall not prolong *your* days on the land where you pass over Jordan to go to possess it. I call heaven and earth to record this day against you..." (vs 17-19).

Doesn't this sound almost exactly the same words that we find in Matt. 17 & 18, heaven and earth? Jesus said, 'Heaven and earth will pass away, but My words will not pass away.' Jesus said, 'But the Son of man is Lord even of the Sabbath Day.' Now think on that for a while!

If you're all involved in Sunday-keeping and this sounds a little strange to you: Do you really love God? If you love Him, do you keep His commandments like the Apostle John, the apostle of love who wrote more about the love of God than any other man who was used of God to write the Scriptures? He said that if you love Him, you'll keep His commandments. Jesus said, 'If you love Me, keep My commandments.' There's no way around it except as you twist and turn it in your own mind.

Verse 19: "I call heaven and earth to record this day against you *that* I have set before you life and death, blessing and cursing. Therefore, choose

life, so that both you and your seed may live, that you may love the LORD your God, and *may* obey His voice... [same thing as applied to Abraham] ...and may cleave to Him; for He is your life and the length of your days, so that you may dwell in the land which the LORD swore to your fathers—to Abraham, to Isaac, and to Jacob—to give to them” (vs 19-20).

It ties it all right in together—does it not? *Absolutely!* No question about it! God has not imposed the Sabbath upon anyone. He says, ‘Here are My commandments, you choose to do them. If you do, I’ll bless you. If you don’t you’re going to have curses.’ That applies at any time in history beginning from Adam and Eve clear to the last man.

Then he quotes Nehemiah where Nehemiah talks about the Sabbath, and so forth, to try and prove a point, but that doesn’t prove the point. Let’s see what he says here now:

The Bible reveals in unmistakable language that Sabbath observance was unknown to Israel or anyone else before the giving of the Law to Moses on Sinai.

He has absolutely no proof for it.

Sabbath-keeping was made known to Israel at Sinai.

Which was just right after they got out of Egypt—right? Remember, they couldn’t keep the Sabbath while they were in Egypt because they were in bondage. Where does law-breaking lead to? *Leads to bondage! You become a slave to your sins. You become a slave to Satan the devil.* That’s the whole lesson of types of Israel in Egypt. That because they lost the knowledge of God, rejected what Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob did and followed their own instincts and got all wrapped up in the gods and the way of Egypt. So much so that when Moses went up on Mount Sinai and was up there for 40-days and 40-nights, what did the people say? ‘Make us gods.’ So they created the golden calf. They went right back to the gods of Egypt.

Sabbath-keeping was made known to Israel at Sinai.

Of course it was! That doesn’t mean it didn’t exist before.

It therefore could not have been observed by Israel or anyone in anyway before them.

Indeed! Enoch, Noah, and Abraham, we just read about them—right?

...and company were not even in a position to explain what a Sabbath was.

How do you know? Were you there? Let alone whether they were faithful to observe it. But what

did God say of Abraham? What did God say of Enoch and Abel and Noah? *They walked the ways of God and obeyed His voice!*

Thus we are certain that Sabbath where service to God is concerned was undeniably a part of the Old Testament law which God plugged into operation with Moses and which it had its plug pulled at Calvary.

Well, that tells you the way that they think.

All of these begin prior to the Law, that is: Melchizedek, the tithe, the sacrifice, and so forth, were incorporated in the Law and were abolished with the Law. Plainly Sabbatarians err in all counts in maintaining that the Sabbath is still in force because it began before the Law and thus was not cancelled with the Law.

You’re reasoning in circles and you’re picking and choosing. See the book: *A Harmony of the Gospels*, where I go through and I clearly explain how it is that Jesus Christ:

1. fulfilled the laws
2. fulfilled the prophets

—and what does that really mean. It does not mean the abolition of them because Christ said, ‘Don’t even think that I came to abolish the Law.’

8. Sabbath-keeping died with the Law

This is the full expose` of Col. 2:16-17.

Let me read the *New International Version* translation of Colossians 2:16-17. And this is where a lot of people have been led into more and greater sin. “Therefore, do not anyone judge you by what you eat or drink, or with regard to a religious festival... [Oh, my, what a terrible translation!] ...a New Moon celebration or a Sabbath day. These are a shadow of the things that were to come... [*Absolute, improper translation!* It’s *of things which are coming*, not *were* to come. It’s a present tense participle—‘the coming things.’ In other words, the exact opposite of what they allege that it did away with these things; it absolutely enforces them, because this shows us God’s plan through the Sabbath and Holy Days.] ...the reality, however, is found in Christ” (vs 16-17). {see the sermon series on Colossians}.

Because we are complete in Christ... [which is true] ...having found acceptance with God entirely through Him... [which is true] ...He has dispensed with the former shadowy elements that regulated meats and drinks... [that is clean and unclean foods] ...and Holy Days and any kind including seventh day Sabbath. Not

man, but God Himself, dispensed with the Sabbath personally...

He never did, otherwise God would be lawless. God is Lawgiver. You see what happens when you have such a hatred for the laws and commandments of God and when you have such a carnal mind that you just despise and hate what God has said, that you despise the Old Testament. You despise those parts in the New Testament which show concerning commandment-keeping and don't read them, don't study them, don't apply them.

Not man, but God Himself dispensed with the Sabbath personally, nailing it and the six hundred and twelve other legal demands to a blood-stained cross. Not one shed of that law could fall off the cross and flutter down to the ground to be picked up again by Sabbath-keepers. Therefore, the return to legal observance of the Sabbath or law of any kind is retrogressive and prevents one's acceptance of the only salvation God recognizes, the one provided entirely by Christ through faith alone.

Let's come to Matthew 19; let's see something very clear here. We're talking about salvation through Jesus Christ—correct? That's what he's saying. Let's understand something. Salvation does not come through law-keeping. ***The laws and commandments of God are required to be kept.*** Salvation is a gift of God, we know that, so don't ever accuse us of trying to earn salvation again. In Matthew 19 we find something very important. I know the arguments that are going to come up, because He mentions the commandments of God, and He doesn't mention the Sabbath. But, my friend, remember this: ***they were living in a Sabbath-keeping society; they kept the Sabbath by the law of the land.*** So the young man came:

Matthew 19:16: "Now at that time, one came to Him *and* said, 'Good Master, what good *thing* shall I do, that I may have eternal life?'" Good thing! He's calling commandment-keeping an evil thing. How did Christ respond? Did He say, 'Look, the good thing is whatever you think in your mind and if it feels good and sounds good and appeals to you and it's just overwhelming coming up through your personality, do it.' *No!* What did He say was a good thing?]

Verse 17: "And He said to him, 'Why do you call Me good? No one is good except one—God. But if you desire to enter into life... [Is He offering him salvation? *Yes, He is!*] ...keep the commandments.'.... [He, being a little technical, he said to Him]: ...'Which?' And Jesus said, 'You shall not commit murder; you shall not commit adultery;

you shall not steal; you shall not bear false witness; honor your father and your mother; and, you shall love your neighbor as yourself'" (vs 17-19). There you have it right there, it doesn't say one word about the Sabbath. No, it doesn't, but Jesus said He was Lord even also of the Sabbath. And He showed us how to keep the Sabbath. He set the example.

Now notice what the young man said, v 20: "The young man said to Him, 'I have kept all these things from my youth. What do I yet lack?'" (v 20). Jesus said when you do everything that you've been commanded to do then you're unprofitable servants. If you do it in the letter of the Law, and if you do it because you feel it's *imposed* upon you, then you haven't been profitable at all. These things are designed so you can do the profitable thing of

- loving God
- loving neighbor
- growing in grace and knowledge
- fellowshiping with God the Father and Jesus Christ

That's what this is all about! ***You can have nothing that comes between you and God.***

Now let's see what Jesus answered, after the young man said, "...What do I yet lack?... [I've already done this. I'm ready for eternal life, right now] ...Jesus said to him, 'If you desire to be perfect, go *and* sell your property, and give to *the* poor, and you shall have treasure in heaven; and come *and* follow Me.'.... [But the young man was committing idolatry of these things.] ...But after hearing this word, the young man went away grieving, because he had great possessions" (vs 20-22).

All these arguments concerning Sabbath-keeping that are brought up here, you don't have it through faith alone.

- you must have faith to keep the commandments
- you must have faith to keep the Sabbath
- you must have faith in all of these things

So what we're dealing with here is a lack of faith.

I'm not going to continue on any more here concerning Colossians 2, but let me just read some of the commentaries that he writes, and this is why people come up with these things and say, 'Well, what do the commentaries say?' I'll tell you what, I don't use a commentary, except the *Word Biblical Commentary*, because it just explains the meaning of the words. There is some doctrine like this in here, but of not of the lawless hateful doctrine of Protestantism.

The Pulpit Commentary says: With St. Paul, they, the religious festivals and the

seventh day Sabbath shadow forth prophetically the concrete facts of the Christian revelation and therefore are displaced by its advent.

If so, then God could not judge the world or convict it of sin.

The Sabbath of the Jews was typical and therefore was abolished in Christ...

Wrong! It's the Sabbath *of God*, not of the Jews.

...and therefore as well as for other reasons, the Lord's day, which took its place from the beginning of the gospel dispensation...

Lie! *It did not!* Paul kept the Sabbath. Peter kept the Sabbath. The apostles kept the Sabbath after the death and resurrection of Jesus Christ.

...from the beginning of the gospel dispensation was changed from the last to the first day of the week.

Now pray-tell, show me in the Bible where it says that. It doesn't.

The Sabbath day was so long and so deeply associated with the stated feasts, the sabbatical year, the jubilee year of Judaism, that it partook of their typical character and thus passed away with the other institutions of Judaism.

Now remember what we did, we went through part of the *Code of Jewish Law*. The code of Jewish law is Judaism. The Word of God is not Judaism. The laws of Judaism in the *Code of Jewish Law* are not the laws of God, but are the human laws devised in the minds of men to impose these things upon people. It was the Jews who tried to impose it upon people and make everything a bondage, not Christian Sabbath keepers who believe in the grace of God, and justification by faith.

Keil and Delitzsch says: But this... [that is Sabbath observance] ...is an institution peculiar to the Old Testament...

Not so! Remember what we read concerning the Sabbath in Acts 13? How that Paul preached on the Sabbath and then the very next Sabbath what happened? *The Gentiles and the whole city came to hear him*, and he told them to continue in the grace of God and grace and Sabbath-keeping are united there right by the preaching of Paul, whom these people profess to follow and they don't even understand it.

At the time, as an 'entole de nomos,' that is commandment of the Law, an ingredient of the Sinaitic law, it belonged

to the shadow of good things to come, which was to be done away when the body of Christ had come. Christ is the Lord of the Sabbath...

Can you believe this thinking? You abolish it, but Christ is the Lord of it, and yet you claim to follow Him and say He abolished it, but He's the Lord of it. If you believe that He is your Lord, He is also Lord of the Sabbath. Why then do you insist on your Sunday-keeping? It's like James says, 'You're double minded.' You can't have it both ways. That's just a Scriptural fact.

And after the completion of His work, He rested on the Sabbath, but He rose again on Sunday...

We've already covered that. Again, you write in for *A Harmony of the Gospels*, and we'll show and prove absolutely that Jesus was in the grave three complete days and three complete nights, and He rose right before the Sabbath, the weekly Sabbath, ended so He rose on the Sabbath and not on Sunday. See how they always go back to their lies; always go back to their false propositions; always go back to their own God-rejecting law-rejecting theology.

...rose again on Sunday and through His resurrection, which is the pledge to the world of that fruit of His redeeming work He has made this day, Sunday, the Lord's Day for His church to be observed by it till the captain of their salvation shall return.

Now I tell you what, someone who doesn't know about the Bible and they go and they start reading these commentaries, they're going to get very confused. The best thing to do is this:

- read the Bible
- study the Bible
- begin with the things that are simple and easy to understand
- then go forward from there

If you don't have *The Christian Passover* book, right in the very first chapter we have *Fourteen Rules of Bible Study*. Those are rules that you find right out of the Bible and those need to be followed to understand it. But understand one thing, and I'll tell you this right here, which is this: ***If you do not obey the Word of God as you see it and understand it, beginning with the simple, then you will lose all understanding and God will take it from you.***

- You cannot live a lawless life and understand the Scriptures.
- You cannot reject the commandments of God and understand the Scriptures.

- You cannot misapply the Word of God through lies and deceitfulness and understand the Scriptures

And that's precisely what we are dealing with here in reading of these commentaries.

The next one they have which we've already covered. We covered this on the *Holy Sabbath* series, which then here in repudiation of it.

9. The fourth commandment is absent from the New Testament

Not so! It's full of it, when you come to understand it.

Let's come to Isaiah 56 and let's answer the question: Was the Sabbath for the Jews only? Let's see what we have. Here's a prophecy. Is this the Word of God? *Yes!* If you believe in Jesus Christ and you believe that the prophets prophesied of Him, then you believe in the prophets—do you not? *Yes, you do!* Can you only believe the prophets in only the things that you agree with? *or* Must you agree with the prophets in all that they say? *You must agree with all that they say!* If you don't, then you are picking and choosing. If you are picking and choosing, then you're going to find yourself in trouble. Let's read this prophecy. This is not hard to understand. This is not difficult to comprehend. This is simple and straightforward and easy to understand.

Isaiah 56:1: "Thus says the LORD... [This is from God, this is not from Moses, this is not from Isaiah. He only wrote what God said.] ...'Keep justice and do righteousness... [In order to do that there's got to be some kind of law—correct? *Absolutely!*] ...for My salvation *is* near to come, and My righteousness to be revealed.'" Who brings salvation? *Jesus Christ!* His "...salvation *is* near to come..." This is talking about the ministry of Christ and the salvation that He would bring.

- Is that not what people want, salvation through Jesus Christ?
- Was not Jesus Christ the One Who was the Lord God of the Old Testament? *Yes, He was!*
- Is He not the One Who inspired these words to be given to Isaiah, who then wrote it down and God preserved it and protected it and passed it on down to us today? *Absolutely!*

Verse 2: "Blessed *is* the man who does this... [There's a blessing. Do you want blessings from God? Do you want God to bless you in what you're doing? Of course, you don't want God to curse you—do you? *No!* What is it that He does and that

lays hold of it? It's in your Bible!] ...and the son of man who lays hold on it; who keeps the Sabbath... [In the *King James* it is 'keepeth,' that means *is keeping as a practice.*] ...who keeps the Sabbath from profaning it; and keeps his hand from doing any evil." Does any evil describe all the rest of the commandments of God? *No doubt about it!* The Ten Commandments:

1. You shall no other gods before Me
2. Make no idol or bow down to it
3. You shall not take the name of the Lord your God in vain
4. ***Sabbath command***
5. Honor your father and mother
6. Don't do any murder
7. Do not commit adultery
8. Do not steal
9. Do not bear false witness
10. Do not covet

If you break any of the other nine, you're doing evil. So it says here "...that keeps the Sabbath from profaning it..."—meaning *keeping it the proper way according to the instruction in the Bible.* 'And keeps his hand from doing any evil.' That's how you receive salvation. He says it's near at hand. What we really have is this: you cannot have salvation apart from Sabbath-keeping.

- Christ is the One Who brought the knowledge of salvation.
- Christ is the One Who's the Lord of the Sabbath.
- Christ is the One Who set the example of what we should do on the Sabbath.

Verse 3: "And do not let the son of the stranger, who has joined himself to the LORD... [Gentiles! Oh, oh, oh. Weren't we told that the Sabbath was for the Jews only? We're talking about stranger, joins himself to the Lord.] ...speak, saying, 'The LORD has utterly separated me from His people.'..." In other words, 'I'm not part of the children of Israel, so I have no part with God.' But God says you could join. When were most of the strangers joined to the Lord? In the New Testament Church—correct? Beginning with Cornelius and his family and all the Gentiles that Paul taught. He taught them to keep the Sabbath.

"...And do not let the official say, 'Behold, I am a dry tree.' For thus says the LORD. 'To the officials who keep My Sabbaths...'" (vs 3-4)—*plural*—that is the weekly Sabbath and the annual Sabbaths.

Now you see how much trouble you get yourself into when you believe the kind of things that are written in this book. You're rejecting God. Everything that we read tonight is totally

countermanded here by the Words of God. Who are you going to believe—a man or the words of God?

“...who keep My Sabbaths, and choose things that please Me...” (v 4). Is that not what we’re supposed to do? What did the Apostle John write in 1-John 5? Why prayers are answered is because ‘we keep His commandments and do the things that please Him.’ Ho, ho, ho! That’s almost exactly identical to what is said here—isn’t it? *Christ is the same yesterday, today and forever*, and the Word of God is true and eternal and it fits together, all together when you really want to understand it. It just falls together perfectly because it is the perfect inspired Word of God and is Truth.

“...and take hold of My covenant” (v 4). How do you take hold of the covenant of Jesus Christ? *Through repentance of sin and baptism, and then keeping the commandments of God!*

Verse 5: “Even to them will I give within My house and within My walls...” What did Jesus say to the apostles on His last Passover night? He said, ‘I go to prepare a place for you. In My Father’s house are many mansions. If it were otherwise I would have told you.’ Word-for-word almost to what we have here. So see how utterly foolish and false these arguments of Protestantism are.

“...and within My walls a place and a name better than of sons and of daughters...” (v 5). What was the promise that Jesus gave in Rev. 2? He will give us a new name and He will write upon us. Rev. 3:12 the name of the Father, the name of Jesus Christ, the name of the city of New Jerusalem. We have it right here in this cursed, hated Old Testament, in the view of people like Dr. Tardo.

“...I will give them an everlasting name... [Is that not salvation?] ...that shall not be cut off. Also the sons of the stranger, who join themselves to the LORD to serve Him, and to love the name of the LORD, to be His servants, everyone who keeps from profaning the Sabbath, and takes hold of My covenant” (vs 5-6). Let’s go back and analyze v 6 for what it says.

- “...the sons of the strangers...” We have coming down through Gentile families—don’t we? We have *the stranger* in v 3, now we have the sons.
- “who joined themselves to the Lord to serve Him.” How to serve Him! To love the name of the Lord, to be His servants, everyone that ‘keeps the Sabbath from polluting it and takes hold of My covenant.’

What do we truly have? The Sabbath is for Gentiles with a special blessing. Sabbath-keeping and

salvation go together hand in hand. Just like Sunday-keeping and lawlessness go together hand-in-hand. You see the difference?

- No one can please God by keeping Sunday.
- No one is going to receive salvation by depending on their works of Sunday-keeping.

They are going against God by accusing Sabbath keepers—you know the same tactics. We’re going to see next time that happens in politics. If someone is against you, you demonize them. That’s what they do with Sabbath-keepers. I’ll tell you what, God is going to have His judgment on them and it’s coming. ***You cannot receive salvation with Sunday-keeping.*** There it is right in the Scriptures. You have to have Sabbath-keeping.

Scriptures from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order* by Fred R. Coulter
Except where noted

Scriptural References:

- 1) Genesis 2:1-3
- 2) Genesis 4:4, 7
- 3) Genesis 5:21-22
- 4) Genesis 6:5-9, 11-13
- 5) Genesis 26:2-5
- 6) Exodus 16:23, 25-30
- 7) Deuteronomy 30:15-20
- 8) Colossians 2:16-17 (NIV)
- 9) Matthew 19:16-22
- 10) Isaiah 56:1-6

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Matthew 5:17
- Exodus 16
- Leviticus 23, 27
- Hebrews 11:4-5
- Genesis 3; 15; 12; 17
- Matthew 17, 18
- Acts 13
- 1-John 5
- Revelation 2; 3:12

Also referenced:

Sermon Series:

- *Holy Sabbath*
- *Colossians*

Books:

- *Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction* by Dr. Russell K. Tardo
- *The Genesis of Justice* by Alan M. Dershowitz
- *Daily Life in Bible Times* (Nelson Handbook series)
- *A Harmony of the Gospels* by Fred R. Coulter
- *Word Biblical Commentary*
- *Code of Jewish Law* by Solomon Ganzfried & Hyman Goldin
- *The Christian Passover* by Fred R. Coulter

Refuting Sunday-Keeping X “You'll Know Them by Their Fruits”

Fred R. Coulter

In this day and age we seem to have inherited every heresy and every wrong teaching that has come down through time in history and is sort of magnifying itself right here at the end-time. It would be nice if everything were nice and smooth and the Word of God, everyone would believe and they would accept it, and we could all agree, we all follow God's way. But that's not the way it is in the world and that's not the way it is with people who want to practice their religion.

In the Church at Corinth, which was the church that had the most problems that the Apostle Paul had, when you begin to analyze everything that they were doing and how they were doing it, they were beginning to construct a 'religion.' They were following men. They were having different doctrines. They were allowing sin. They had heresies come in. They had all kinds of things taking place, if you read 1st & 2nd Corinthians. But I want to focus in 1-Corinthians 11, and I want to focus just on one thing, because it answers the question as to why all of these things take place. There's a reason for it. The reason is stated by the Apostle Paul.

When you read all of 1-Corinthians, you're going to find that it was really kind of a wild church. If you would enter into it, you would have a group over here speaking tongues, a group over here with their own private prophecies, a group over here that says *we follow Paul*, another group over there that says *we follow Peter, we follow Apollos, we follow Christ*. You have the tongues speakers; you have those who believe in amalgamating the pagan worship with the true worship. You have those who believed in eating a meal with the Passover. You had those who believed in women with short and cropped hair *vs* those with long hair, and you had long-haired men. The short-haired men would say, 'You long-haired men'—even Paul said, 'Don't you know it's a shame for a man to have long hair.'

He brings out a very important thing. 1-Corinthians 11:17: "Now *in* this *that* I am commanding *you*, I do not praise you, because when you assemble together, it is not for the better but for the worse." Now when churches degenerate that's what happens. And many of us have experienced that—haven't we? When we come together on the Sabbath, we hope it's going to be a good Sabbath, but it's for the worse. And that's what happened in Corinth.

Verse 18: "For first of all, I hear that there are divisions among you when you are assembled

together in the Church, and I partly believe *it*.... [He says, 'I know it's true.] ...For it is **necessary** that heresies be among you... [The Greek 'must' (*KJV*) means that *it's obligatory*. They're going to happen. Why is it necessary to have heresies come along? And that helps answer the question concerning the Sunday/Sabbath controversy. Why is it necessary?] ...so that the ones who are approved may become manifest among you" (vs 18-19). That is, so that those who know the Word of God will get into the Word of God and they will appear approved of God by what they teach.

Since the Word of God is the greatest thing that we can have, and it's the most important thing in our lives, **God wants to know**

- Do you really love it?
- Do you really love Him?
- Do you love Christ?
- Do you love the Truth?
- Are you going to stand for the Truth at all times in every place and uphold the name of Jesus Christ and the Word of God?

That's what God wants to know and He's not going to know it unless these things come along. I have been absolutely amazed through the years, different people come up with different ideas and different teachings and different doctrines and strange doctrines. It just an amazing thing!

Now let's come to 2-Timothy 2:15 because this is important, because it ties in with 1-Cor. 11 about those being *approved*. 2-Timothy 2:15: "Diligently study to show yourself **approved** unto God..." There is the same word. The way that you understand who those are who are approved of God and are 'rightly dividing the Word of God so that they are not ashamed'—the shame is in the wrong dividing of the Word of God. How do you know, especially as we've seen and we've covered the Scriptures about deceitfully handling the Word of God, corrupting the Word of God, improperly using the Word of God, and all of those things that come along. So, how do you know?

Let's go to the Gospel of John 3 and let's see, because John wrote and made it very clear how you are to know whom God has sent. Not everyone who says, 'I'm a minister of God,' *is* a minister of God. Not everyone who claims to know the Truth, knows the Truth. We're going to see that in particularly with this session.

John 3:33: "The one who has received His testimony..."—received the testimony of Jesus

Christ. 'Received the testimony' also refers to John the Baptist; so we have the testimony of John the Baptist, which is true about Jesus Christ.

We have the testimony of Jesus Christ and: "...the one who has received His testimony has set his seal that God is true." That's a profound statement that God is true, because that means that

- His Word is Truth
- His law is Truth
- His commandments are Truth

—and it's been true from the beginning.

Verse 34: "'For He Whom God has sent speaks the words of God... [That's how you know! That's how you understand!] ...and God gives not the Spirit by measure *unto Him*... [referring to Christ] ...The Father loves the Son and has given all things into His hand. The one who believes in the Son has everlasting life; but the one who does not obey the Son shall not see life, for the wrath of God remains on him'" (vs 34-36). That's how you know. You know them by their fruits. You know them

- whether they teach the Word of God
- whether they preach the Word of God
- whether they rightly divide the Word of God

—and what we have here with the Word of God are the books of the Bible that God has given us which is the Truth of God. There is none other.

We're going to see out of this book that we've been going through, *Sunday Facts & Sabbath Fiction*, that they use a different history. They use different Scriptures. And we've seen how many times they do not 'rightly divide the Word of God.'

Here's the responsibility for every one of us, everyone who studies the Scriptures, everyone who follows God, everyone who listens to anybody speak or teach or preach. Let's go to Acts 17. Here is what we are to do and especially in this age when there are so many disputations and arguments and problems and doctrines coming from every side—coming from Judaism, coming from Catholicism, coming from Protestantism, Buddhism, Hinduism, Islam, native religions. We're being assaulted on every side, so here's what you need to do: ***You need to set aside everything and concentrate on the Scriptures.*** That's what the Bereans did. This is what we always need to do.

Acts 17:11: "Now these... [the ones in Berea] ...were more noble than those in Thessalonica, *for* they received the Word with all readiness of mind *and* examined the Scriptures daily *to see* if these things were so." That's what we need to do; we combine it all together. What we are going to learn, as we have seen with Sunday-keeping, it

always falls back to the authority of the Catholic Church. It goes way back beyond that if you get *The Two Babylons* by Alexander Hislop and read that. It goes clear back to Babylon and sun-worship. That's why Sunday is called sun day, because that is the day that the sun worshipped their god. I want to read to you—here's Tardo's point

15. History validates Sunday worship

Now, that's an interesting thing—isn't it? Please understand this about history, very important to realize. An historian wrote that history belongs to the victors and the victors re-write it. Historians present certain facts, ignore other facts, bear down on some facts, and ease up on other facts. If you don't believe that's true, just watch the different news reports and see how current history is presented.

To say history validates Sunday worship, it depends on whose history you're reading. Are you reading the history of the *true* Church of God or are you reading the history of the *apostate* Church of God? Jesse Hurlbut said that from the fall of Jerusalem until about 120_{A.D.} 'a dark curtain falls over the Church' and when the veil is finally lifted, the Church is an entirely different church than what it was before the veil fell. So, what I'm going to read to you is the history that was part of the veil that came down and brought the deception on the Church of God and those who were professing Christians.

Remember, there are those who profess Christ, but are not Christians. To profess is one thing, *to believe and live it* is another thing. Now let me read the account here (*Sunday Facts & Sabbath Fiction*). Whenever they use the word *all*, you know you're in trouble.

All of the accounts recorded in early church history reveal that the church always met, worshiped, and observed the ordinances, prayed, and fellowshiped on the first day of the week...

The ordinances that they observed is what later became to be called the Eucharist.

...first day of the week, Sunday, the Lord's day. (Rev. 1:10).

When you go through the book of Acts you find that the true Word of God totally contradicts that. Paul

- worshiped on the Sabbath
- taught on the Sabbath
- taught Gentiles on the Sabbath
- commanded them to keep the Sabbath
- commanded them to keep the Feast of Unleavened Bread.

That is New Testament history. So *all* of history that he is talking about is the history of Sunday-keepers,

not the history of the New Testament nor of Sabbath-keepers.

Now let's go to Revelation 1:10, since he quoted that. There have been some translations in the past which translate this that the Lord's Day is Sunday. The Greek does not bear that out at all. Revelation 1:10: "I was in *the* Spirit on the day of the Lord; and I heard a loud voice like a trumpet behind me."

John wrote in John 20 that on the first day of the week Mary Magdalene and the other women came to the tomb. So, if this was referring to the first day of the week, that's what he would have written. This is referring to the Day of the Lord meaning the *second coming of Christ*, having nothing whatsoever to do with Sunday or as the Seventh Day Adventists try to make this read, the weekly Sabbath. Has absolutely nothing whatsoever to do with Sunday or Sabbath-keeping. This has to do with the Lord's Day.

Verse 7: "Behold, He is coming... [It's talking about the coming of the Lord. That's what the book of Revelation is all about, the events which lead up to the coming of Jesus Christ in His second return. This is the context.] ...with the clouds, and every eye shall see Him... [No question about it, every eye is going to see Him.] ...and those who pierced Him; and all the tribes of the earth shall wail because of Him. Even so, Amen. 'I am the Alpha and the Omega, *the* Beginning and *the* Ending,' says the Lord, 'Who is, and Who was, and Who *is* to come—the Almighty.' I, John, who *am* also your brother and joint partaker in the tribulation and in the kingdom and endurance of Jesus Christ, was on the island that *is* called Patmos because of the Word of God and the testimony of Jesus Christ. I was in the Spirit on the Day of the Lord... (vs 7-10).

Referring to then all the events that are going to transpire between the time of John and the second return of Christ. That's what it means *the Lord's Day*. Likewise when you go the Old Testament and it talks about the Lord's Day in the end-time. It's not talking about Sunday. People with no education or understanding in the Scriptures, and haven't been properly taught, when they hear someone say that and they read a translation of the Scriptures—a *spurious* translation of the Scriptures—which says Sunday, they believe it. What is happening they are reading *their* interpretation into it to find a justification for Sunday-keeping. They are trying to force the Scriptures to say what they want, rather than understanding the Scriptures to understand what God wants us to understand and what they actually say.

The writings and records of the early church reveal that the practice of Sunday

worship was established with the apostles...

We've already seen that's false. It was not established with the apostles.

...and has been continued by the faithful ever since. For instance

1) **The Epistle of Barnabas—about 100_{A.D.}**

Please understand, Barnabas was not alive in 100_{A.D.}. And please understand that most of these things that he quotes out of here that I'm going to read, have come from the Gnostics. The Gnostics were the apostate mystic believers in a *false* Christ and they had headquarters in Egypt and in a certain sect of them, with the Essenes, the Qumran caves and with the followers of Simon Magus and with the believers of Mithras. All of these forces were corrupting and amalgamating the teachings of Christ into their teachings.

The book, *Primitive Christianity in Crisis*, by Alan Knight is an eye-opening book, which will explain all about the Gnostics. The Gnostics were Sunday-keepers and they were Sunday-keepers long before the New Testament church ever began. One quote out of the whole Epistle of Barnabas:

"Wherefore also we keep the eighth day... [meaning Sunday] ...with joyfulness, the day also on which Jesus rose again from the dead."

We saw that Jesus did not rise from the dead on Sunday. In *A Harmony of the Gospels* we clearly show the three days and three nights and when Jesus was crucified, when He was put in the tomb, when He was resurrected, and so forth. The long and short is, suffice to say, He was resurrected just before the end of the weekly Sabbath during the Feast of Unleavened Bread in the week in which he was crucified. He was not resurrected on Sunday.

Now then, when is the first day of the week ever called the eighth day anywhere in Scripture? There's only one place where we find the eighth day mentioned and that is the Last Great Day after the seven days of Feast of Tabernacles, which is the eighth day. But that does not mean that that eighth day is hence the first day of the week. But it's the eighth day because it follows immediately after seven days of the Feast of Tabernacles.

How can they justify Sunday-keeping by saying, 'We worship on the eighth day'?

2) **The Epistle of Ignatius to the Magnesians—107_{A.D.}**

Ignatius was one of the early Catholic fathers, one of the early Gnostic believers. You read in history his

main claim to fame was that he organized the churches into hierarchies out of the home churches and brought them all together into what we view as churches today. Let's read what Ignatius wrote:

Do not be deceived with strange doctrines, nor with old fables which are unprofitable. For if we still live according to the Jewish law...

Please understand what we went through with that. Remember that? *The Code of Jewish Law* has nothing to do with the laws of God in the Old Testament. They mix Judaism, which is not the teachings of Moses, and claim that Judaism represents Old Testament teachings, which it doesn't. We went through that very carefully.

...For if we still live according to the Jewish law we acknowledge that we have not received grace.

Yet we saw where the Apostle Paul in Acts 13 told the Gentiles to continue in the grace of God and continue Sabbath-keeping.

If, therefore, those who were brought up in the ancient order of things...

It's always the psychology that if it's old, it's bad. Well, we saw that in the ancient order of things 'Abraham obeyed the voice of God, kept His charge, His commandments, His statutes, His laws'—that's an ancient order of things. And if you're Christ's then 'you're Abraham's seed and heirs according to the promise'—right? *Yes!* Now notice what they do and this is the psychological intimidation to put a guilt trip on you, because after all if you're part of the New Covenant you don't want to do those old things.

If, therefore, those who have been brought up in the ancient order of things have come to the possession of a new hope, no longer observing the Sabbath but living in observance of the Lord's day on which also our life has sprung again by Him and by His death. It is monstrous to talk of Jesus Christ and to practice Judaism.

Well, the truth is Christian Sabbath-keepers do not practice Judaism. We don't practice Judaism at all. We do not believe in salvation by works. We do not believe in salvation by circumcision. *We believe in salvation by grace through our Lord Jesus Christ.* So, he's presented nothing here, except to give this quote:

3) The writings of Justin Martyr— 145-150_{A.D.}.

Now, Justin Martyr was right there in Alexandria, one of the 'good' Gnostic apostate professing-

Christians; meaning, he was not a true Christian, but a counterfeit. I want you to notice how much bolder they get in these quotes, and whose authority is he following in this. *None of these books are in the Bible.* He's not following the authority of God, he's not following the authority of the Scriptures, but he's following the authority of the writings of *men.* Justin Martyr says:

And on the day called Sunday we all who live in cities or in the country gather together in one place. And the memories of the apostles or the writings of the prophets are read. But Sunday is the day on which we all hold a common assembly, because it is the first day of the week on which God made the world...

Now we're changing the whole thing around backwards—aren't we?

...and Jesus Christ our Savior on the same day rose from the dead.

Of course, neither one of those are true. You go back and read the creation account and what do you find? *God created the Sabbath!* We've already gone through that so many times, we won't turn back there again.

4) The apostolic constitution--church life in the 2nd Century

Now the apostasy has gained a greater head of steam. There are more Sunday-keepers now than Sabbath-keepers, so they re-write the history. They claim now this is apostolic and this is authoritative, but it's not.

On the day of the resurrection of the Lord, that is the Lord's day, assemble yourselves together without fail giving thanks to God and praising Him for all those mercies God has bestowed upon you through Christ.

Again, that's not Scripture—is it? *No!*

5) Irenaeus—155-202_{A.D.}

The mystery of the Lord's resurrection may not be celebrated on any other day than the Lord's Day...

Now we're getting into dogmatic heretical theology.

“The mystery of the Lord's resurrection... [referring to the Eucharist] ...may not be celebrated on any other day than the Lord's Day, and on this alone should we observe the breaking off of the Pascal feast...

He's saying that we are going to quit keeping the Passover.

Let's come to 1-Corinthians 5 here for just a minute; let's review this again, because going to Scripture, is what we need to do—don't we? I'm reading all of these because I want you to see and I want you to know and understand that they're not following the Scriptures. They're following the writing of men who have created their own doctrines and have created their own dogma. This is the *mystery of iniquity or lawlessness*, which began in the days of the Apostle Paul and he prophesied would continue down to the end-time.

1-Corinthians 5:7: "Therefore, purge out the old leaven, so that you may become a new lump, *even* as you are unleavened. For Christ our Passover was sacrificed for us." Now the point I want to make is this: ***If you reject the Pascal feast***—or the Passover of God, on the fourteenth day of the first month according to the calculated Hebrew calendar—you ***are rejecting Christ!*** If you accept the Eucharist—or as it is often called the Lord's Supper or communion—then you are going back to the mystery of sun-worship and Mithraicism. This is exactly what they are now introducing with these quotes.

Verse 8: "For this reason, let us keep the Feast..." These are the Feasts of God. This is the Feast of Unleavened Bread. *The reason the Feast of Unleavened Bread is kept is because Christ our Passover was sacrificed for us.*

Verse 6: "Your glorying *is* not good. Don't you know that a little leaven leavens the whole lump?" And that's exactly what we are seeing in the progression of these readings that the leaven of false doctrine and sin is coming in.

The mystery of the Lord's resurrection may not be celebrated... [dogmatic theology] ...on any other day than the Lord's day, which is Sunday, and on this alone should we observe the breaking off of the Pascal feast.

That's a very heretical statement. Quite a thing! That's his authority. His authority is not the Word of God; his authority is not in the Scriptures.

As a matter of fact, the first day of the week, the Lord's Day, was selected not in place of the Sabbath, but as a day in which to celebrate our Lord's death and resurrection.

If it wasn't to replace the Sabbath, then why have you replaced the Sabbath? Can't answer that.

One writer says... [he doesn't even say who this is, but let's read it] ..."It is a day of thanksgiving and liberty to the Christians, and a day in which they delight

in regarding it as unto the Lord. It is the Lord's Day, as John called it in Rev. 1:10.... [we just saw that] ...On that day Jesus rose as the head of a new creation. On the Lord's Day He appeared to His disciples, on the Lord's Day...

It doesn't say the Lord's Day. You see what they have done? You see the sleight of hand that takes place?

...and on the Lord's Day the door of the kingdom was unlocked and three thousand souls enter in.

We already covered that concerning Pentecost—didn't we?

...and on the Lord's Day the disciples came together to break bread in remembrance of Him" (Acts 20:7).

Next time we'll go through Acts 20:7 and examine that very carefully and we'll go through all the places in the New Testament where it talks about the first day of the week. So he didn't say who said this, but we're supposed to accept it as authoritative.

6) The Epistle to Diogenitis—150_{A.D.}

But again, the Jewish scruples concerning meats and their superstition relating to the Sabbath...

So, if you believe in keeping the Sabbath Day, you believe in a superstition. You see how they choose their words to intimidate, to put down?

...and the vanity of their circumcision and the dissimulation of their fastings and new moons, I do not suppose you need to learn from me that they are ridiculous and unworthy of any consideration.

7) Clement of Alexandria, 174_{A.D.}

The old seventh day has become nothing more than a working day.

And for those Gnostic apostate Christians, that's exactly what it has become. That's what the professing Christian world does today.

8) Bardasenes—180_{A.D.}

In his book, the Law of the Country, he states, "On one day, the first day of the week we assemble ourselves together."

Out of a whole book there's one sentence? We don't know what he says in the rest of the book—do we?

9) Tertulian

In the same way if we devote Sunday to rejoicing from a far different reason than sun-worship...

Aha! He admits Sunday is the day of sun-worship, but 'we it for a different reason.'

...we have some resemblance to some of you, the Jews, who devote the day of Saturn, Saturday, to ease and luxury. He who argues for Sabbath-keeping and circumcision must show that Adam and Abel and the just of the old times observed these things."

No, we must not! We must read the Word of God and see what it says. Remember that Abraham kept the Sabbath in uncircumcision for how long? And you know that even though Adam and Eve sinned they still had contact with God. They could come to the gate at the east end of the Garden of Eden, and they could visit with God there. I'm sure that they kept the Sabbath. They would have to, because God created it and it was a day of assembly for them.

10) Origen—185-255_{A.D.}

You see, we're getting further and further and further away from the real true New Testament times, and we are beginning to see the growing amalgamation of all of the false doctrine, now collectively coming together and beginning to form the background which later became the Roman Catholic Church.

Let's go to Ephesians 4, because what we are reading right now Paul warned of, and we are seeing how the error has been systematized. That's what it means in the Greek here. Ephesians 4:13: "Until we all come into the unity of the faith..." And the unity of the faith is in Christ. Remember, Jesus Christ kept the Sabbath, Jesus Christ kept the Holy Days. He never sinned. If we are to follow His example and live the way that He lived—and we are to keep them—let's understand this:

- When we are baptized and receive the Holy Spirit, Christ is going to be in us—correct? *Yes!*
- Would Christ in us reject the laws and commandments of God? *No!*
- Would Christ in us lead us to deliberately sin against God? *No! Absolutely not!*

So, that unity of faith is in Christ. "...and of the knowledge of the Son of God, unto a perfect man... [a fully mature spiritual Christian] ...unto *the* measure of *the* stature of the fullness of Christ" (v 13). **Christ is our example**—isn't He? You go back and read through all of the Gospel accounts, which we covered many, many, many, showing how that Jesus

- *healed* on the Sabbath
- *preached* on the Sabbath

- *taught* on the Sabbath
- *honored* the Sabbath

said He was Lord of the Sabbath ; He's not Lord of any other day.

Verse 14: "So that we no longer be children, tossed and carried about with every wind of doctrine by the sleight of men in cunning craftiness, with a view to the systematizing of the error." (KJV: whereby they lie in wait to deceive) The Greek means there "...to the systematizing of the error." This is what we are reading with these writings. What he is following, what he is teaching in this book is the systematic heretical theology of men, who have rejected God's way.

Verse 15: "But holding the Truth in love... [the Truth is the Word of God] ...may in all things grow up into Him... [it's all in Christ] ...Who is the Head, *even* Christ From Whom all the body, fitly framed and compacted together by *that which* every joint supplies, according to *its* inner working in *the* measure of each individual part, is making the increase of the body unto *the* edifying of itself in love" (vs 15-16). That also is a summary of what the Sabbath day is to be. We are to:

- fellowship with God
- fellowship with each other
- a day in which we understand God puts His presence and if we're there
 - to worship Him
 - love Him
 - serve Him

He will be **with us** and **inspire us** and **teach us** with His Spirit through His Word. Paul was fighting that very thing!

(go to the next track)

11) Victorinus—300_{A.D.}

We're almost up to the edicts of Constantine—aren't we?

On the Lord's day we go forth to our bread with the giving of thanks...

That's coming to the Eucharist

...lest we should appear to observe any Sabbath with the Jews which Christ Himself, the Lord of the Sabbath, and His body abolished.

Notice the twisted reasoning here. Nowhere did it say in the Bible that Christ abolished the Sabbath in His body.

12) Peter, Bishop of Alexandria, 306_{A.D.}

Again, notice, coming out of Egypt, the land of sun worship—right? *Yes!*

But the Lord's Day we celebrate as a day of joy because on it He rose again.

Now you notice how they have it all joy. It's interesting what they do. They must keep up their false spirituality with all of this praise worship and music, music, music to control the minds and the emotions and I'm sure they did it then. Here's one that says:

The early church historian, Henry Chadwick, says each Sunday they met for their thanksgiving...

Now this is their Eucharist.

...in which the baptized ate bread and drank wine in a sacred meal.

Now please understand that the worshipers of Mithras did that hundreds of years before Jesus Christ. This is Mithraism. Now let me just state it very clearly, if you worship Sunday, and that is the day which you think is the Christian day, you have accepted Mithraism. If you take the Eucharist on Sunday, you have accepted Mithraism. You are a worshiper of the sun god, Mithras, under the guise and name of Christianity or Catholicism or Orthodoxy or Protestantism.

Now he brings in Philip Schaff in his thorough *History of the Christian Church* says:

The celebration of the Lord's day in memory of the resurrection of Christ dates undoubtedly from the apostolic age.

Now this is very clever writing. There's a time to use the word 'undoubtedly' when you're trying to prove a point. However, this is a misapplication of it because it is to cover all the sins of the lack of documentation that they kept it from apostolic age. So they say 'undoubtedly.'

Nothing short of apostolic precedent can account for the universal religious observance in the churches of the second century.

Yes, there can: the apostasy, which all the apostles wrote of and warned would happen.

There is no dissenting voice...

Yes, there are: in other histories, and in other writings, but in these writings, of course, there's no dissenting voice, because these are selective to prove your own point.

This custom is confirmed by the testimonies of the earliest post-apostolic writers...

'post-apostolic'—What does that mean? *After the apostles!* And they were the ones who brought in the great conspiracy. So, to trust their writings is like going to the Mafia and asking for a formal bank audit statement of their activities. If you ever got one it would be fraudulent anyway. You're going to the wrong source, you're going to criminals, etc.

This custom is confirmed by the testimonies of the earliest post-apostolic writers as Barnabas, Ignatius, Justin Martyr. It is also confirmed by the younger Pliny. The Didache calls the first day the Lord's Day of the Lord.

Now they're exalting it up even higher—aren't they? If you have no knowledge in Scriptures, if you didn't understand anything and you picked up this book and you read it. There's a big problem when something is in print, people accept it as authentic and true.

The fathers did not regard the Christian Sunday as a continuation of, but as a substitute for the Jewish Sabbath and based it not so much on the fourth commandment, and the primitive rest of God in creation, but to which the commandment expressly refers, as upon the resurrection of Christ and the apostolic tradition.

What they are saying very plainly is this, they are not doing this because of Scripture. They are doing this because of the resurrection of Christ and they falsely believe that it took place on Sunday.

Sunday was always regarded in the ancient church as a divine institution.

Nowhere, when we examine every one of the 'first day of the week,' we are going to see work was done on every one of those days. Here's what Tardo writes:

Thus... [in conclusion] ...the entire weight of all the early church history piles up against Sabbatarians.

But, of course, when you select the wrong history. But, of course, when you go to the Gnostic fathers of the Catholic Church. Now then he makes this outrageous statement:

Constantine did not change the Sabbath.

You go back to the earlier Sunday refuting that we did, and I read where Constantine *did change* the Sabbath to Sunday, where he did make it the law of the empire. Here's what he says after that statement. Now notice how they all build up, again never quoting Scripture, quoting post-apostolic writers.

The apostles did not keep the Sabbath.

We went through and showed, **yes, they did keep the Sabbath!** Hebrews 4:9 says: **“There remains, therefore, Sabbath-keeping for the people of God.”** A direct command in the New Testament for Sabbath-keeping. No question, when you understand the Truth. A great question in the minds of those who want to twist and pervert the Scriptures.

The early church did not keep the Sabbath.

An outright lie!

Therefore, Constantine could not have changed the church's worship from Saturday to Sunday in the 4th century, as Sabbatarians love to claim.

He gives absolutely no support. None of these men that we read from were apostles; *they were false apostles*. They were the ones who brought in Sunday-keeping. Now let's go to 2-Corinthians 11 and let's see that Paul warned of this. He warned that it was coming. Christ warned of it.

2-Corinthians 11:13: “For such *are* false apostles—deceitful workers... [Just like we have read, *deceitfully working*.] ...who are transforming themselves into apostles of Christ.” That's what he just did—didn't he? Transformed them all into the apostles of Christ? *Yes, he did!* They do it themselves. They're not trying to follow God. They're not trying to follow Christ. This is where all the heresy comes from, from men with their ideas, with their interpretations, instead of from the Word of God. And unfortunately in the end-time, all these things come crashing down upon us and we have mounds and piles and heaps and mountains of heresy and false doctrine and wrong teachings and ‘religion.’

Verse 14: “And *it is* no marvel, for Satan himself transforms himself into an angel of light.” He comes purring and glowing just like he did to Adam and Eve. The first thing he did is the same thing that these men do who profess Sunday-keeping: *they accuse God of a lie!* They accuse God of doing things that are evil and wrong. So Satan comes along and accuses God and says, ‘Hey, I'm here to straighten you all out. God knows in the day that you eat of that tree your eyes are going to be open and you will become as gods, and you can determine good and evil. You don't have to depend on God to determine good and evil. You decide.’ That's what they're doing with Sunday—aren't they?

“And *it is* no marvel, for Satan himself transforms himself into an angel of light. Therefore, *it is* no great thing if his servants... [and he has

plenty of ministers] ...also transform themselves as ministers of righteousness—whose end shall be according to their works” (vs 14-15). What we're going through, we're seeing that happen right before our very eyes. Isn't that amazing? Fourth century, how about that?

As we have shown, all of the facts prove otherwise... [that is to Sabbath-keeping] ...because the apostles...

This is absolutely a lying false statement.

...because the apostles and the developing church always worshiped on the first day of the week. What Constantine did was merely a ratification of Sunday worship as a public holiday.

If it was just to ratify it, his edict would have been much different. He then would not have to have outlawed Sabbath-keeping—would he? Because he would have looked and said, ‘Well, my edict is since all of you are keeping Sunday, I'm going to make it official.’ But that's not what he said.

The church has sanctioned and practiced it... [Sunday] ...as the Lord's day long before the close of the 1st century.

They're going by the authority of the Roman Catholic Church. You know I'll just have to say, at least the Catholics are more honest about Sunday and Sabbath questions than are Protestants. They say, ‘We changed it because we used our authority. If you Protestants claim you get it from the Bible, you're wrong. Why don't you just bow to the Roman Catholic Church and come back home to Rome.’ That's what's happening. It didn't come from the Scriptures. It didn't come from God.

He has a footnote going to the back of the book and he didn't say who it's from here:

Sunday, the Christian day of worship, was observed from the very beginning of the Christian church. It was a radical departure from Judaism...

No, it was a radical departure from God!

...which observed the Sabbath of the seventh day of the week. The move to the first day of the week was to make a weekly reminder of the day when Jesus rose from the dead. Sunday was not observed as a public holiday until the time of Constantine in the early 4th century.

This is really something! I was just absolutely amazed and dumbfounded when I went through this!

We must remember that Constantine was the first emperor to show favor to Christianity.

But by that time it was a paganized Christianity, and how they brought together all of the pagans and all of the apostate Christians into one religious system.

Most of the previous emperors persecuted Christians forcing them to assemble secretly on Sunday in order to worship. After Constantine's alleged conversion to Christianity he abolished all persecution of the churches.

That only lasted a short while until the Council of Laodicea in 364_{A.D.} where the Catholic Church then anathematized anybody who kept the Sabbath, because they didn't get rid of Sabbath-keeping as they claimed.

Constantine actually showed them favor over other religions. His official sanction of Sunday as a day of Christian worship gave Christians the freedom to assemble openly for the first time.

Well, of course, on the wrong day! Satan will let you do that, give you plenty of freedom to do that.

Again, he merely made official what the early church had been practicing all along. Therefore, to contend that the early church observed the Saturday Sabbath until Constantine changed it to Sunday is to be misled at best, and less than honest at worst."

My, my, have you not judged yourself out of your own mouth. Another historian writes,

From the earliest times Christians assembled regularly on the first day of the week. They called it the Lord's Day. They also called it the eighth day.

Dear reader: The historical records of the Christian church from the first century to the present unanimously name Sunday as the day of Christian worship. Shouldn't we do likewise.

Quite a thing—isn't it? What an amazing story that is told here. None of that was from God, all from men. Now we're going to look into most of the places where the Scripture says 'the first day of the week.'

- What was being done?
- Were they worshipping?
- What was it they were doing?

Let's come to the book of Matthew and let's see that where it talks about the first day of the week. Let's understand this is talking about the women coming down to the grave. We're going to see in the book of Luke that they rested the Sabbath, not Sunday.

Matthew 28:1: "Now late on the Sabbath, as *the first day of the weeks* was drawing near, Mary Magdalene and the other Mary came to observe the sepulcher. And *in the morning* suddenly there was a great earthquake; for an angel of *the Lord* descended from heaven, and came and rolled upon the stone from the door, and sat upon it" (vs 1-2). What were the women doing? *They came there to bring the spices!* What were they going to do? *They were going to add that to Jesus' body!* It was a workday; work was being done on that day.

Let's come to the book of Mark and let's see what Mark says in the account; again, the first day of the week. We're going to find in the book of John when we get that there were some other activities on it.

Mark 16:1: "Now when the Sabbath had passed... [they waited until the Sabbath was over] ...Mary Magdalene and Mary, the *mother* of James, and Salome bought aromatic oils..." They bought it after the Sabbath. This tells us that *the followers of Jesus Christ kept the Sabbath*—didn't they? Remember, we were told from early on that they were worshipping on the first day of the week. Here they kept the Sabbath. Did Mary Magdalene, the other Mary, and the disciples believe in Jesus? *Of course they did!* They kept the Sabbath—didn't they? *Yes, they did!*

"...so that they might come and anoint Him. And very early on the first *day* of the weeks, at the rising of the sun, they were coming to the tomb" (vs 1-2). Jesus wasn't there. If you want a full explanation of that you can write for *A Harmony of the Gospels*, we'll send it to you.

Let's come to Luke 23, and let's see what happened. Let's see the activities of the women and what they did, and we are going to find nowhere was the first day of the week ever used as a day of worship. *Nowhere!* Luke 23:55: "And *the women* also, who had come with Him from Galilee, followed *and* saw the tomb, and how His body was laid. And they returned *to the city, and* prepared spaces and ointments, and *then* rested on the Sabbath according to the commandment" (vs 55-56). *They were commandment keepers*—weren't they? But someone's going to say, 'Yeah, but they were Jews.' The answer is they were not Judaizing, *they were keeping the commandments of God.*

Luke 24:1: "Now on the first *day* of the weeks, they came to the tomb at early dawn, bringing *the* spices that they had prepared; and certain *others came* with them." What do you know about that? Again, *work!* What else happened on that day? Jesus came along and there were two of the disciples and they were talking about all these things

that took place. He walked with them clear down to the village of Emmaus. And there when He blessed the meal and broke the bread, they understood that it was Christ. They ran back to the other eleven of the apostles and went in and told them what had happened, that they had seen the Lord. Let's see what happened here.

Verse 36—this is on the first day of the week again: “Now, as they were telling these things, Jesus Himself stood in their midst and said to them, ‘Peace *be* to you.’ But they were terrified and filled with fear, thinking that they beheld a spirit. Then He said to them, ‘Why are you troubled? And why do doubts come up in your hearts? See My hands and My feet, that it is I. Touch Me and see *for yourselves*; for a spirit does not have flesh and bones, as you see Me having.’ And after saying this, He showed them *His* hands and *His* feet. But while they were still disbelieving and wondering for joy, He said to them, ‘Do you have anything to eat?’” (vs 36-41). So then He ate.

Sundown ended that day—didn't it? *Yes, it did!* Sure enough, Jesus taught on the first day of the week. Did that mean that this was authorizing Sunday worship? *No, it doesn't!* Did Jesus teach on every day of the week during His ministry? *Yes, He did, no question about it!* Taught on the Sabbath, taught on Sunday, taught on Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday, Thursday, Friday, etc. all the way through His ministry.

So, to claim that He did teaching on the first day of the week right after He was resurrected at the end of the Sabbath—now we're coming to the end of the first day of the week; if the sun had already set on the end of the first day of the week—you have lost your argument. The days are calculated from sunset to sunset, and so Jesus was actually teaching on the second day of the week—was He not? No one's ever thought of that—have they? They claim He taught on the first day of the week—He did—He taught these two disciples. He came and appeared in the midst of them, as we'll see in the account of John. It was late on that Sabbath Day, just before the first day of the week when He came there. The first day of the week is ended. He's teaching on the second day of the week. Are you going to proclaim now that we ought to keep Monday because Jesus taught on Monday? Let's be honest and let's get real with this. Notice what He did; He took it and ate before them; He had some fish and some honeycomb.

Verse 44: “And He said to them, ‘These *are* the words that I spoke to you when I was yet with you, that all *the* things which were written concerning Me in the Law of Moses and *in the* Prophets and *in the* Psalms must be fulfilled.’” Jesus

endorsed the whole Old Testament—the Law, the Prophets, and the Psalms—He didn't dispense with it; He didn't throw it away. {see sermon series *Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament*—it's very eye opening.} You cannot have the New Testament without the Old Testament. You cannot understand the Old Testament without the New Testament. We will see what Jesus did right here, that the New Testament interprets the Old Testament, because that's what Jesus did.

And something else has to happen. In order for anyone to understand the Scriptures, this must happen, v 45: “Then He opened their minds to understand the Scriptures.” ***The Holy Spirit must open your understanding to the Scriptures***, because you

- *love* God
- *believe* God
- want to *obey* Him
- *serve* Him

—so therefore, God will open the understanding to you.

- if you come looking for an argument
- if you come looking for justifying your own ways
- if you come looking to bring a heresy or false doctrine and claim it is true by looking into the Scriptures to twist and pervert the reasoning that you have to try and make it fit

you will never understand about Christ; you will never understand about the Truth of God. So He *opened their understanding that they might understand the Scriptures.*

Verse 46: “And He said to them, ‘According as it is written, it was necessary for the Christ to suffer, and to rise from the dead *the* third day. And in His name, repentance and remission of sins should be preached to all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. For you are witnesses of these things” (vs 46-48)—and that they were.

Let's see what else happened on that first day of the week. We need to understand that when Jesus appeared late on the first day of the week, all of the activities began after sunset, so it was really then into the second day of the week. Do you understand that?

John 20:1: “Now on the first day of the weeks, while it was still dark, Mary Magdalene came early to the tomb...” This is in the morning. The night portion of the first day of the week already occurred from sunset until sunrise. That was the night portion, Scripturally speaking, of the first day of the week. Now she comes on the day portion,

early in the morning, she got up while it was yet dark, and obviously as she was walking there it's getting lighter and lighter as the sun is coming up. She comes to the tomb, we won't go through that; suffice to say that Jesus told her, "Go tell the disciples I'm going to ascend to My Father and your Father, My God and your God." So, she went and told them.

Verse 19: "Afterwards, as evening... [which means it's ending] ...was drawing near that day, the first *day* of the weeks... [right at the end of the first day of the week] ...and the doors were shut where the disciples had assembled for fear of the Jews..." They were not assembled to worship God. They were there because they were scared to death of the Jews, that since Jesus was no longer in the tomb, the Jews would come and get them and kill them. That's why they were there.

"...and the doors were shut where the disciples had assembled for fear of the Jews, Jesus came and stood in the midst, and said to them, 'Peace *be* to you.' And after saying this, He showed them His hands and His side. Then the disciples rejoiced *because* they had seen the Lord" (vs 19-20).

Let's look at the next account of the *first day of the week*. I want you to understand is this: *The first day of the week ends at sunset*—doesn't it? And these activities took place after sunset, meaning it was *the second day of the week*.

Verse 26: "Now, after eight days... [again late on the first day of the week] ...His disciples again were within... [they were gathered together] ...and Thomas with them. Jesus came after the doors were shut, and stood in the midst and said, 'Peace *be* to you.'... [Thomas was the one that said, 'I won't believe until I see Him.] ...Then He said to Thomas, 'Put forth your finger, and see My hands; and reach *out* your hand, and put *it* into My side; and be not unbelieving, but believing.' And Thomas answered and said to Him, 'My Lord and My God'" (vs 26-28). What are you going to do with this?

Let's come to John 21:1—it doesn't tell us which day of the week it is: "After these things, Jesus revealed Himself to the disciples at the Sea of Tiberias..." They were out fishing, Jesus came on the shore. They didn't know it was Jesus until they looked up and saw that it was Jesus. He told them, 'Cast your nets over,' and they brought in this huge haul of fish, then they saw that it was Jesus. There wasn't any Sunday-worship here. Should we go ahead and use this as authorized camp site alongside the seashore? Should we now look at this and say, 'The only time you can have a campout is along the seashore, because that's where Jesus appeared to the disciples?' That's about the same kind of reasoning as applied to Sunday-keeping because of what we

have seen here where they claim the first day of the week that all these things were done on the first day of the week.

Now let's go to one more, 1-Corinthians 16:2. Here is one that every Protestant preacher loves, because he gets up there and says that 'in the first day of the week you are to lay in store. So, you send your money; you put it into the plate when the deacon passes the plate. You put it in because that's what they did when they worshiped on the first day of the week Let's see what it says; let's see what they did. Most people have taken this totally out of context, because they want to force *their* belief into it, rather than try and find out *what they should believe* because of it, two different things.

1-Corinthians 16:1: "Now concerning the collection that *is being made* for the saints... [Not the Church. Ha! Ha! What was the collection? Stores of food, grain, raisins, dried fruit, dried meat. Everything to be sent to Jerusalem because of the drought that was in Jerusalem.] ...concerning the **collection that *is being made for the saints***: as I directed the churches in Galatia, so you also are to do.... [they were gathering things together] ...Every first *day* of the week, each one is to put aside *food* at home, storing up whatever he may be prospered in..." (vs 1-2).

It means it goes out into the field and gather it in and store it. They had a specific day that they were to get and they were to bring it. *This is a day of work*; this is not a day of worship; this is not a day of collecting money for the Church. How can people believe such silly things concerning the Bible? *Well, because they're deceived and they don't understand the Truth!*

Verse 2: "...each one is to put aside *food* at home, storing up whatever he may be prospered in, so that there need not be any collections when I come." He says, 'I want it all gathered and put together and stored up and every first day of the week you do that until I come. And when I come, I'm going to take it and I'm going to take it to Jerusalem and you send the ones you want to go with it to verify that it's going to be there and we'll take it down and give it to them.' That's exactly what they did.

Verse 3: "And when I come, whomever you approve in your letters, these are the ones I will send to carry your bounty to Jerusalem."

- Having nothing whatsoever to do with a worship service.
- Having nothing whatsoever to do with a meeting.
- Having nothing whatsoever to do of a substitute day for the Sabbath where they would rest.

No, this is a day of work! Nowhere in the New Testament where the term 'the first day of the week' has been translated from the Greek into the English do we find that it was a day of worship—period! Most of the things referring to the first day of the week where the disciples were assembled, that day came to an end at sunset and Jesus taught them on the second day of the week, beginning in the evening after the sun had set. So, to use the thinking of these people who claim we ought to worship on Sunday, they're absolutely and entirely wrong. If they want to follow through with their logic, they ought to worship on Monday.

You think that through, because if what they say was true, and if what was done was true, then they ought to worship on Monday. They've got the wrong day on Sunday.

Scriptures from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order a Faithful Version*
by Fred R. Coulter

Scriptural References:

- 1) 1-Corinthians 11:17-19
- 2) 2-Timothy 2:15
- 3) John 3:33-36
- 4) Acts 17:11
- 5) Revelation 1:10, 7-10
- 6) 1-Corinthians 5: 7-8, 6
- 7) Ephesians 4:13-16
- 8) Hebrews 4:9
- 9) 2-Corinthians 11:13-15
- 10) Hebrews 4:9
- 11) Matthew 28:1-2
- 12) Mark 16:1-2
- 13) Luke 23:55-56
- 14) Luke 24:1, 36-41, 44-48
- 15) John 20:1, 19-20, 26-28
- 16) John 21:1
- 17) 1-Corinthians 16:1-3

Scriptures referenced, not quoted: Acts 13; 20:7

Also referenced:

Sermon Series: *Prophecies of Jesus in the Old Testament*

Books:

- *Sunday Facts and Sunday Fiction* by Dr. Russell K. Tardo
- *The Two Babylons* by Alexander Hislop
- *Primitive Christianity in Crises* by Alan Knight
- *A Harmony of the Gospels* by Fred R. Coulter
- *Code of Jewish Law* by Solomon Ganzfried and Hyman E. Goldin
- *History of the Christian Church* by Philip Schaff

Refuting Sunday-Keeping XI Never on a Sunday

Fred R. Coulter

Maybe on a Monday, but definitely on a Thursday. Now that may sound a little ridiculous right at first, but when we go through and understand the first day of the week even more, and look at the criteria that has been set out by Russell Tardo and his book, *Sunday Facts & Sabbath Fiction*, we are going to see that the Protestants ought to be keeping Thursday. The reason that that sounds odd is because their whole logic and their whole reasoning referring to the first day of the week and why they keep the first day of the week, that logic is so flawed that we are going to see that if you take that logic and follow it through all the way to its conclusion, then they ought to be keeping Thursday instead of Sunday.

Now, the Bible tells us we are to ‘prove all things and hold fast that which is good.’ Also in Romans 12:2, it says: “Do not conform yourselves to this world, but be transformed by the renewing of your mind in order that you may prove what *is* well pleasing and good, and the perfect will of God.” The bottom line is this: no one is going to get into the Kingdom of God unless they do the will of God. So we have to prove what is the will of God, and we have to do it from the point of view of approaching it from a converted mind, not a carnal hostile mind as we have seen which underlies all the rejection of the Sabbath and insists on Sunday-keeping.

“... be transformed by the renewing of your mind...” Then we are to do like the Bereans. It says that the Bereans were more noble than those in Thessalonica, because they searched the Scriptures daily to see whether these things were so.’ So what we are going to do, we’re going to expand what I finished up on *Refuting Sunday-keeping #10*, and we are going to examine it a whole lot more carefully, and go through all of the Scriptures step-by-step, and then we’re going to understand that the reasons for keeping Sunday have no basis in fact in Scripture whatsoever.

Let’s read, first of all, some of the reasons why we keep God’s Holy Sabbath. I’ve got fourteen listed here; there are many more that we could add to it, but these are the bases of why we keep the Sabbath instead of Sunday. I want you to understand and to notice that all of this begins in nearly every case with God, then in a couple of cases what the Apostle Paul taught. But it all begins with the authority of God, because of what God has done.

1. God created the Sabbath the seventh day.
2. God blessed it and made it Holy.

Let’s understand something very important here: **Only God can make something Holy** because God is Holy.

- No man can proclaim something Holy because he desires to make it Holy.
- No man can receive something from God, which is contrary to His will, because he’s hoping it.
- No man can do what he figures is good and right in his eyes, and require that God accept it.

All of those things, if we really understand it, apply to the reasons for Sunday-keeping.

3. God rested and fellowshiped with Adam and Eve on that day and he probably instructed them
4. God gave it to mankind at creation and to Israel before Sinai. The Sabbath is a gift of God

Not only is it a law, but primarily it is a gift. God gave this as a blessing.

5. God owns it; it is the Sabbath of the Lord.
6. God commands us to keep it.
7. God commands us to rest on that day.
8. God commands that the Sabbath and the Holy Days are Holy convocations.

Every one of these things are based upon what God has done.

9. God made the Sabbath and Holy Day-keeping a sign and a perpetual covenant

Perpetual means *it’s never going to end*. Now we come to the New Testament:

10. Jesus Christ is Lord of the Sabbath Day.
11. Jesus Christ, the apostles, believers, and New Testament church kept the Sabbath and the Holy Days.

You can search the New Testament from Matthew to Revelation and nowhere will you find a single command by Christ or by an apostle that changed the Sabbath day from the seventh day to the first day of the week.

12. Paul, the apostle to the Gentiles, taught the Gentiles to keep the Sabbath and Holy Days.
13. God the Father and Jesus Christ spiritually fellowship with the true believers on the Sabbath and the Holy Days.

14. In the New Testament Christians are commanded to keep the Sabbath (Heb. 4:9).

All of these are based *on the authority of God and Jesus Christ*, and the teachings that the apostles gave under the authority and command that Christ gave them.

Eleven Reasons for Sunday-Keeping, from *Sunday Facts & Sabbath Fiction*:

- 1) Now on this day, the first day of the week, Jesus rose from the dead.

As we saw last time, *not true!* He rose just before the Sabbath ended, not the first day of the week. So, their first reason has no validity in fact at all.

- 2) Christ first appeared to the disciples on that day.

Partially true; mostly true!

- 3) Jesus met the disciples at different places and repeatedly.

Partially true! When we really understand it, we will see that it was only three: Mary Magdalene and two other disciples. Then we will see He did appear to the others just as the day was ending.

- 4) Jesus blessed them, that is the disciples.
5) Jesus imparted the Holy Spirit.
6) Jesus first commissioned them to preach the Gospel to all the world.
7) Jesus gave the apostles authority to legislate for and guide the Church.
8) This day became of joy to the disciples
9) The Gospel of the risen Christ was first preached by an angel.

True!

- 10) Jesus Himself set the example of preaching the Gospel of His resurrection and expounding all the Scriptures on the subject and opened their minds to understanding.

Partially true!

- 11) The purchase of our redemption was completed.

Not true!

Now let's go back and look at these for just a minute:

- Is there any command where Jesus said, 'You're going to keep the first day of the week'? *No, there isn't!*
- Does appearing to the disciples change the commandment of God? *No, it doesn't!*
- Does Jesus meeting with the disciples in different places and repeatedly change the Sabbath?

We will see that there is a huge gigantic problem, because Jesus appeared to them for 40 days. Because Jesus blessed them, does that change the day of worship? Can they be blessed on any day? *Of course!*

Imparting the Holy Spirit: that didn't happen on that day. That actually happened after the second day of the week began.

First commissioned them to preach the Gospel to all the world: that happened after the first day of the week ended and the second day of the week was beginning. And also we will see that that happened on the last day that He appeared to the disciples.

This day becomes a day of joy: if you have joy every day, does that become a Sabbath? Where is the authority of God? *Nowhere!* All of these are excuses by men going into the Scriptures looking for something to justify their arguments for Sunday-keeping. So, let's take their criteria and we will boil it down to six things, six criteria, and then we'll come back and we'll visit these six criteria again:

1. He met with the disciples in different places
2. He blessed them
3. He commissioned them to preach
4. He gave them authority
5. It was day of joy
6. Jesus preached the Gospel and opened their minds

That is the criteria! We're going to be surprised when this occurs, on which day; all six of these apply in the greatest degree. Let's pick up the story and we're going to go between Matthew, Mark, Luke and John and we're going to put the whole story together and see how the events took place.

First of all, let's understand something very, very important here. All days in the Scripture are reckoned from sunset to sunset. When the sun goes down the sixth day of the week and the seventh day of the week begins, the Sabbath is about ready to begin. The apostles and all the believers, the disciples, followed that reckoning of day-by-day from evening to evening. Now let's see that it was so.

Matthew 28:1: "Now late on the Sabbath... [Sabbath ends at sunset] ...as *the first day of the* weeks was drawing near, Mary Magdalene and the other Mary came to observe the sepulcher." This was right just before the Sabbath ended, and this is the weekly Sabbath, because as it was dusking toward the first day of the week. Which means that right here in the Scripture we know that the disciples

calculated and reckoned the days from evening to evening.

Let's look at something else here, which is very important, which you don't see in the English translation. In the Greek *the first day of the week* is 'ton sabbaton,' so it is *the first day of the weeks*—it is plural and there's a definite reason why it's plural. This day, though it is the first day of the week, is also a very important day because it is the first day of the count toward Pentecost. This day, being the first day of the weeks, is also the Wave Sheaf Offering Day, which Jesus fulfilled when He ascended to the Father.

Let's come to Mark 16, and again in every one of these places, what we find is that in every case all of the writers of the Gospel account were inspired to write this as the 'first day of the weeks,' because it begins the count to Pentecost. When you come to Acts 2 God gave the Holy Spirit in power for preaching.

Let's understand that this shows us clearly that they reckoned the days from sunset to sunset. Mark 16:1 "Now, when the Sabbath had passed... [Why would they wait for the Sabbath to pass? *This was the Holy Day Sabbath, this was not the weekly Sabbath*, because if it were the weekly Sabbath, then they couldn't have prepared the spices on Friday; so this is the Holy Day Sabbath.] ...Mary Magdalene and Mary the *mother* of James, and Salome bought aromatic oils, so that they might come and anoint Him." What did they do? *They observed the Holy Day Sabbath, which was the first day of Unleavened Bread*, and they waited until after sundown when the day ended and then they bought the spices.

Luke 23:50: "And behold, there came a man named Joseph, a member of the council, a good and righteous man, (He did not consent to the council and their deed.) from Arimathea, a city of the Jews, and who was also himself waiting for the Kingdom of God. He, after going to Pilate, begged for the body of Jesus. And after taking it down, he wrapped it in linen cloth..." (vs 50-53). It's very important to understand about being wrapped, wrapped just like mummies. That's why when Lazarus was called out of the tomb he walked out with the grave clothes still wrapped around him.

"...he wrapped it in linen cloth... [We see from the account in John 20 that also Nicodemus came with some spices and they wrapped Him and put Him in the tomb as it says here] ...and placed it in a tomb hewn in a rock, in which no one had ever been laid. Now it was **a preparation day**, and **a Sabbath was coming on**" (vs 53-54). That Sabbath—and in the Greek it's clear, it's 'a Sabbath,' there's no definite article in the Greek, which is very important to understand. It was '**a**

preparation,' and '**a Sabbath**,' because we'll see when we come to the other part here, that the definite article in the Greek is there for '**the Sabbath**.'

So, this is telling us there were two Sabbaths during the week when Jesus was crucified, because that always happens when you have a Passover that occurs in the middle of the week on a Wednesday. The next day Thursday, beginning Wednesday night to Thursday, is the first Holy Day of the Feast of Unleavened Bread. Then from Thursday at sunset to Friday at sunset is another preparation day for the weekly Sabbath.

Verse 55: "And *the* women also, who had come with Him from Galilee, followed *and* saw the tomb, and how His body was laid.... [Well, they couldn't go home and do spices that night because it was a Holy Day. They couldn't buy them that night because everything was closed. It was a Holy Day.] ...And they returned *to the city*, and prepared spices and ointments... [which had to be on Friday, the preparation day for the weekly Sabbath] ..and *then* rested on the Sabbath according to the commandment" (vs 55-56). That is 'the Sabbath' day and 'the resting,' and they were obeying God. We have that very clear; we need to really keep that in mind.

Luke 24:1: "Now, on the first *day* of the **weeks**... [Here again, 'the first day of the weeks,' showing that it is the count toward Pentecost. Every place that is used in the New Testament, it means that very first day, the first day of the weeks, though it is the first day of 'a' week, so it's a double meaning here.] ...they came to the tomb at early dawn, bringing *the* spices that they had prepared; and certain *others* came with them."

Let's go to John 20, and we will see how the story comes, because we will see that Mary Magdalene was the first one to go and she went by herself apparently, and met the other women there at the tomb when they came. We have to deduce that from what we read here:

John 20:1: "Now, on the first *day* of the weeks... [again, the first of the **weeks**] ...while it was still dark, Mary Magdalene came early to the tomb... [Meaning she got up while it was dark and she was leaving her home to go to the sepulcher or to the tomb.] ...and she saw *that* the stone had been taken away from the tomb." Meaning that as she was walking there the sun was rising. Perhaps she left just when there was a first little bit of light in the eastern horizon. As she was walking to go there, it was getting lighter and lighter, and it was light enough by the time she got there that she could see that the stone had been rolled away.

Verse 2: “Then she ran and came to Simon Peter and to the other disciple whom Jesus loved, and said to them, ‘They have taken away the Lord from the tomb, and we do not know where they have laid Him.’” We will see that the other women went to the rest of the disciples while Mary Magdalene went to Peter and John.

Here’s how the stone was removed that covered the entrance of the tomb. When Joseph of Arimathea and Nicodemus put Jesus’ body in the tomb it was just right before sunset ending the Passover Day, and they rolled the big stone away. They had a big round stone that was on an incline and that was rolled back to open the tomb. There was probably a little stopper there to keep it from rolling, so when they closed it they apparently just pushed up against the stone enough so they could get the stopper out and let the stone roll down and come right over the entrance of the sepulcher.

Now then, you will recall that the priests and the Pharisees went to Pilate and said, ‘Give us guard and let’s post it, because remember the deceiver said that He was going to rise the third day, and so we don’t think He’s going to do that, we know He’s not going to do that, but just in case the disciples come and steal the body away, let’s go ahead and put the guards there.’ So, the guards came out and what did they do? *They sealed it!* And in order to seal it they must have used some kind of mortar so it would be sealed, so it would be very difficult to move the stone away. That’s why the women when they came there, they were saying, ‘Who’s going to roll the stone away for us?’

Matthew 28:2: “And *in the morning* suddenly there was a great earthquake... [that’s how God moved it] ...for an angel of *the* Lord descended from heaven, and came and rolled away the stone from the door, and sat upon it. Now, his appearance was a lightning, and his raiment white as snow. And for fear of them, those who were keeping guard trembled, and became as dead men. But the angel answered *and* said to the women, ‘Do not be afraid; for I know that you are seeking Jesus, Who was crucified. He is not here; for He has risen, as He said. Come, see the place where the Lord Himself was lying. And go quickly, *and* tell His disciples that He has risen from the dead. And behold, He goes before you into Galilee; there you shall see Him. Listen! I have told you.’ And they quickly left the tomb with fear and great joy... [So yes, they did have joy on that day, but joy is no reason for changing the commandment of God.] ...*and* ran to tell *it* to His disciples” (vs 2-8).

Remember that Jesus said He would be in tomb for three days and three nights. He was in there as we saw:

- Wednesday night
- Thursday day
- Thursday night
- Friday day
- Friday night
- Sabbath day.

Three days and three nights, raised at the end of the Sabbath. Jesus, as a spirit being, didn’t need to have the stone rolled away so He could get out of the tomb. We’ll examine that a little bit more when we come to John 20. He just walked through matter, passed through it. Let’s *know* that He was not there, and we’ll clear up a little problem here when we come to Mark 16.

Luke 24:2. “But they found the stone rolled away from the tomb; and when they entered *it*, they did not find the body of the Lord Jesus” (v 2-3). No one was an eyewitness to the resurrection. The women did not see the resurrection. The guards did not see the resurrection. As a matter of fact, they were surprised when the stone was rolled back. They were afraid. So Jesus—when He was resurrected at the end of the Sabbath—just went out, walked past right through the stone and probably went over to the Garden of Gethsemane where He undoubtedly prayed all that night to God the Father.

Now in *A Harmony of the Gospels* I have a whole section of what Jesus did on the Wave Sheaf Offering Day, so I won’t go through and explain that—we’re looking at the Sunday proposition here. What I want to do is follow through with these events. I want you to understand that while these are taking place, time continues to go; the sun rises higher and higher.

Verse 4: “And it came to pass that while they were puzzling over this, suddenly two men in shining garments... [those were the angels] ...stood by them. And as they bowed their faces to the ground, being filled with fear, they said to them, ‘Why are you seeking the living among the dead? He is not here, but has risen: remember when He spoke to you *while He* was yet in Galilee, saying, “It is necessary for the Son of man to be delivered into *the* hands of sinful men, and to be crucified, and to arise the third day”?’ Then they remembered His words; and after returning from the tomb, they related these things to the eleven and to all the rest. Now it was Mary Magdalene and Joanna and Mary, *the mother* of James, and the others with them, who told these things to the apostles. But their words appeared to them as idle talk, and they did not believe them. Then Peter rose up and ran to the tomb; *and* stooping down, he saw the linen clothes lying alone; and he went home wondering about the things that had come to pass” (vs 4-12).

Now let's come back here to the account in Mark 16, and we're going to clear up another verse which is greatly misunderstood. This is the verse where they say, 'Oh, yes, the Lord rose on the first day of the week,' which was one of the first or second ones we covered when we started this series on *Refuting Sunday-Keeping*.

Mark 16:2: "And very early on the first *day* of the weeks, at the rising of the sun, they were coming to the tomb... [the sun was coming up] ...and they were asking themselves, 'Who will roll away the stone for us from the entrance to the tomb?' For it was a massive *stone*. But when they looked up, they saw that the stone had been rolled away. And after entering the tomb, they saw a young man sitting on the right... [this accounts just for one angel, but there were two, so this is giving that experience of the one angel] ...clothed in a white robe; and they were very frightened. But he said to them, 'Do not be afraid. You are seeking Jesus the Nazarene, Who was crucified. He has risen; He is not here. Look, *there* is the place where they laid Him. But go, tell His disciples and Peter that He goes before you into Galilee; there you shall see Him, as He said to you.' And they went out quickly and fled from the tomb, for trembling and astonishment had seized them; and they did not say anything to anyone because they were afraid" (vs 2-8).

Let's clear this up. It is as simple as a proper punctuation of a comma. Let me read it the way it is in the *King James*, v 9 "Now when Jesus was risen early the first day of the week, He appeared first to Mary Magdalene, out of whom He cast seven demons." That makes it *appear* that He was resurrected the first day of the week, but all of the facts show that He was resurrected just before the weekly Sabbath ended. He was not there when they came. He did not rise at the rising of the sun, so if we put the comma in the right place we get the right sense of it.

Now let's read it with the comma in the right place. "Now after *Jesus* had risen, early *the* first day of the weeks He appeared first to Mary Magdalene..." (v 9, *FV*).

Now let's go see in John 20 about the occasion and how it happened that Mary Magdalene saw Him first. Again, we want to understand that the time is continuously ongoing. John 20:3: "As a result, Peter and the other disciples went out and came to the tomb. Now, the two ran together, but the other disciple ran faster than Peter and came to the tomb first; and he stooped down *and* saw the linen cloths lying *there*, but he did not enter. Then Simon Peter came following him, and he went into the tomb and saw the linen cloths lying, and the napkin that had been on His head..." (vs 3-7).

As I've explained before, they probably just saw the form of Jesus' body where He had been wrapped. As a spirit being He could pass right through the wrappings and just leave them there intact. What a tremendous witness that He was raised from the dead. If someone would have actually stolen the body, they would have taken it out with all of the wrappings on it. Then another thing occurred, which really convinced John that the resurrection was true and the thing that is important is this: John was the very first one to believe that He was raised from the dead.

Verse 7: "And the napkin that had been on His head, not lying with the linen cloths but folded up in a place by itself." Probably set over to the side. This is important, because if someone were to steal the body, they wouldn't do that. They would take it with the grave clothes and all the wrappings and the head-napkin, which covered His head. But here it is all folded up. What does that tell you? Jesus had to be alive to do it. It's not going to do it by itself and a corpse isn't going to do it.

Verse 8: "Then the other disciple, who had come to the tomb first, also went in and saw *these things*; and **he believed.**" I want you to understand something very important. We're going to see this as we go along. God expects you, when you know the Truth and see the actual thing as it is, to believe—right away, instantly, not giving yourself some time; not sort of doubting and pooh-poohing it, because we'll see a little later on what Jesus thought of that. Let's continue on with the account so we'll see how it was that He appeared to Mary Magdalene first. And He did appear to her on the first day of the week; that is true. But up to this time He's appeared to none of the disciples—correct? *Yes!*

Verse 9: "For they did not yet understand the Scripture *which decreed* that He must rise from the dead. Then the disciples went away again to their *home*. But Mary stood outside the tomb weeping... [Now remember, she came early in the morning, ran back and told Peter and John. They ran out there. Mary probably walked as fast as she could, it doesn't say that she ran and she got there after they left. Here she's standing outside the sepulcher weeping.] ...and as she wept, she stooped down *and looked* into the tomb. And she saw two angels in white who were sitting, one at the head and the other at the feet, where the body of Jesus had been laid" (vs 9-12). And they saw how He was put in there because they saw Joseph of Arimathea and Nicodemus put Him into the sepulcher.

Verse 13: "And they said to her, 'Woman, why are you weeping?' She said to them, 'Because they have taken away my Lord, and I do not know where they have laid Him.... [here she looks at the grave clothes and doesn't even understand it] ...And

after saying these things, she turned around and saw Jesus standing, but did not know that it was Jesus. Jesus said to her, 'Woman, why are you weeping? Whom are you seeking?' Thinking that He was the gardener, she said to Him, 'Sir, if you have carried Him off, tell me where you have laid Him, and I will take Him away.' Jesus said to her, 'Mary.' Turning around she said to Him, 'Rabboni'; that is to say, 'Teacher'" (vs 13-16).

Now notice what Jesus said. Yes, Jesus appeared to Mary Magdalene first. What time of day is it? *We don't know!* We'll try and get a handle on the time of day here in just a little bit, but we know that this is later in the morning. We can make an educated guess from the next verse, as to about the time that this took place:

Verse 17: "Jesus said to her, 'Do not touch Me, because I have not yet ascended to My Father. But go to My brethren and tell them that I am ascending to My Father and your Father, and My God and your God.'" This is showing that *Jesus was the Wave Sheaf Offering*. He was to fulfill that, the first of the firstfruits, the first from the dead.

The ritual that the priest performed at the temple was this: Right after the morning sacrifice was offered—we don't know if it was after it was wholly burned, or while it was still burning. We don't have the details on that, but generally the offering at that time was put on the altar approximately at nine in the morning. So, the earliest that it could be waved would be nine o'clock. If it were afterward it would be probably ten o'clock or maybe a little bit later. We don't know. That is only a guess. But we do know it's at least about nine o'clock in the morning. Now let's see if we can get a little more understanding on this.

Let's come back here to Luke 24 and let's see the account here and let's begin to understand approximately the time. We'll jump ahead just a little bit and then we'll go back and we'll fill in the spaces here.

This is when Jesus was walking with the two disciples, doesn't even give their names, to the village of Emmaus; Luke 24:29: "But they constrained Him, saying, 'Stay with us, for it is toward evening, and the day is declining.' And He entered in *as if* to stay with them." What do you mean 'toward evening, the day is far spent'? This is when they arrived in Emmaus. Let's understand something about the sunrise and sunset at this time of the year. In the spring of the year around Passover time the length of the day portion is approximately twelve hours and the night is approximately twelve hours. This means that sunrise is about six in the morning and sunset is about six in the evening. So the day is far spent and it is late. It would have to be

approximately 4:30 at this time, because three o'clock is not far spent.

Those of us who keep the Sabbath understand when we are looking at our activities and looking at the setting of the sun, at three o'clock in the afternoon none of us pay much attention to the sun going down. We know it's about three o'clock. But about 4-4:30, then we know the day is far spent and the Sabbath is coming on. This also confirms another thing: they reckoned the days from evening to evening. The key thing here and is important to remember is this: ***The first day of the week ends at sundown and the second day of the week begins.*** That becomes a very critical thing.

Let's go back and let's pick up the account here beginning in v 13 and we'll come all the way through the rest of Luke 24 and we will see the time. We will be able to understand exactly what happened and we will be able to pretty well figure out the time and the setting and we're going to see why I said never on a Sunday, maybe on a Monday.

Verse 13: "And behold, on the same day, two of them [disciples] were going to a village called Emmaus, which was about sixty furlongs from Jerusalem.... [That is 7-1/2 miles. If you're walking and you're a good walker, you can cover 2-1/2-3 miles an hour. So, let's just say 2-1/2 miles. That means this trip took them three hours. We know that they arrived somewhere around 4:30, so that backs up and puts the time approximately 12:30. How ever long it took—from 9-10 in the morning until about 12:30—for Jesus to ascend to the Father, be accepted of the Father, and all the ritual and all the ceremony that went on there, and the angels rejoicing, and so forth, and Jesus presenting Himself as a sacrifice, as the Lamb of God, for the sins of the whole world.

(go to the next track)

So, He comes back down to the earth now and He meets the two disciples and they're going to the village of Emmaus, 7-1/2 miles away.

Verse 14: "And they were talking with one another about all the things that had taken place.... [That's important to remember, because when we come to the term 'the third day' that's including all the things: the setting of the guard, the sealing of the tomb.] ...And it came to pass, as they were talking and reasoning, that Jesus Himself drew near *and* went with them.... [He was able to appear in a little bit different form. Here He comes and He's walking with them.] ...But their eyes were restrained, *so that* they did not know Him. And He said to them, 'What *are* these words that you are exchanging with one another as you walk, and why are you downcast in countenance?' Then the one named Cleopas... [So it names at least one of them.] ...answered *and* said to

Him, 'Are You only traveling through Jerusalem, and have not known of the things that have happened in these days?' And He said to them, 'What things?' And they said to Him, 'The things concerning Jesus the Nazarean, a man Who was a prophet, Who was mighty in deed and word before God and all the people; and how the chief priests and our rulers delivered Him up to *the* judgment of death, and crucified Him. And we were hoping that He was the one Who would redeem Israel....'" (vs 14-21).

The disciples were looking for a political solution to the captive state of Judea at that time to deliver them out of that and restore the kingdom to Israel. They didn't understand any of the prophecies. We'll see that again a little later on.

"...But besides all these things, as of today, the third day has already passed... [Sunday, Sabbath, Friday—that's the third day. Has nothing to do with the third day of Jesus rising from the dead.] (this the third day): ...since these things took place. And also, certain women from among us astonished us, after they went to the tomb early; for when they did not find His body, they came to us, declaring that they had indeed seen a vision of angels, who said, "He is living." (vs 21-23).

Now we're going to understand something here about how we are to believe. Because if we get a message from a true angel, we are to believe it. Verse 24: "And some of those with us went to the tomb and found it exactly as the women had said, but they did not see Him.' Then He said to them, 'O foolish and slow of heart to believe in all that the prophets have spoken!'" (vs 24-25).

When we know the Truth, we are to believe it! How many times did Jesus tell the disciples that this would happen? *Quite a few times when you read the Gospel account!*

Verse 26: "Was it not necessary for the Christ to suffer these things, and to enter into His glory?.... [right while they were walking along]: ...And beginning with Moses, and from all the prophets, He interpreted to them all things concerning Himself in all the Scriptures" (vs 26-27). That's why it's very likely that this whole journey to Emmaus took three hours.

Verse 28: "And *as* they approached the village where they were going, He appeared to be going on farther. But they constrained Him, saying, 'Stay with us, for it is toward evening, and the day is declining.' And he entered in *as if* to stay with them. And it came to pass, as He sat *at the table* with them, He took the bread *and* blessed *it*; and after breaking it, He gave *it* to them" (vs 28-30). We don't know how long it took for them to get the bread. But

probably they just went into the inn and sat right down at the table and the innkeeper, since it was the Feast of Unleavened Bread, probably had all kinds of unleavened bread and brought it right up to them and that's when Jesus did this. He blessed it and broke and gave it to them.

Verse 31: "Then their eyes were opened, and they knew Him; and He disappeared from them.... [Gone! As a spirit being, He could just go.] ...And they said to one another, 'Did not our hearts burn within us as He was speaking to us on the road, while He was opening the Scriptures to us?'" (vs 31-32). So, it's *partially true* that He opened the minds of those two disciples on the first day of the week to the Scriptures concerning His death and resurrection. But as we will see, it is not true for the rest of the disciples because the sun went down ending the first day of the week and the instruction that He gave to the rest of the apostles took place on the second day of the week.

So, which day should you worship on? The first day of the week? *or* The second day of the week? He taught more of them on the second day of the week than He did on the first day of the week, so if you're going to use that as a criteria for keeping Sunday, well then you've just lost your criteria, because now it's on another day. Let's see that as we go along.

Verse 33: "And they rose up that very hour *and* returned to Jerusalem..." Remember, it's 7-1/2 miles. How fast could they go to get back there? Obviously, as soon as they knew it was Jesus, they plenty of adrenaline to go pretty quickly. We know they didn't do any four-minute miles, because you can't go a mile in four minutes and continue that for 7-1/2 miles. Let's figure that they had 15-minute miles while they were jogging to get back. That means you have seven and a half 15-minute segments, which then is almost an hour and fifty minutes to get back. We're looking at 4:30-5:30 getting right up there to six o'clock. Maybe it was four o'clock and maybe we're dealing a little after six. But you understand the time how close you are to sunset by time they get back there.

"...and they found the eleven and those with them assembled together, saying, 'In truth, the Lord has risen! And he has appeared to Simon.' Then they related the things that had happened *to them* on the road, and how He was known to them in the breaking of the bread. Now as they were telling these things, Jesus Himself stood in their midst... [appeared just like He disappeared] ...and said to them, 'Peace *be* to you'" (vs 33-36).

Why were they assembled? Remember, the sun is just about ready to set. Let's come to the account in John 20, and let's see why they were

assembled. This was not the first Sunday meeting to begin the New Testament Church. There was another very valid reason why they were assembled together and John records that.

John 20:19: “Afterwards, as evening was drawing near that day, the first *day* of the weeks... [Remember, it happened just before the day ended, so there could not be too much activity that took place on the remainder of that first day of the week.] ...and the doors were shut where the disciples had assembled for fear of the Jews....”

Why were they afraid of the Jews? *Because remember, the guards went and told the priests and the Pharisees that His body is gone!* And remember, they bribed them and said, ‘Well, we’ll give you the money and you go say that the disciples came and stole the body away and we’ll make it right with the governor.’ So, they were afraid that the soldiers and the priests and Pharisees were going to come and arrest them and kill them, too. That’s why they were assembled there. This is not a church meeting. This is not observing another day that’s Holy instead of the Sabbath. They were there because they were scared to death and afraid they were going to be arrested and killed.

“...Jesus came and stood in the midst, and said to them, ‘Peace *be* to you.’ And after saying this, He showed them His hands and His side. Then the disciples rejoiced *because* they had seen the Lord” (vs 19-20). Now we’re getting pretty close to being the second day of the week—aren’t we? Because remember the first day of the week ends at sunset. Don’t come and tell me midnight to midnight, because that has no standing here. We have to go by the facts which we see in the Scriptures.

Let’s pick up the rest of the story and see what happened, Luke 24:37: “But they were terrified and filled with fear, thinking *that* they beheld a spirit. Then He said to them, ‘Why are you troubled? And why do doubts come up in your hearts? See My hands and My feet, that it is I. Touch Me and see *for yourselves*; for a spirit does not have flesh and bones, as you see Me having’” (vs 37-39).

Since He became a human being He could also manifest Himself back in a human-type form—flesh and bones. Of course, He did that to show them that it was really He, that He was really alive. This is phenomenal, because we don’t understand what it’s like to be crucified and die on the cross. This is really a tremendous thing that He is alive.

Verse 40: “And after saying this, He showed them *His* hands and *His* feet. But while they were still disbelieving and wondering for joy... [Even though they had joy they still didn’t believe and

He’s sitting there right in front of them. He’s got to convince them a little bit more.] ...He said to them, ‘Do you have anything here to eat?’ Then they gave Him part of a broiled fish and a *piece* of honeycomb. And He took these *and* ate in their presence” (vs 40-43). How long did this take? *Fifteen minutes, twenty minutes, twenty-five minutes*—we don’t know, doesn’t tell us. But remember, we’re getting closer and closer to sundown ending the first day of the week—aren’t we? *Yes, we are!*

The rest of it goes on into the second day of the week, and He then taught the apostles at this time. He opened their minds to the Scripture, not on the first day of the week, but on the second day of the week. Remember, it took three hours for Jesus to explain that to the two disciples as they went to Emmaus. It took Him at least that long, maybe even more, because He went through all of the prophets with the two disciples. We’re going to see that He did more than that in explaining to the apostles here, so this had to be into the second day of the week. This destroys all the logic for keeping the first day of the week because Jesus opened their minds to understanding. Can Jesus open their minds to understanding any day of the week? *Yes!* Does that change the Sabbath from the seventh day of the week to the first day of the week? *No!* But if it did, then perhaps you ought to consider the second day of the week, Monday, beginning sunset Sunday to sunset Monday, as the day of worship, if that’s going to be your criteria.

Verse 44: “And He said to them, ‘These *are* the words that I spoke to you when I was yet with you, that all *the* things which were written concerning Me in the Law of Moses and *in the* Prophets and *in the* Psalms must be fulfilled... [This is far more than the three hours that it took for Him to explain to the two disciples on the way to Emmaus.] ...Then He opened their minds to understand the Scriptures” (vs 44-45). How long did that take? *Well, I’m sure with all the excitement it went on very late into the night—didn’t it? Had to have!*

Verse 46: “And said to them... [here’s the conclusion of it]: ...‘According as it is written, it was necessary for the Christ to suffer and to rise from *the* dead the third day. And in His name, repentance and remission of sins should be preached to all nations, beginning at Jerusalem. For you are witnesses of these things’” (vs 46-48). That had to be on the second day of the week, because this was the finality of after going through all the Scriptures in the Law and the Prophets and the Psalms concerning Him. And besides, He taught a whole lot more than just the eleven—right? There were other disciples there. All the points that they have as to those eleven

reasons why that they keep Sunday have no validity in fact to change the day of worship.

John 20:22: “And after saying this, He breathed on them and said, ‘Receive *the* Holy Spirit.’.... [This is when they received the begetting of the Holy Spirit. On the day of Pentecost they received the Spirit for preaching and the extra gifts that they needed as apostles.] ...Those whose sins you shall remit, they are remitted to them; and those whose sins you shall retain, they are retained.” (vs 22-23).

In other words, they were to discern between those who would repent and those who didn't. Those who repented, their sins are forgiven through repentance and baptism, laying on of hands. Those who didn't, they didn't receive the Holy Spirit. And you can just put in your margin there, Acts 8, we have an example of that with Simon Magus. This is not giving any license to the Catholics to now say that you must have a priest that you confess to. By no stretch of the imagination is that implied here.

Then we have the account here of Thomas. Verse 24: “But Thomas, called Didymus, one of the twelve, was not with them when Jesus came. Then the other disciples said to him, ‘We have seen the Lord.’ But he said to them, ‘Unless I see the nail marks in His hands, and put my finger into the nail marks, and put my hand into His side, I will not believe at all’” (vs 24-25). When did that happen? Well, obviously, that was the next morning. Perhaps this happened on the day portion of the second day of the week, being Monday.

Verse 26: “Now after eight days...” This has to be going clear into Tuesday. Here's another important meeting. This is a repeated meeting—is it not? Why was not this day, Tuesday, used as a proclamation for a new day of worship instead of the seventh day? This is important—isn't it? Because a doubter Thomas believed—didn't he?]

Verse 26: “Now after eight days, His disciples again were within, and Thomas with them. Jesus came after the doors were shut, and stood in the midst and said, ‘Peace *be* to you’.... [Here's a repetition of what He did eight days earlier.] ...Then He said to Thomas, ‘Put forth your finger, and see My hands; and reach *out* your hand, and put *it* into My side; and be not unbelieving, but believing.’ And Thomas answered and said to Him, ‘My Lord and My God.’ Jesus said to him, ‘Because you have seen Me, Thomas, you have believed; blessed are the ones who have not seen, but have believed’” (vs 26-29).

I want you to understand how important it is to *really believe* the Scriptures. Don't believe the silly arguments of men. Don't ever again sit back

and think, ‘Oh, how are we going to answer these Sunday-keepers?’ I'll give you the real answer here in just a minute. We're answering some of it. Never on a Sunday, maybe on a Monday, now we've got a Tuesday. Now what are you going to do?

Verse 30: “Now then, Jesus did many other miracles in the presence of His disciples, which are not written in this book.... [What about the days that those occurred on? What about those many other signs?] ...But these have been written, so that you may believe that Jesus is the Christ, the Son of God; and that believing, you may have life through His name” (vs 30-31).

Let's see there were many things that were done, John 21:25: “But there are also many other things that Jesus did, which if they were written one by one, I do not suppose... [This is through His whole ministry, obviously; not just the times that He appeared to the disciples.] ...I do not suppose that even the world itself could contain the books that would be written.” This also tells us that the apostles wrote the Gospels. They didn't leave it through oral tradition for 400 years and then let the pagan priests of the Roman Catholicism canonize the Scriptures. *That's a fairy tale! That's not true!*

What occurred this day is a very important day, too—isn't it? We don't know on what day this happened, but we do know what happened, v 1: “After these things, Jesus again revealed Himself to the disciples at the Sea of Tiberias....” That's clear up in Galilee.

Was this after they met Him at the mountain in Galilee? *We're not told!* But anyway the story is this: They were out fishing all night, they didn't catch anything. Jesus came and stood on the shore, it was morning. They couldn't quite make out who it was. He asked them, ‘Have you caught any fish?’ They told him no, so He said, ‘Well, cast the net on the other side.’ So, they cast the net on the other side and they caught 153 fish. In the meanwhile, Jesus up on the shore creates a fire, has fish cooking on it, and has bread. Where did that come from? *Jesus probably created it!*

- Wouldn't you not think that's an important day?
- Should we not use that as a day of criteria?
- Did not Jesus teach them? *Yes, He did!*
- Did He not miraculously feed them? *Yes, He did!*
- Did they not miraculously catch 153 fish?

And 153 is a type of all nations, by the way. Remember when He first called them, so this goes clear back to the first calling—doesn't it? He says, ‘Come and I will make you fishers of men.’

Now then, what took place? Verse 15: “Therefore, when they had finished eating...” After they were done eating. We don’t know what time of day it was. Maybe it was nine o’clock in the morning by this time. Does this show we should start services at nine in the morning? Should we be outside by a lake? Should we have fish and bread? Is that what it’s telling us? When you take the logic that they have used to justify the first day of the week, when you start applying it to the things that took place after Jesus was resurrected, it all falls apart in a big heap. There is no justification for Sunday-keeping at all whatsoever, nor any command of God, nor any command of Jesus Christ. Just the justification of men wanting to keep their Sunday-keeping.

Here’s where He said to Simon Peter, v 15: “... ‘Simon, *son* of Jonas, do you love Me more than these?’ And he said to Him, ‘Yes Lord. You know that I love You.’ He said to him, ‘Feed My lambs.’” Is that not commissioning him to do a work for the Church? *Yes, it is!* But it also applies to all the other apostles as well, but chiefly to Peter because he had denied Him three times. He wanted to make sure that Peter understood that he had to love Him more than any of the others. This, by the way, did not establish Peter as the first pope. So He asked Him three times. ‘Do you love Me?’ He said, ‘Feed My sheep, feed My lambs.’

Here’s another occasion, and this occasion could be considered a reason for establishing a day of worship, based on the criteria that’s given in this book (*Sunday Facts, Sabbath Fiction*). Matthew 28:16: “Now the eleven disciples went into Galilee, to the mountain which Jesus had appointed *for* them *to meet Him*. And when they saw Him, they worshiped Him; but some doubted” (vs 16-17). Was this a worship service? If so, should we not keep this day as an authentic day? *No! It has nothing to do with the commandment*, ‘You shall remember the Sabbath Day to keep it Holy.’

Verse 18: “And Jesus came and spoke to them, saying, ‘All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to Me.’” What day did that meeting take place when they were there in Galilee? *We don’t know!* It doesn’t tell us at all. When we come to the book of Acts, it’s a very interesting place. We’ll see where we get ‘never on a Sunday, maybe on a Monday,’ and we could put there, ‘probably on a Tuesday, but definitely on a Thursday.’

Acts 1:1: “The first account I indeed have written, O Theophilus, concerning all things that Jesus began both to do and to teach, until the day in which He was taken up, after giving command by the Holy Spirit to the apostles whom He had chosen; to whom also, by many infallible proofs, He

presented Himself alive after He had suffered, **being seen by them for forty days...**” (vs 1-3).

Which one of the 40 days do you want for a day of worship? You count 40 days and you have 7 weeks and 5 days. Since He appeared to them on the first day of the week, being the first day of *the weeks*, counting toward Pentecost, you have 35 days, which is then 5 weeks and then you have 5 days—Sunday, Monday, Tuesday, Wednesday, Thursday.

Notice what took place on this last 40th day. All of the criteria for keeping Sunday fits on this day more profoundly than any other day. Therefore, according to the criteria that they have given, the Protestants should not worship on Sunday, *but Thursday*. Now let’s read that criteria again:

1. He met with the disciples
He met with them all 40 days—didn’t He?—but this one is a special one.
2. He blessed them
We’ll see here, Jesus undoubtedly blessed them.
3. Commissioned them to preach
This is where He made it really clear.
4. Authority to the apostles
Yes, He gave it to them.
5. A day of joy and prayer
6. Jesus preaching the Gospel and opening their minds

Well, He opened their minds all during the 40 days, but here He preached the Gospel to them.

“...for forty days... [being on a Thursday] ...and speaking the things concerning the Kingdom of God.... [Is that not preaching? *Yes, it is!*] ...And while *they* were assembled with *Him*... [It was an assembly—wasn’t it? It was a meeting—wasn’t it?] ...He commanded them... [There He’s giving them authority and commanding them.] ...not to depart from Jerusalem but to ‘await the promise of the Father, which,’ *He said*, ‘you have heard of Me. For John indeed baptized with water...’ (vs 3-5). He’s giving a sermon—isn’t He? This Thursday is really a better day *if you’re going to use this criteria* to determine which day to worship on. Then Thursday has got to be the day.

“...but you shall be baptized with *the* Holy Spirit after not many days.’ So then, when they were assembled together, they asked Him, saying, ‘Lord, will You restore the kingdom to Israel at this time?’ And He said to them... [He’s teaching them—isn’t He?] ...‘It is not for you to know *the* times or *the* seasons, which the Father has placed in His own authority. But you yourselves shall receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you, and you shall be My witnesses, both in Jerusalem... [Here’s

the commission to preach the Gospel—correct?] ...in Jerusalem and in all Judea and Samaria, and unto the ends of the earth” (vs 5-8). *Wow! What a day this must have been.*

This should have made this day more Holy than any of the other days, because look what took place, v 9: “And after saying these things, as they were looking at Him, He was taken up, and a cloud received Him out of their sight.” That’s the day they should have made Holy, because they saw the Lord go to heaven.

When you take faulty logic and follow it through and see how consistent it is, it all falls apart. Of course, we should not meet on Thursday. Of course, we should not make that a Holy Day. But if you’re going to take the criteria that they have said, the reasons that they meet on Sunday, it really fits on this Thursday more perfectly than any other thing.

Verse 10: “Now, while they were gazing intently up into heaven as He was going up, two men in white apparel suddenly stood by them... [maybe it was the same two angels that were there at the sepulcher] ...Who also said, ‘You men of Galilee, why do you stand *here* looking up into heaven? This *same* Jesus, Who was taken up from you into heaven, shall come in exactly the same manner as you have seen Him go into heaven.’ Then they returned to Jerusalem from *the mountain* called Mount of Olives, which is near Jerusalem, being *about* the distance of a Sabbath’s journey. And after entering Jerusalem, they went up into the upper chamber, where both Peter and James were staying... [it lists all of the apostles] (v14): ...All these were steadfastly continuing with one accord in prayer and supplications, *together* with *the* women, including Mary, the mother of Jesus, and with His brothers” (vs 10-14). That ought to give good criteria for making a day Holy.

I am being a little foolish and factious, and as the Apostle Paul said, ‘The false apostles forced him to be foolish.’ So, what I have done, I have taken *their* arguments and applied it in the way that they say they apply it and we really come up with Thursday as the day of worship.

Let’s come back to Matthew 28 and let’s see what they were to teach. Obviously, it was not to get rid of the Sabbath Day. That is ludicrous! Any man who says that Jesus came to do away with the Law does not understand the Scriptures. Anyone who said that ‘because of these things we keep Sunday,’ doesn’t really understand what he’s saying. In other words, their minds have not been opened to understand the Truth about Jesus Christ. Their minds are closed. Let’s see what Jesus said and then there are a couple of other Scriptures that we will add to it to show and make it absolutely clear that *no man*

can undo the Sabbath of God and proclaim another day Holy regardless of the circumstances involved.

Matthew 28:18: “And Jesus came *and* spoke to them, saying, ‘All authority in heaven and on earth has been given to Me. Therefore, go *and* make disciples in all nations, baptizing them into the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit; Teaching them to observe **all things that I have commanded you**....” (vs 18-20). Nowhere did Jesus command that Sunday was to replace Sabbath. That cannot be included in any of the instructions that Jesus gave the apostles. The apostles never taught Sunday-keeping. *The apostles taught the Scriptures!* Even as late just before the death of Paul, Paul wrote Timothy and said, ‘You have known the Holy Scriptures from a child which are able to make you wise unto salvation through Jesus Christ.’

There is no basis for Sunday-keeping at all:

- anywhere in the Scriptures
- any place
- in any time
- for any reason
- for any excuse
- there is no justification for it at all whatsoever.

Let’s come back here to Deuteronomy 18, and let’s read this again. I know we have read this, but we need to read this again, so that we can really get our perspective straight. Here’s Moses speaking and this is a prophecy of Jesus Christ. This is one of the prophecies that Jesus opened to their understanding to on that night being the second day of the week when He went through the Law and the Prophets and the Psalms. This is a vitally important one to understand.

Deuteronomy 18:15: “The LORD your God will raise up unto you a Prophet from the midst of you, of your brethren, One like me. To Him you shall hearken, According to all that you desired of the LORD your God in Horeb in the day of the assembly, saying, ‘Let me not hear again the voice of the LORD my God, neither let me see this great fire any more, so that I do not die’” (vs 15-16). In other words, Christ coming in the flesh was an answer to those Israelites who rejected listening to the commandments of God, which the fourth commandment said, ‘Remember the Sabbath day to keep it Holy.’

Verse 17: “And the LORD said to me [Moses], ‘They have spoken well what they have spoken. I will raise them up a Prophet... [Who is Christ] ...from among their brethren, *One* like you, and will put My words in His mouth.... [He spoke everything that God the Father wanted Him to speak.] ...And He shall speak to them all that I shall

command Him. And it shall come to pass, whatever man will not hearken to My words which He shall speak in My name, **I will require it of him**. But the prophet who shall presume to speak a word in My name.... [The eleven reasons why we keep Sunday. That is presumptuous in the name of Christ.] ...which I have not commanded.. [He never commanded Sunday-keeping.] ...him to speak or who shall speak in the name of other gods, **even that prophet shall die**” (vs 17-20).

Sunday-keeping *leads to death!* Sunday-keeping *has nothing to do with true Christianity!* Let's come to John 12 to show that Jesus is enforcing these words true to what He has said. Anyone who believes the silly arguments of Sunday-keeping certainly do not believe the Scriptures. You may use some of them. You may have a fuzzy feeling in your heart. You may feel good about it. You may have *joy and praise worship* on Sunday, but you know nothing about God.

John 12:47—this is a fulfillment of Deut. 18 and Christ is *the One*: “But if anyone hears My words and does not believe... [And He said, ‘Think not that I’ve come to destroy the Law or the Prophets. I come not to destroy, but fulfill.’ There are many people who don’t believe that] ...I do not judge him; for I did not come to judge the world, but to save the world. The one who rejects Me and does not receive My words has one who judges him; the word which I have spoken, that shall judge him in the last day” (vs 47-48). That’s when the workers of lawlessness are going to say to Jesus, ‘Haven’t we done many wonderful works? Haven’t we preached in your name, cast out demons and prophesied?’ And He will say, ‘I never knew you. Depart from Me you workers of lawlessness.’

Verse 49: “‘For I have not spoken from Myself; but the Father, Who sent Me, gave Me commandment Himself, what I should say and what I should speak. And I know that His commandment is eternal life. Therefore whatever I speak, I speak exactly as the Father has told Me’” (vs 49-50).

That’s why we should keep the seventh day Sabbath.

Remember: *never* on a Sunday, *maybe* on a Monday, *kind of* on a Tuesday, but *definitely* on a Thursday, *if you’re going to use the kind of logic* that is given here in this book, *Sunday Facts, Sabbath Fiction*.

Scriptures from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order a Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter (except where noted)

Scriptural References:

- 1) Romans 12:2
- 2) Matthew 28:1
- 3) Mark 16:1
- 4) Luke 23:50-56
- 5) Luke 24:1
- 6) John 20:1-2
- 7) Matthew 28:2-8
- 8) Luke 24:2-12
- 9) Mark 16:2-9
- 10) John 20:3-17
- 11) Luke 24:29, 13-36
- 12) John 20:19-20
- 13) Luke 24:37-48
- 14) John 20:22-31
- 15) John 21:25, 1, 15
- 16) Matthew 28:16-18
- 17) Acts 1:1-14
- 18) Matthew 28:18-20
- 19) Deuteronomy 18:15-20
- 20) John 12:47-50

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Hebrews 4:9
- Acts 2, 8

Also referenced:

Sermon Series: *Refuting Sunday-Keeping #10*

Books:

- *A Harmony of the Gospels* by Fred R. Coulter
- *Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction* by Russell Tardo

Administration of Death vs Administration of the Spirit

Fred R. Coulter

This one is perhaps one of the most important that we have covered. Every one of them have been important, this one will give us a greater understanding concerning the Word of God, the commandments of God, and the complete total misunderstanding of Protestantism.

The Protestants are stuck. They hate to admit that they're following the edicts of the Catholic Church in keeping Sunday, so they've gone to the Scriptures to try and find a justification for keeping Sunday, and they have ended up being against all the laws and commandments of God. They come to a point where they totally misinterpret the Scriptures in many, many different ways, and to them having the laws of God in your heart is just a feel good kind of thing within you. When we come to this one, which is entitled—out of this book *Sunday Facts & Sabbath Fiction* by Russell K. Tardo—

Sabbath-Keeping is the Ministration of Death

We will see that this title reveals his complete and absolute ignorance concerning the Word of God. His conclusions and reasons are therefore, in the same category. He doesn't understand

1. concerning the Old Testament
2. concerning what was written in 2-Cor. 3 where it talks about the ministration of death

So let's read some of his comments here:

These verses in 2-Cor. 3 devastate Sabbatarian arguments and strip them of all New Testament validity.... [not so] ...No one who reads and understands this passage of Scripture could possibly believe that God wants Christians to observe the Jewish Sabbath or any other part of the Law.

First of all lets understand—the Sabbath is not Jewish. **The Sabbath was given to man.** God made it at creation. This is all a part of a psychological propaganda way of putting down the Sabbath by calling it the *Jewish Sabbath*. It is not so. **It is the Lord's Sabbath.** God says it's His.

Incredibly some Sabbatarians look these verses in the face and seem to deny what they see. Walker, for example, says that Paul has no reference to the Ten Commandments here at all.

Yes, there is a reference to the Ten Commandments. But it is the administration of the violation of the

Ten Commandments that it's referring to, not to the Ten Commandments themselves.

Tables of stone and tables of the heart contrasted: The Apostle Paul speaks of the superiority of his epistles, written with the Spirit of the living God, not in tables of stone, but in the fleshly tables of the heart.

He even misunderstands this. Paul is not talking about the superiority of his epistles, he's talking about the superiority of having the laws of God in your heart and mind, instead of just written on tables of stone.

The meaning is obvious. Paul is contrasting the Old Testament law represented in its entirety by the Ten Commandments...

Not so! We will see it has to do with the administration.

...and compare that with the New Covenant of Christ.

Then we'll look at the Scriptures where God gave Moses the Ten Commandments and the tables of stone, and so forth.

Warren Worsby explains the Law is an external thing and people need an internal power if their lives are to be transformed.

That is a true statement. That's the whole basis of the New Covenant.

The legalist can admonish us with his 'do this or don't do that,' but he cannot give us the power to obey.

That's precisely, exactly what God said of the children of Israel after He gave the Ten Commandments. He said, 'Oh, that there were such a heart in them, that they would fear Me and keep My commandments always.' That's why we have the New Covenant and the power of the Holy Spirit.

If they do obey, often it is not from the heart and we end up worse than before. The superiority of the New Covenant is affirmed in that the Spirit of God applies the Word of God to the hearts of men.

That's almost a true statement, but kind of a strange way to put it. The Holy Spirit will inscribe them in our hearts and in our minds *if* we study the Word, *if* we know the commandments, *if* we understand the meaning behind it.

The danger of legalism is that it implies that by practicing mere external observances a person becomes spiritual.

Not so! We don't imply that at all.

Such ideas produce the very evil fruit of spiritual pride and exclusivism...

Let's just say something about exclusivism. Christ is a total 'exclusivist.' He says He is '*the Way, the Truth, and the Life,*' and 'no one can come to the Father except through Him.' That's as exclusive as you can be.

...exclusivism that characterizes most legalistic groups. Remember that Paul's message of grace produced the opposite fruit, that of repentance, brokenness, and humility.

Repentance of what? *Sin!* And sin is what? *The transgression of the Law!* ***If there is no law to be kept, then there is no need of repentance!*** You can't have it both ways and talk out of both sides of your mouth. You have to look into the Word of God with singleness of mind and heart and purpose to understand it.

The gospel of grace tells us we are lost sinners who cannot save ourselves.

That's true. We understand that.

And no amount of work we may undertake changes the fact that we are sinners in need of salvation.

That is also a true statement. However, Sabbath-keepers are not keeping the Sabbath as *a work* to earn salvation.

- we keep the Sabbath
- we believe in the grace of God
- we believe in the forgiveness of sin
- we believe in the love of God
- we stand in the grace of God
- we keep the Sabbath because God says so

Let's understand something very clearly concerning the Sabbath: It takes *faith* to keep the Sabbath. It takes no faith to keep Sunday. All you have to do is just go down the road and find the corner where the churches are and you can just pick out which ones you want. It's almost like auto row anymore. You don't have to exercise any faith. You just go do it at your own time and your own leisure and your own way. Whereas, if you love God and fear Him and keep His commandments, you know that ***God has set aside the Sabbath as the Holy Day, which is His, as an appointed time when you cease from your work and you come together and study God's Word, and you ask God to bless you with His grace and His Spirit and to fellowship with you.*** That's what the Sabbath Day is all about. Sunday has nothing to do with that, because God never said keep Sunday. So, therefore, they're only

fellowshipping with themselves. And Sunday when you come to really understand it is actually *a work prescribed by men* to obtain salvation. As you go through this book, nearly everything that they accuse Sabbath keepers of, you just turn the coin over to the other side and lo and behold it says Sunday.

One cannot help but see Paul's stark contrast in 2-Cor. 3...

Now we'll get there and we'll understand it.

...between law and grace, death and life. He reminds the church constantly that the Old Testament law did not give life because it could not.

There's another true statement. Law cannot give life. Law only defines sin. Life comes from God. Life comes from the Spirit of God.

Instead, it [the Law] brought death.

Yes, when the laws were transgressed, because 'the wages of sin is death.' And 'sin is the transgression of the Law.' That is Old Testament and New Testament doctrine.

Not that the Law had been unnecessary or unimportant...

Well, that's a strange one for him to say because he says that it is not important.

What it purported to do, it did well, exposing the utter sinfulness and helplessness of man. Since the Law ministers death, why would anyone want to retrogress by retreating under it?

Let's understand something very clearly. You don't retrogress to retreat under it. If you are not keeping the commandments of God, you are not even under the grace of God. You are living out there in the world on your own. It takes faith to keep the commandments of God. If you keep the commandments of God, and through repentance and baptism and the receiving of the Holy Spirit are under the grace of God, then through grace you establish law just as Paul said, and just as Jesus Christ taught. You then are able to keep the Law in the spirit and not in the letter. That's the whole substance of true Christianity.

However, though the Protestants define some of those things that way, they do not act upon them because they reject the laws and commandments of God.

Friend, not life but death is the result of Sabbath-keeping.

- Did you know that?
- Are Sabbatarians the only ones that die?
- Do Sunday keepers live perpetually?
- Is Sunday keeping able to keep them from death?

I say, no! That's a stupid statement! Think about it.

Friend, not life but death is the result of Sabbath keeping.

I've been keeping the Sabbath well over 40 years now. I'm still alive. Many other people are still alive. As a matter of fact, ***you find life in Sabbath-keeping through the grace of God and His Spirit.*** The truth is, *Sunday-keeping is death*, because Sunday-keeping is a dead work of a commandment of men superimposed on the Word of God. Which means that those who do so put themselves in the seat of God and make themselves a greater lawgiver than God. They better hear and fear and tremble, because God's judgment is coming upon them. Sunday-keeping is going to result in *spiritual death*. Sabbath-keeping won't.

He says concerning the Law, which we'll talk about the Ten Commandments and the tables of stone in just a minute.

First, that if the Law, the Ten Commandments, which was written and engraven in stones that brought death was glorious, the New Covenant that ministers life has to exceed it in glory.

In the light of these Scriptures, how can anyone insist upon feeding at the very table labeled by the New Testament itself as the ministration of death, the ministration of condemnation, the written letter that kills, the glory that was to be done away, and that which was abolished.

Let's go back and understand he's talking about the Ten Commandments and he's saying all of them are abolished—is he not? You need to think about it. Part of the problem is with some of these slick, twisted religious arguments is that they don't even comprehend what is being said or done. Let's begin in 2-Corinthians 3, read it and understand it.

Later we'll come back and survey 2-Cor. 2, 3 and the first part of 4 because all of them fit into one package to understand exactly what he's talking about. Part of the *Fourteen Rules of Bible Study* is to ask

- What does it say?
- What does it not say?
- What is the context?
- What is the verse before; the verse after?
- What is the chapter before; the chapter after?
- What is it really talking about?

Find out what it says in the Scriptures so that you know. Not an emotional diatribe such as Tardo gives here and threatening of death.

2-Corinthians 3:1: "Do we again to commend ourselves? Or do we, as some, need *epistles* of commendation to you, or epistles of commendation from you? You are our epistle, and are inscribed in our hearts... [that is through the love of God] ...being known and read by all men; *for* it is manifest that you are Christ's epistle, ministered by us; you were not inscribed with *pen and ink*... [on paper] ...but with *the Spirit* of the living God; not on tablets of stone... [such as were the Ten Commandments.] ...but on fleshly tablets of *the* heart. Now we have this confidence through Christ toward God; not that we are competent of ourselves, or credit anything to our own abilities: rather, our competency is from God; Who also made us competent as ministers of the New Covenant; not of the letter, but of the Spirit; for the letter kills, but the Spirit gives life" (vs 1-6). What is he talking about here?

Verse 7: "Now, if the ministry of death... [Now it could be translated ministration or ministry of death.] ...which was engraved in stones, came into being with glory... [we'll go back and we'll see how it came into being with glory] ...so that the children of Israel were not able to gaze upon Moses' face because of the glory of his face, which *glory* is being set aside." Which ministry or *administration of death* is being set aside? Why is it being set aside? What is the administration of death? Is the Law per se itself an instrumentality of death? *No, it's not!* The transgression of the Law brings death, but what is the administration of death? *There is a difference!* We need to clearly understand that. So let's do so.

Let's go back and let's look at some Scriptures in the Old Testament and understand concerning the *administration of death*. The place to begin is Gen. 9, not with Moses. Moses comes later. Gen. 9 is very important, because this is where the *administration of death* is given to every sovereign nation. God gave it to them. A sovereign nation is a group of people that have

- a territory
- laws
- administration of those laws
- judgments of those laws
- commerce
- a money supply

That is a *sovereign* nation. God has given to every sovereign nation the *ministration of death*, so that their societies will be able to control evil.

We find that here in Genesis 9:1: "And God blessed Noah and his sons, and He said to them, 'Be fruitful and multiply, and replenish the earth... [this is after the Flood] ...And the fear of you and the dread of you shall be upon every beast of the earth, and upon every bird of the air, upon all that moves

on the earth, and upon all the fish of the sea. Into your hand they are delivered. Every moving thing that lives shall be food for you, even as the green herb I have given you all things” (vs 1-3).

There are restrictions with the green herb, it has to have the seed within it. There are restrictions with the things concerning meats, because even right here in chapter eight it shows there was the law of the clean and unclean meats. It’s not a question of eating everything that crawls, but it’s a question of everything that is *legal* to eat *that God gave them* to eat.

Verse 4: “But you shall not eat of flesh with the life in it—which is its blood.” You’re not going to eat flesh that has blood impacted in it. That’s what it’s talking about. Therefore, to kill animals which are proper to eat, they should have their throats slashed and bled thoroughly, not strangled to diffuse the blood into the body.

Now v 5 begins the *administration of death* that God gave to all sovereign nations of the descendants of Noah and Shem, Ham and Japheth. “And surely the blood of your lives will I require. At the hand of every animal will I require it, and at the hand of man. At the hand of every man’s brother will I require the life of man.” That means in the justice systems that these nations set up they were to have the authority of execution of those who transgressed in serious crimes. We’ll see the same thing applied to the nation of Israel.

Verse 6: “Whoever shed man’s blood, his blood shall be shed by man... [his life will be taken, life for life] ...for He made man in the image of God. And you, be fruitful and multiply. Bring forth abundantly in the earth, and increase in it” (vs 6-7). Then right after that it’s no coincidence that in Gen. 9 & 19 have the table of the nations and the establishing of the nations from the descendants of Shem, Ham, and Japheth and spread over all of the earth. They had the laws of God, they had the commandments of God, they understood the basic principles of everything that God had given them. God made them responsible. That is the *administration of death*.

Let’s come to the children of Israel. We know that in Exo. 20 the Ten Commandments were given. As you read those, even one of them, the fifth commandment of honoring your father and mother guarantees long life. How do you square that with saying that the Ten Commandments bring death? I mean, *think!* We need to understand these things. These are ridiculous statements that these people make.

Exodus 21:1: “And these *are* the judgments which you shall set before them.” Then down

through v 11 he talks about how to handle Hebrew slaves. Yes, they had slavery; and, yes, God approved of it; and, yes, God gave them laws so it would be humane.

Verse 12: “He that strikes a man, so that he dies, shall be surely put to death.” That is the *administration of death*. What do we have here? The same thing that God gave to the sovereign nations after the Flood of Noah. Israel is a complete sovereign nation—with people, with territory, with laws, with a currency, and with the religious system of the Old Testament. Yes, it was in the letter of the Law; and, yes, for certain crimes the judges gave the death penalty. That’s what it’s all about.

Verse 13: “And if a man does not lie in wait, but God delivers *him* into his hand, then I will appoint you a place where he shall flee.... [This is the authorization of a refuge city, where if someone inadvertently committed manslaughter, which is not direct murder.] ...But if a man comes presumptuously upon his neighbor to slay him with guile, you shall take him from My altar so that he may die” (vs 13-14). He’s not even going to go up and hold onto the horns of the altar and say, ‘Spare me.’ God says take him from there and execute him. That is the *administration of death* for violating the commandment concerning murder by the sovereign nation of Israel. We will understand something concerning the Church and its relationship to other nations, in a little bit.

Verse 15: “And he that strikes his father or his mother shall surely be put to death. And he that steals a man and sells him, or if he is found in his hand, he shall surely be put to death. And he that curses his father or his mother shall surely be put to death. And if men strive together, and one strikes another with a stone, or with *his* fist, and he does not die, but is confined to his bed; if he rises again and walks abroad upon his staff, then he that struck him shall be set free.... [from the death penalty.] ...Only he shall pay...” (vs 15-19).

Now we come into the judgment of monetary things. The *administration of death* is *the ultimate judgment to carry out the penalty for what we would call ‘capital crimes.’* I just read them to you: murder, kidnapping, and here in this case we don’t have a capital crime. It may be a grievous one, but it’s not a capital crime—he lived. He’s going to pay. Now we have the same thing in our court system today—don’t we? What we’re reading here are the instructions that the judges of Israel were to use in judging and administering the *letter of the Law* of the commandments of God within the communities within the sovereign nation of Israel.

Verse 22: “If men strive and strike a pregnant woman, so that there is a miscarriage, and

no harm follows... [that is the woman lives] ...he shall surely be punished, according as the woman's husband will lay upon him. And he shall pay as the judges *determine*." We're talking about a legal system. Would Mr. Tardo like us to do away with the *administration of death* in the United States of America? or Any country in the world, and just let anarchy reign? and Murder become the thing that you just do with no crime or punishment? and Kidnapping and adultery? and All of those things that are punishable by death?

There's a reason for the *administration of death*. There is the purpose for the administration of death. Sabbath-keepers are not under the *administration of death*; we are doing no murder; we are doing no kidnapping. As a matter of fact, we are keeping the laws and commandments of God through the Spirit of God, written in our hearts and in our minds and through the grace of God, that we can love God with our heart and mind and soul and being. His claims are totally the opposite. This shows he has not a clue as to what he's talking about concerning 2-Cor. 3. Just an emotional diatribe against the commandments and laws of God. Whereas, Paul is talking about the administration of *the penalty*. Now we're going to see when we get to 2-Cor. 2 & 4 that that fits right in with this.

Verse 23: "And if *any* injury occurs... [Concerning if she lose the fruit of her womb, that is the child dies or the mother dies.] ...then you shall give life for life, eye for eye, tooth for tooth, hand for hand, foot for foot, burning for burning, wound for wound, stripe for stripe" (vs 23-25). Does this mean that if a person lost an eye, you would take and have the judges take the man who caused the person to have his eye lost, line him up on the wall and gouge out his eye? or Knock out his tooth? or Cut off his hand or foot? or Burn him? or Wound him? *No! The judge would give a monetary value* for those things: eye for eye, tooth for tooth, foot for foot, burning for burning, and so forth. He would give a monetary fine equivalent of that.

In today's society we even have insurance policies based upon the very thing. You could have a life insurance policy, which has sub-sections in it, which covers the loss of a limb, the loss of a hand, the loss of an eye, the loss of a leg, etc. And they will pay so much for that. Right in your auto insurance you have that. If you have \$300,000 liability insurance on your car, if you run into someone and they lose their life, then you will pay out of the insurance company will pay \$300,000. If they live, but have their legs broken or whatever, they will pay the medical expenses and loss of time on the job, etc. So what we have in the United States today is exactly the same system of judges that God had given Israel.

The United States is a sovereign nation. Israel was a sovereign nation. The judges were to administer the *administration of death* for the capital crimes, plus all the lesser crimes would be meted out with different punishments according to the severity of the crime. You can go through and you can read all the rest of Exo. 22 & 23.

Now let's come here to Exodus 22:1: "If a man shall steal an ox, or a sheep, and kill it or sell it, he shall restore five oxen for an ox, and four sheep for a sheep." An interesting point which is very good that God makes very clear: *There were no jails in Israel*. If they stole, they made restitution. Don't box them up so they don't learn a thing. Make them go work and pay back so they will never do it again.

Verse 2: "If a thief is found breaking in, and is struck so that he dies, no blood *shall be* shed for him.... [there is no sacrifice for a sin offering to justify his death] ...If the sun is risen upon him *and he lives*... [if it's in the daytime] ...*there shall be* blood *shed* for him. He shall make full restitution.... [If he's caught in the daytime, then there will be a sin offering offered for him and he's going to make full restitution.] ...If he has nothing, then he shall be sold for his theft" (vs 2-3).

Let's come over here and let's see some other things of the death penalty, v 18: "You shall not allow a sorceress [witch] to live. Anyone lying with an animal shall surely be put to death. Anyone sacrificing to a god, except it is unto the LORD only, he shall be utterly destroyed" (vs 18-20). That is the *administration of death*. There are many other sections we can read where it talks about many of the same things, just reiterating it a little bit differently.

Let's just finalize this part of the *administration of death* to see exactly how it was administered. Remember, Sabbath-keeping or law-keeping is not the administration of death. The *administration of death* is exercised by the officers of the sovereign nation that God has given that sovereign nation, so that they can have control of their society. Those people who commit capital crimes will be put to death. Those who commit lesser crimes will pay according as the judge determines.

Deuteronomy 17:8: "If a matter *is* too hard for you in judgment, between blood and blood, between plea and plea, and between stroke and stroke, *being* matters of strife within your gates..." This is what you call *an appeal*. If it was not possible to make the decision in the local jurisdiction of the judge, then they had appeal. Do we have the same thing today? *Yes!* So, Mr. Tardo, listen carefully: ***The United States and its system of judges is under the sovereign system that God gave***

to Israel. The United States is a sovereign modern nation of the ten tribes of Israel, being of the tribe of Manasseh. You need to think on that!

“...then you shall arise and go up to the place which the LORD your God shall choose. And you shall come to the priests, the Levites, and to the judge that shall be in those days, and ask. And they shall declare to you the sentence of judgment. And you shall do according to the sentence, which they declare to you from that place which the LORD shall choose. And you shall be careful to do according to all that they tell you.... [Just like today, the Supreme Court judgment *is final and you will do it because it is the law of the land.* Is that not correct? *Yes!*] ...According to the sentence of the Law, which they shall teach you, and according to the judgment which they shall tell you, you shall do. You shall not turn aside from the sentence, which they shall show you, to the right hand or the left. And the man that acts presumptuously and will not hearken to the priest who stands to minister there before the LORD your God, or to the judge, even that man shall die. And you shall put away the evil from Israel. And all the people shall hear and fear, and do no more presumptuously” (vs 8-13).

I just read to you a precise summary of the judicial system with the laws of the land of America today. Only instead of the priest it is the Supreme Court. That is *the administration of death.* And we need to understand that’s what Paul is talking about.

You can read that in Exo. 31 & 34 about Moses getting the Ten Commandments written by the ‘finger of God.’ How he came down off the mountain because the children of Israel were sinning and he cast the tables of stone down and broke them. Then in Exo. 34 God told him hew two more stones and God wrote on them again. But also there was the book of the Law, or the covenant that went along with it, which had all the statutes and judgments, which I just read you. So, it includes the whole package.

All of those subordinate judgments and statutes were based upon the Ten Commandments. That’s why Paul refers to the tables of stone in 2-Cor. 3, showing that it was a glorious administration that was given. So glorious that even Moses when he was in the presence of God, absorbed some of the glory of God, so much so when he was there on mount 40 days and 40 nights, he didn’t eat anything or drink anything, and when he came down off the mountain his face glowed with the glory of God. He had to put a veil over his face, because the children of Israel could not look upon him. But when he went to talk to God, he took the veil off.

(go to the next track)

Let’s understand the difference between the Church and the sovereign nation of Israel. Let’s read the commission and we’re going to see that God never gave to the Church the *administration of death.*

Matthew 28:19: “Therefore, go *and* make disciples in all nations, baptizing them into the name of the Father, and of the Son, and of the Holy Spirit; Teaching them to observe all things that I have commanded you. And lo, I am with you always, *even* until the completion of the age” (vs 19-20). They were to go into all nations, very important thing to remember.

Let’s come to Acts 1 and let’s see where He repeats it again. Let’s understand something very important concerning God and the way that He has done things, and why the Church was not given the *administration of death.* I think you’ll understand it here in just a little bit. Acts 1:8: “But you yourselves shall receive power when the Holy Spirit has come upon you, and you shall be My witnesses, both in Jerusalem and in all Judea and Samaria, and unto *the* ends of the earth” So the Church was to go into all nations. Is the Church a sovereign nation? *No!* It is a spiritual organization and the states in which the Church looks upon it as an organization of people under the jurisdiction of the state.

Let’s come to Romans 13; let’s show you that. Not that the state tells the Church what to believe or what to do, but the Church and all the brethren in the Church are to be subject to the laws of the land in which they live. Paul makes this very clear, which means that we cannot administer the death penalty. Why? *Because God gave that to the sovereign nations, wherever the Church would be.* The sovereign nation has the *administration of death,* which through its judicial system, it’s legal judicial system and law enforcement has the power of the *administration of death.*

Understand something else very important, too. No separate organization can be within a sovereign nation and be sovereign unto itself, meaning that no group, no organization, no church can take upon itself to set up its own laws and administer the death penalty to its members. The Church cannot do that. God never gave that ability to the Church. Now, when Christ returns, then all the nations will be under the sovereignty of the Kingdom of God and the *administration of death* for those who sin without repentance will be administered. Do you understand that? No organization within a sovereign nation has the same power of the *administration of death* as the sovereign nation. Because if that were the case then, if the Church had that, then God would be going

contrary to His own laws and His own covenant that He made with all nations back in Gen. 9.

Romans 13:1 shows very clearly that we are to be subject to the higher powers. “Let everyone be subject to the high authorities because there is no authority except from God; and those authorities that exist have been instituted by God.... [God gave the sovereign nations those rights.] ...So then, the one who sets himself against the authority is resisting the ordinance of God...” (vs 1-2). God is not double minded. He’s not going to give the Church that authority. Now we’ll examine what authority that the Church has and how that is administered and, voila! it’s all going to become clear.

“...and those who resist shall receive judgment to themselves. For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to evil *works*. Do you desire not to be afraid of the authority? *Then* practice good, and you will have praise from it; For he is a servant of God to you for good.... [to keep peace and law and order within the land] ...But if you are practicing evil.... [you go out and sin against the law of the land and you are hauled to justice] ...But if you are practicing evil, have fear! For he does not wear the sword in vain because he is a servant of God...” (v 2 2-4).

God put him there. The Church has no right and no authority to usurp the duties of a sovereign nation that God has established and those people in authority are doing the service of God, whether it is in conformity to all the laws and commandments of God or not. They are there.

“...he is a servant of God, an avenger for wrath to the one who is practicing evil. Consequently, it is necessary to be subject to *authority*, not only because of wrath, but also because of conscience” (vs 4-5).

We need to understand that there’s a sovereignist movement among some of the Churches of God today, and they need to *listen* and *hear* and *fear!* The sermon *God’s Answer to the Freeman* explains all about that. Remember also something very important here. Jesus said if you’re arrested, ‘agree with your adversary while you are in the way, lest you be brought before the judge ‘and the judge put you in the ‘clink’—I’m just sort of summarizing it here in modern terminology—and you stay there until you have paid the last penny. Christ in the Sermon on the Mount upheld the authority of the sovereignty of the nations with their systems of law and judgment.

What are the powers of the Church? *It does not have the administration of death!* So anything that we do has nothing to do with the *administration of death*. Do you understand that? Let’s see the

ultimate power that the Church has; let’s see the process and you will understand it completely. Paul excoriated those in Corinth because they went to law, to the judges of the land, a brother against brother. They were not using what Christ instructed in Matt. 18. We are not to go before the judges of this world. *We are to solve our own internal problems with the Spirit of God*, with the means that God has given.

Matthew 18:15: “So then, if your brother sins against you, go and show him his fault between you and him alone...” That is violated by most people, most of the time, because they go tell someone else first.

Step 1: Go to the person

Your first responsibility before God is to go to the person. “...If he is willing to hear you, you have gained your brother.” (v 15) Very important thing! Solve all problems at the very lowest level. That is how the Church government is to work beginning with each one of us.

Step 2: If he will not listen, take with you one or two others

“...But if he will not listen, take with you one or two others, so that in *the* mouth of two or three witnesses every word may be established” (v 16).

Step 3: Tell it to the Church

“And if he fails to listen to them, tell *it* to the Church...” (v 17)—which then is the assembly of the congregation. The minister will call a meeting of the Church and the whole matter will be discussed, and the Church body will make the judgment. That’s what it’s talking about.

I’ve gone through step one and two; I have never seen a step three used properly, yet. There’s a very important thing to understand with this: If steps one and two are done properly there will be no need for step three, telling it to the Church. Christ has put it here for those rare cases when it’s necessary to do so. We’ll see an instance in 1-Cor. where it was necessary to do so. “...But if he also fails to listen to the Church, let him be to you as the heathen and the tax collector” (v 17).

Let’s understand, very important: The greatest power of administration for punishment that the Church has is *disfellowshipment*. That should be properly done. We’ve seen it abused; that is not of God. It should be properly done following these steps.

Verse 18: “Truly I say to you, whatever you shall bind on the earth... [**concerning the solution to this problem**, that’s what it’s talking about] ...will have already been bound in heaven; and whatever

you shall loose on the earth... [concerning this problem] ...will have already been loosed in heaven.”

For example, if someone owed you \$1,000 and you couldn't get him to make any payments about anything of it. You got together, it finally came all the way to the Church and the judgment was because of the poverty of the one who owed the thousand and your need to get some money back, it was decided that if you would be willing to loose \$500 of that, that he could pay the \$500. There are two things involved here:

1. The judgment was made to loose \$500; not have to pay that.
2. The judgment was made to pay \$500 and that would resolve the problem.

That is bound in heaven in both cases. If he pays the \$500, the debt is settled. And the one who holds the claim settles for the \$500. He cannot come back and ask for the \$500, which was loosed. Please understand, the binding and loosing was done on earth and in heaven concerning the decision.

Verse 19: “Again I say to you, that if two of you on earth shall agree concerning any matter that they wish to request... [This is just between brethren. If you agree to do something that you ask or that you agree to do or work, or whatever:] ...it shall be done for them by Father, Who *is* in heaven.... [that is concerning praying for one another and all of that sort of thing] ...For where two or three are gathered together in My name, there, I am in *the* midst of them” (vs 19-20). For what? We've applied this many times to meeting in small groups. *True!* But this is where two or three are gathered together to make a judgment because someone has sinned or transgressed against a brother, then what you agree upon is bound in heaven and Christ is in the midst there.

This gets into the *administration of the Spirit*, v 21: “Then Peter came to Him and said, ‘Lord, how often shall my brother sin against me and I forgive him? Until seven times?’ Jesus said to him, ‘I do not say to you until seven times, but until seventy times seven’” (vs 21-22). ***The administration of spirit is through forgiveness, mercy.*** That's the *administration of the Spirit*. And who is the one that administers that the most? *God the Father through Jesus Christ!* Every day—correct? And stop and think of this: How many times has God forgiven you in your lifetime? That's the *administration of the Spirit*.

Let's come to 1-Corinthians 5 and we will see the background for 2-Cor. 3. Here we have a capital sin. Here we have a sin that under the Old Covenant would require the death penalty. The

Church did not have the power for the *administration of the death* penalty. Remember we saw the highest power that the Church has—because it's a separate organization within a sovereign nation—is *disfellowshipment*. It cannot administrator the *administration of death*.

1-Corinthians 5:1: “*It* is commonly reported *that there is* sexual immortality [‘pornea’] among you, and such immorality as is not even named among the Gentiles—*allowing* one to have *his own* father's wife.... [Apparently this was his father's second wife, so it would be incest with his stepmother. That is punishable under the Old Covenant *by death*.] ...You are puffed up and did not grieve instead, so that he who did this deed might be taken out of your midst” (vs 1-2). That is *disfellowshipped* because of his sin.

Verse 3: “For I indeed, being absent in body but present in spirit, have already judged *concerning* him... [We already saw there had to be judgments in Matt. 18—correct?] ...who has so *shamelessly* committed this *evil deed* as if I were present; in the name of our Lord Jesus Christ, when you are gathered together, and my spirit, together with the power of our Lord Jesus Christ to deliver such a one to Satan for *the* destruction of the flesh, that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord Jesus” (vs 3-5). Expelling from the fellowship of the Church in Corinth.

When that happens it has to be for the just reason. Here is a capital crime worthy of death under the Old Covenant, but the greatest administration that can be done by the Church is expelling from the group, called *disfellowshipment*. When that happens, they're turned back into the world and in some cases over to Satan the devil, that through the trials and difficulties that they would go through, perhaps they would repent and be able to come back and be reinstated. Or that maybe if it came to the point that the person died, that they were able to repent just before they died, they could still receive salvation. And that's what it means ‘for the destruction of the flesh that the spirit may be saved in the day of the Lord.’ That's what took place.

Now come over here to 1-Corinthians 6; here's something that I just eluded to, but let's read it about going to the world's courts, brother against brother. Paul says it shouldn't be done.

1-Corinthians 6:1: “Does anyone among you who has a matter against another dare to go to a *court of law* before the unrighteous, and not before the saints?.... [per Matt. 18] ...Don't you know that the saints shall judge the world? And if the world is to be judged by you, are you unworthy of the most trivial of judgments?” (vs 1-2). Paul is saying, ‘Look, can't you even put your minds to resolve

even just the littlest matters?’ He had to come in and tell them how to handle the big matter with the man who committed incest with his stepmother, and now he’s coming to the smaller matters and saying, ‘Look, you need to realize you’re going to judge the world. We are going to be kings and priests in the Kingdom of God and we are going to judge.’

{see sermon series and booklet *Judge Righteous Judgment*—that will give you a good insight as to what we need to be learning now in this life concerning judgment.}

Verse 3: “Don’t you know that we shall judge angels? *How* much more then *the* things of this life? So then, if you have judgments *concerning* the things of this life, *why* do you appoint *as judges* those who have no standing in the Church?” (vs 3-4). In other words he’s staying, ‘Now when you have these,’ and he’s sort of chiding them. It’s not a clear translation in the *King James*, but he’s saying, ‘You set the ones who are least esteemed, the ones who are least qualified to make judgments.’ So, even in that they were doing wrong.

Verse 5: “Now, I say *this* to your shame. *Is it* because there is not a wise *man* among you, not even one, who is able to decide between his brothers? Instead, brother goes to a *court of law* with brother, and this before unbelievers. Now therefore, there is altogether an utter fault among you, that you have lawsuits with one another. Why not rather suffer wrong? Why not rather be defrauded? Instead, you are doing wrong and defrauding, and you are doing these things *to your brethren*” (vs 5-8).

He’s saying, even all the brethren from the least to the greatest within the Church have to have the functioning of the *administration of the Spirit* beginning with Matt. 18. That’s what he’s saying. Now then, this man was put out of the Church. That’s the whole background for 2-Cor. 3. We have to understand what we’re talking about. We cannot go off half-cocked with lame-brain doctrines and not understand what is going on. We should not be put down by men such as Russell Tardo, who say that if we keep the Sabbath then we are under the *administration of death*. Nothing could be further from the truth! He does not have a clue as to what the Bible really is saying.

Now let’s deal with the problem of the one who was put out because of incest with his stepmother; 2-Corinthians 2:1: “Now, I am resolved within myself not to come to you again in sorrow. For if I make you sorrowful, who is it that makes me glad, if it is not the one who has been made sorrowful by me?... [He made them sorrowful concerning what he did in telling them to expel this man from the Church.] ...And I wrote this same *thing* to you, lest when I come, I might have sorrow from *those* in whom I ought to rejoice; *for* I have

confidence in all of you, that my joy is *the joy* of you all.... [In other words, when there is repentance there’s the peaceable fruits of righteousness.] ...For out of much distress and anguish of heart I wrote to you with many tears—not that you might be sorrowful, but that you might know the overflowing love which I have for you” (vs 1-4).

He was saying that in administering this judgment against this man, it was done in love for the love of the whole congregation, that the whole congregation does not become polluted and contaminated by this. That’s why he said, ‘Know you not that a little leaven leavens the whole lump,’ and if you let this thing continue in the Church. Whether it be incest or adultery or thievery, or whatever it may be. Then the whole Church is going to be affected and the whole Church is going to be sorrowful. So Paul said, ‘Hey, I wrote this, yes I did you make you sorrowful, but for a good cause because I love you.

Verse 5: “But if anyone has caused sorrow, he has not grieved me, but you all, *at least* in part (in order that I may not overcharge him). To such a one this punishment, which *was inflicted* by the majority *of you*, is sufficient... [He’s saying to the one who was expelled this punishment is sufficient, but it was inflicted by the many, *the whole church* made the decision.] ...So that on the contrary, you should rather forgive and encourage him... [because he repented. If someone repents you are bound to forgive—is that not correct? *Yes!* That is the *administration of the Spirit* on your part with the Spirit of God being in you.] ...So that on the contrary, you should rather forgive and encourage *him*, lest such a one be swallowed up with overwhelming sorrow” (vs 5-7).

Because if he’s truly repented and he hasn’t been received back, then you’re creating a greater problem—are you not? *Yes, you are!* I’ve seen situations like that happen, and I’ve been able to help people be restored so they’re not consumed with overmuch sorrow. I know one man that was so grieved on how he was handled and what happened in his particular case that he had bleeding bowels and couldn’t sleep at night. Paul is saying here the same thing, ‘I don’t want this to happen.’

Verse 8: “For this reason, I exhort you to confirm *your* love toward him.... [By forgiveness and receiving and welcoming him back, and so forth.] ...Now. for this *cause* I wrote *to you*, that I might know by testing you whether you are obedient in everything.... [Meaning if you were obedient in carrying out Matt. 18 and handling this problem with the Church.] ...But to whom you forgive anything... [this man who committed the incest] ...I also *forgive*; and if I also have forgiven anything, to whomever I

have forgiven *it*, for your sakes *I forgave it in the person of Christ*" (vs 8-10).

This is so that we can all be in right standing with Christ. Here's why: We're dealing in very deep and emotional things when we're talking about actually disfellowshipping someone, publicly shaming him, like he was there in the Church at Corinth. His sin and what he did was grievous and terrible. Now then, once someone has repented, he needs to be restored and to be restored with love and understanding.

Verse 11: "So that we may not be outwitted by Satan, for we are not ignorant of his schemes." Because he will come in with some self-righteous person and say, 'Well, I don't know if this person has repented or not, so I don't know if I ought to forgive him and you people that forgive him you know you're just sorry saps.' That is not the *administration of the Spirit*.

Verse 12: "Now, when I came to Troas to preach the gospel of Christ, and a door was opened to me by the Lord, I had no rest in my spirit because I was not able to find Titus, my brother; then I left them and went into Macedonia. But thanks be to God, Who always leads us triumphant in Christ, and manifests the fragrance of His knowledge through us in every place. For we are Christ's sweet perfume to God among those who are being saved and among those who are perishing; to those *who are perishing, we are a stench of death unto death; but to those who are being saved, we are a fragrance of life unto life*. And who is qualified for such things? For we are not like the many, who for *their own* profit are corrupting the Word of God; but we speak with sincerity, as from God, and before God, and in Christ" (vs 12-17).

Now you're ready to understand the *administration of the Spirit*, because this man was worthy of the *administration of death* because of the crime that he committed. He repented and was brought back into the Church, re-instated properly. So Paul starts out:

2-Corinthians 3:1: "Do we again begin to commend ourselves? Or do we, as some, need epistles of commendation to you, or *epistles of commendation from you*?... [Showing how great we are or how great you are.] ...You are our epistle, and are inscribed in our hearts, being known and read by all men; for it is manifest that you are Christ's epistle, ministered by us; you were not inscribed with *pen and ink*, but with the Spirit of the living God; not on tablets of stone, but on fleshly tablets of the heart... [Conversion! That's what it's talking about here.] ...Now we have this confidence through Christ toward God; Not that we are competent of ourselves... [This is what we're talking about—a judgment. Don't use your own rationale; you have to

use the Spirit of God and the Word of God.] ...Not that we are competent of ourselves, or credit anything to our own *abilities*: rather, our competency is from God" (vs 1-5). Paul said that he thanked God that he counted him competent to be in the ministry. He thanked God because he knew that he had everything that came from God.

Verse 6: "Who also made us competent as ministers of the New Covenant; not of the letter, but of the Spirit; for the letter kills, but the Spirit gives life." That's the example that he's talking about. This man should have been executed for his crime, according to the *letter of the Law*. He wasn't, he repented, and was restored back and he has now life, so that he can progress to the full spiritual life.

Then Paul makes the comparison, because this was just done in the congregation, v 7: "Now if the ministry of death, which was engraved in stones, came into being with glory, so that the children of Israel were not able to gaze upon Moses' face because of the glory of his face, which *glory* is being set aside." The *administration of death* is being set aside for the operation of the Church; it's being set aside for the nation of Israel. When the destruction of Jerusalem and Judea took place in 70 A.D., there was no more *administration of death* that was authorized by God anywhere in the world, except the sovereign nations that God had already given it to. Not in the Church; never in the Church.

So, how can Russell Tardo say we are under the *administration of death*, because we keep the Sabbath. You see, *this has nothing to do with Sabbath-keeping*. This has to do with the administration of the Word of God *for sin*, whether it be the death penalty under the Old Covenant where the Old Covenant and the Ten Commandments were written in the tables of stone OR mercy and forgiveness upon repentance under the New Covenant.

Under the Old Covenant there was no mercy. They were to be executed. Under the New Covenant, if there is repentance, *there is mercy and forgiveness*. That's why God called Paul. He caused Christians to be executed, he arrested them, he had them beaten and scourged, and *God called him and forgave him*. He should have been executed according to the letter of the Law with the *administration of death*, but God gave him mercy through the *administration of the Spirit* and through repentance and forgiveness and mercy. That's the *administration of the Spirit*.

Now let's get the comparison again here, v 6: "Who also made us competent as ministers of the New Covenant; not of the letter, but of the Spirit; for the letter kills, but the Spirit gives life.... [because there is mercy and forgiveness] ...Now if the

ministry of death, which was engraved in stones, came into being with glory, so that the children of Israel were not able to gaze upon Moses' face because of the glory of his face, which *glory* is being set aside; shall not the ministry of the Spirit be far more glorious?" (vs 6-8). Which is greater, killing a person or giving forgiveness upon repentance? Which is more glorious before God? ***Giving forgiveness upon repentance***, that's much more glorious. There's nothing glorious about taking someone's life.

Verse 9: "For if *there was* glory in the ministry of condemnation... [condemned for breaking the commandments of God and death] ...to a much greater degree the ministry of righteousness overflows with glory.... [Why? *It says even the angels rejoice over the repentance of a sinner.* That's glorious before God.] ...And even *the ministry of condemnation*, which had glory, was not glorious in this respect... [In other words, the Old Covenant was given in glory, but it wasn't glorious in the respect that there was forgiveness and mercy.] ...because of the surpassing *glory of the ministry of life*" (vs 9-10). That is, the *administration of life*. It's a surpassing glory.

Verse 11: "For if that which is being set aside... [it says in the *King James* 'done away,' but it's *set aside*] ...*came into being* through glory, to a much greater degree that which remains is glorious.... [The way that the Church is administered when there are problems within the Church, through mercy and forgiveness, that's a greater glory.] ...Now then, because we have such hope... [That people who are put out because of sin repent and come back.] ...we have such hope... [That we can have sins forgiven.] ...we use great plainness of *speech*; For *we are* not like Moses, who put a veil over his face, so that the children of Israel could not gaze to the end upon *the glory* that is *now* being set aside. But their minds were blinded... (vs 11-14).

They never got it. They never understood the intent of the laws and commandments of God. They only had the letter of the law. They only had the administration of death, and their hearts were never opened, because they never had the Holy Spirit to understand and be converted.

"...their minds *were* blinded; for to the present *hour* the same veil *has* not *been* removed, *but* remains at the reading of the Old Covenant; which *veil* is removed in Christ" (v 14). Which means, we can go back and we can read the Old Testament, the commandments of God. We understand that all the judges' system up to the death penalty is not administered within the Church. We can go back and look at all the laws and commandments of God and understand the spiritual

application of them, how we need to live by every Word of God *in the spirit* and have those written in our hearts and in our minds through the process of the Holy Spirit in the New Covenant. *That is the glorious thing that God has given.*

What happens with it is this, v 14: "But their minds were blinded; for to the present hour the same veil *has* not *been* removed, *but* remains at the reading of the Old Covenant; **which veil is removed in Christ**.... [Meaning we have a full understanding of the laws and commandments of God.] ...For to this day, when Moses is read, *the* veil lies upon their hearts.... [Mr. Tardo, it's on your heart, because you don't understand Moses.] ...But when *their hearts* turn to *the* Lord... [through repentance] ...the veil is taken away.... [that's called the *circumcision of the heart*] ...Now, the Lord is the Spirit; and where the Spirit of the Lord *is*, there is freedom.... [from the death penalty upon repentance; that's what it's talking about] ...But we all, with uncovered faces beholding the glory of *the* Lord as in a mirror... [though looking through a glass darkly] ...are being transformed... [through conversion, the renewing of our minds] ...*into* the same image from glory to glory, even as by *the* Spirit of *the* Lord" (vs 14-18).

2-Corinthians 4:1: "Therefore... [this completes the thought] ...having this ministry... [of the administration of the Spirit] ...according as we have received mercy... [upon repentance] ...are not fainthearted. For we have personally renounced the hidden things of dishonest gain, not walking in *cunning* craftiness, nor handling the Word of God deceitfully; but by manifestation of the Truth, we are commending ourselves to every man's conscience before God" (vs 1-2). Now then, ***we have a complete free and open relationship with God the Father and Jesus Christ, and with each other.***

That is the whole message of what we have here in the *administration of death* vs the *administration of the Spirit*.

Scriptures from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order a Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter

Scriptural References:

- 1) 2-Corinthians 3:1-7
- 2) Genesis 9:1-7
- 3) Exodus 21:1, 12-19, 22-25
- 4) Exodus 22: 1-3, 18-20
- 5) Deuteronomy 17:8-13
- 6) Matthew 28:19-20
- 7) Acts 1:8
- 8) Romans 13:1-5
- 9) Matthew 18:15-22
- 10) 1-Corinthians 5:1-5
- 11) 1-Corinthians 6:1-8
- 12) 2-Corinthians 2:1-17

13) 2-Corinthians 3:1-18

14) 2-Corinthians 4:1-2

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Genesis 10
- Exodus 20
- Exodus 21:2-11; 23; 31, 34

Also referenced:

Sermons:

- *God's Answer to the Freeman*
- *Judge Righteous Judgment*

Book: *Sunday Facts & Sabbath Fiction* by Russell Tardo

Articles:

- *Fourteen Rules of Bible Study*

Sermon Series & Booklet: *Judge Righteous Judgment*

Is The Death Penalty Wrong?

Fred R. Coulter

California is going to have the first execution of a man named Harris, for committing a murder. As it turns out about ten years ago, he committed a double murder. And all of the bleeding hearts are out there carrying around their placards against the death penalty; why we should not have the death penalty. And ministers get up in the pulpit, like this Catholic minister did down in Salinas at the Good Shepherd Episcopal Church on Sunday morning and said, 'In just a few weeks you and I are going to kill a man.' And laid a guilt trip upon all of his parishioners.

Of course, did he tell them what this man had done? He said, 'Jesus Himself was a victim of capital punishment. Can you imagine Jesus endorsing the idea of sending a man to the gas chamber?' All the bleeding hearts would go, 'Oh, I can't do that.' Do you think He would choose life for an offender, or death? For many Catholics who hear his homily and agree that capital punishment is wrong, would figure there are just as many or more who rather not think about it at all.

Then I won't go into this. He says, 'A great many people have not given it any thought.' Well, that is true. A great many people have not given it any thought. And there's something that we need to understand. Should a Christian today agree with the death penalty of criminals? Before I answer that question and get into it—because there are a lot of people who say as Christians we need to be pacifists, go along with everything—let me tell you what this Harris did, this rather grisly thing.

First of all, he was in prison for murdering a teenager. Did you realize that? Not a word here. Of course, these do-gooders do not care for anything about the life of the individual who is dead, or their family or anyone. He was in prison serving 20 years for killing a teenager, but he is such a charming man that he and his parole officer struck up a relationship and she was instrumental in getting him paroled. So, while he was on parole he told his brother, 'We're going to go down here and rob a bank.' Nice wonderful law abiding citizen on parole. 'However, we need a car.'

As they came into this Burger King restaurant, I think it was Burger King or Jack in the Box, whatever, not relevant which restaurant, they drove up in his brother's old car or truck, and they spotted these two teenagers who were not in school that day because it was a day off from school. They were going to go fishing up by one of the local dams—they had permission from their folks to go fishing. They had their fishing gear in there and they

stopped at this Burger King to have a hamburger. So, they bought the hamburger, milkshake, and french-fries, and so forth, and went out to their car and were there talking and eating. Harris comes up with a gun, points it right in there, and gets into the car and kidnaps these two kids with the car; his brother follows along in a truck. He takes them up to the dam near where they were going to go fishing. He told them to get out of the car and walk up toward one of the big conduits for letting water out, but there was not water coming out. He pointed the gun at one of them and shot him, so the other kid started running and Harris went and chased him.

Finally caught him, and the kid was on his knees and said, 'Oh, God, have mercy, spare me,' and he shot him right point blank in the head and then shot him again for running. He went on back to where the first one was that he killed, went into the conduit, and he wanted to know what would it be like if someone were shot in the head at close range, so he took the gun and put it right up close to the boy's head and shot him again and blew his brains totally out—though he was already dead—just to see what it was like.

Then he went down to the car and since he was hungry after all of this work that he had done, he ate their hamburgers, finished off their milkshakes, and ate their french-fries, and he and his brother went and held up a bank. No one has asked, **What about the mother and father of those two boys?** There is a dilemma in the blameless, milk-toast thinking of people like this that we must by all means preserve people.

What does Jesus say? Let's go to one where there is an example. Here were people talking about just accidental death, Luke 13:1: "Now at the same time, *there* were present some who were telling Him about the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. And Jesus answered and said to them, 'Do you suppose that these Galileans were sinners above all Galileans, because they suffered such things? No, I tell you; but if you do not repent, you shall all likewise perish'" (vs 1-3).

- What has God instituted?
- What does God say the wages of sin is? *Death!*
- Does God believe in the death penalty for sin? *Yes! God believes in the death penalty for sin!*
- What are one of the capital crimes that is listed in the Ten Commandments that is counted as worthy of death? *Murder!*

Especially premeditated murder of such a callous thing that this Harris had done. You've got to be callous to do that. Even his brother when he saw him killing those boys and then went up to look at them, had to run out and vomit his guts out because he couldn't take it. But Harris sits down and eats their hamburgers.

Let's go to 1-Timothy 1:3 and let's see what Paul taught of that: "When I was going to Macedonia, I exhorted you to remain in Ephesus, in order that you might *solemnly* charge some not to teach other doctrines; nor to pay attention to myths and endless genealogies, which lead to empty speculations rather than to education from God, which *is* in faith. Now the purpose... [the goal, the whole means] ...of the commandment is **love out of a pure heart**... [What are all the commandments of God based upon? We're know they're based upon love, but what is the fulcrum of all that? '**You shall have no other Gods before Me**'—right? Isn't that the fulcrum of all of it? *Yes!*] ...From which some, having missed the mark, have turned aside unto vain jangling" (vs 3-6). I will have to say that this is vain jangling where a man gets up in the pulpit and says to his congregation, 'In a few weeks you and I are going to kill a man.' *Not so!* We'll show you here.

Verse 7: "Desiring to be teachers of *the* law, neither understanding what they are saying, nor what they are strongly affirming." Isn't that the root of every stinking rotten heresy that comes along, people trying to be teachers and don't know what they are saying or what they are affirming. Sure true! I've got a whole stack of stuff at home. You can't believe it. I don't want to burden you down with it. I'm still getting the 'truth' from our mixed up shofar-blowing friend from down south. I could tell him don't send me anymore, but I want to see it to just to see how ridiculous things get, goes from bad to worse.

Verse 8: "Now we know that the Law *is* good, if anyone uses it lawfully, Understanding this: that law is not enacted for a righteous man... [says in the *King James*, 'is not made for a righteous man.' It's not! If you're not breaking the Law, it's not enacted upon you—correct?] ...but for *the* lawless and disobedient, for *the* ungodly and sinful, for *the* unholy and profane, for slayers of fathers and slayers of mothers, for murderers, for fornicators, for homosexuals, for kidnappers... [We still have the problem, don't we today—mankind, womankind, (Rom. 1.)] ...for liars, for perjurers, and for any other thing *that* is opposed to sound doctrine" (vs 8-10). In other words he's telling us here that the Law is enacted upon sinners.

Who is to enact that law? Let's see some very important things concerning that, Romans 13:1: "Let everyone be subject to the high authorities,

because there is no authority except from God... [the powers that be are ordained of God] ...and those authorities that exist have been instituted by God. So then, the one who sets himself against the authority is resisting the ordinance of God; and those who resist shall receive judgment to themselves. For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to evil *works*.... [that's what they should be] ...Do you desire not to be afraid of the authority? *Then* practice good, and you will have praise from it; for he a servant of God to you for good. But if are practicing evil, have fear! For he does not wear the sword in vain because he is a servant of God, an avenger for wrath to the one who is practicing evil" (vs 1-4).

I wonder why he didn't read this? You'd be surprised how many are in those stinky pews that don't believe in God. They are there to undermine Christ.

Let's look at some of these things. Let's answer some other questions here: Does God believe in the death penalty for sinners? *Yes!* Does He also believe in repentance for sinners who repent? *Yes, He does! Absolutely He does!* We'll try and answer: What happens if someone who has committed a murder in prison repents? Should we then give him life instead of death? *You're dealing with two different laws! Two different things!*

If he's a murderer and the sentence is death, is it possible for him to repent of that and we could say be baptized and be in the resurrection, though he is executed for his present crime? *Yes, it's possible!* But if they don't repent, and there are people who won't repent—you think of someone like this Harris who is as calloused in his mind as he is, do you think he's going to repent? I can't judge his heart. I'll tell you a little later about some people I think that have committed the unpardonable sin. You can almost tell by looking at them.

Revelation 21:8: "But *the* cowardly, and unbelieving, and abominable, and murderers, and fornicators, and sorcerers, and idolaters, and all liars, shall have their part in the lake that burns with fire and brimstone; which is the second death." ***God believes in the death penalty!***

Does God believe in the death penalty because it's really what He wants to do? *or* Is it because God is righteous and that is what He must do to sinners? *The answer is the second!* God would rather not have the death penalty. That's why when we go clear back to the Garden of Eden we had the tree of life—correct? Then there was the tree of the knowledge of good and evil. And the day they ate thereof, because they sinned, they would surely die.

Let's see what Jesus says, and this has to do with murder; Matthew 5:21: "You have heard that it

was said to those *in ancient times*, ‘You shall not commit murder; but whoever commits murder shall be subject to judgment.’ But I say to you, everyone who is angry with his brother without cause shall be subject to judgment.... [Whose judgment? *God’s judgment!*] ...Now, *you have heard it said*, ‘Whoever shall say to his brother, “Raca,” shall be subject to the judgment of the council.’ But *I say to you*, whoever shall say, ‘*You fool,*’ shall be subject to the fire of Gehenna” (vs 21-22). You can go all the way through and you can show that God believes in the death penalty, *Who also believes in law and order*. Not the way that Gorbachav has it—everybody’s so excited about what Gorbachav is doing. He’s rolling troops into Lithuania right now; *once a communist, always a communist!*

Let’s go to the book of Ecclesiastes. Let’s see what’s wrong with our judicial system today, a very basic one. Why do we have hardened criminals today? Why is it that when someone perpetrates a crime of the magnitude that has been done that something happens to them? Why did they let Harris out the first time? Those two boys could still be alive today if we didn’t have a bunch of muddle and mush heads running the system concerning criminals who have perpetrated violent crimes. And rape is a violent crime.

I heard something interesting the other day and we’ll see this, too, that never has it been recorded that there is a rehabilitated sex pervert—period! They always end up doing something again, either raping or child molestation or what have you. The reason is something has happened to the mind. So there’s a reason why God gives the death penalty, because you can’t have people like that running around in the society and doing things like that to other innocent people. They have *misplaced compassion*. What it is really is *satanic compassion*, if I could use the terminology. It’s satanic compassion to entrap other people to let sin continue in the land.

Ecclesiastes 8:6: “Because to every purpose there is time and judgment, therefore the misery of man *is great*.” We bring a lot of things on ourselves. Oh, yes, and our wonderful Secretary of State James Baker went down and he went into one of these apartheid villages to see how bad things were. I tell you what, it doesn’t matter how poor you are, you don’t have to throw your garbage and your excrement out your window. I don’t care how poor you are, you don’t have to have trash and stuff everywhere. I don’t care how poor you are, that’s no excuse for murder. That’s no excuse for any of these things. Apartheid did not cause what is going on in some of those little shanty towns down there. Apartheid is the result of what was going on. Apartheid did not cause it, those conditions existed

before apartheid came into existence and it was the minority people down there trying to protect themselves from this hellish uncivilized debauchery that these people live in.

You go from country to country to country—wherever there are uncivilized people, and I’m not talking about a race or skin, I’m talking about *uncivilized* people—you can find the same thing. The problem is not apartheid, the problem is that they live in an uncivilized manner. That’s what the problem is. They should have taught the people what to do. But most are saying now that after colonialism has left and gone, the people who are supposed to be the poor, beaten down abjects under their rule are worse off: they are poorer; they are less educated than before. It’s just like it says here.

Verse 6: “Because to every purpose there is a time and judgment, therefore the misery of man *is great*.” That’s what’s happening in our society today. Just take this one verse and think about it. You can apply the same verse to AIDS, because we didn’t quarantine it—you can go back one step further—because we allowed and tolerated homosexuality.

I read a new report on possibly the source of AIDS and it’s not necessarily the HIV virus. The HIV virus may be a super-bred combination of syphilis, gonorrhea, herpes, and cancer, especially when you have the AIDS that causes dementia of mind. And that’s why you don’t want to be working with people who have AIDS, because you don’t know when they’re going to lose their ‘cookies’ and they’re going to ‘go bananas’ around you, just to use a few adjectives, and start biting and killing and destroying.

Did you hear what one of the defenses was for one of the murderers? *He had AIDS and the dementia hit him, so he killed these people*. Good reason to quarantine him—right? *Yes!* But they missed the whole point.

So you can take this, v 6: “Because to every purpose there is time and judgment, therefore the misery of man *is great*.... [Isn’t that true? That’s what’s happening in society, everywhere you look and you turn.] ...For he does not know what shall be...” (vs 6-7). Remember when Timothy O’Leary came out and said the greatest most wonderful thing is acid? Where is he? *Same way with drug taking, same way with a lot of these things*.

There is a man I was doing business with and all of a sudden he just withdrew from business and left his wife for some quirk of reason he just didn’t want to be married any more. His wife is hanging there—terrible mess.

“...for who can tell him when it shall be?... [Living Scriptures—right? Can’t believe it.] ...*There*

is no man who has power over the wind to restrain the wind..." (vs 7-8). In other words there's no one that has power over life, to retain that life. And it's always true, the most hideous plea for mercy when someone is pointing a gun at them to arrest them. That's why there's such things as vigilante cops and vigilante judges and then they get tried for being vigilantes when what they're trying to do is restore what should have been in the first place.

"...nor power over the day of death; and *there is* no discharge from war... [There is no casting of weapons. In other words, you aren't going to solve the problems by war.] ...nor shall wickedness deliver those who are given to it" (v 8).

I'm going to put in my margin right here: rock music. How many here saw that latest report on the rap group? Most dirty raunchy, wretched stuff you could ever imagine. Freedom of speech does not entitle people to *invade your mind to demoralize you*. If they, in their own privacy of their own homes, want to become depraved, the first act out of their own mind toward someone else needs to be taken care of. Once you take freedom of speech to its ultimate, then you have no control. What always wins out? You've got new kids coming along, and don't we now have a society where they're not taught anything about God? But it's going to devour them.

Speaking of wickedness, v 9: "All this I have seen, and I gave my heart to every work that is done under the sun. *There is* a time in which one man rules over another to his own hurt.... [Living words, within the Church, without the Church, because you get too much power and you take it to yourself and you abuse it, you beat other people up with it.] ...And so I saw the wicked buried, who had come and gone from the Holy place. And they were forgotten in the city where they had so done. This *is* also vanity" (vs 9-10).

When you drive by a cemetery and you look out there, it's always a sobering thought, you see all these crosses or tombstones. Some of them even make mansions to themselves. We're so much more sophisticated than the Egyptians who built houses for the dead to live in, but some people still do that today. Every one of those individuals had life and breath and an independent mind and thought at one time, and felt and acted and thought very much like you, maybe a little differently because you didn't know what their education was, but needless to say, there they were. And so you drive by, you don't know who they are or where they are. What is he saying? "...This *is* also vanity."

Now v 11: "Because sentence against an evil work is not executed speedily... [That's what's the matter with the death penalty today.] ...therefore, the

heart of the sons of men is fully set in them to do evil." That's exactly what we have today. Not executed speedily. It really bothers me: Where do these death-row inmates get all this money for all these expensive appeals? I'm not talking about social security. I'm talking about where do they get the money to pay the attorneys to do all these things. Those are costly things. The ACLU is one, yeah I know that—they are run by *the internationalists*, those who say they are Jews, but are not, but of are of the synagogue of Satan set out to destroy this nation. That's one source.

They have lawyers hovering around these people looking for the least little excuse to get them off. But then you take someone like this captain—the Exxon ship that had the big oil spill up there. Boy, they stamped him—if they could have they would have killed him a thousand times over again. At least they had a jury that could see through it. Man! If any man drank that much according to these witnesses... Were there false witnesses? Can people take you to court on a whim just because they're on a 'fishing' trip? *Yes, sure they can!* Can they bleed you of all of your money so they can their stupid attorneys? *Yes, they can!* So, they've got all these witnesses up there and the jury was at least smart enough to say, 'Man! If he had drunk all that, he couldn't even walk on the ship, let alone give the three orders to get the ship going, and so forth. This is absurd.' But I do agree that he should do a thousand hours community service and go out and help clean, I agree with that 100-percent and the fine that he has to pay. Yes, it should be.

But I still can't figure out for the life of me two things: Why, when something like that happens, they can't abandon ship and blow it up and burn it? Just burn it! Then it wouldn't be polluting everywhere—right? If you burn it up, it's gone—right? Or bring all these ships in, as I said before, make them put in a two or three inch neoprene lining inside those tanking compartments and line it with steel belted. They would be virtually impregnable. You could smash that against rocks and it would bend and give. Make the top of the ship so if that happened it could come up and wouldn't break the ship apart.

But even those compartments filled with oil, do you realize that they would float in the water if they were towed by a tug boat? *Sure they would!* This is my day against the civil government today, forgive me. Remember I don't bring sermons like this, but after that thing when I heard the story about that Harris and then I saw this thing in the paper, I said, 'That's it, that's it.'

Verse 12: "Though a sinner does evil a hundred times, and his *days* are prolonged..." Now we're finding out that old Forbes, the great

billionaire, is a homosexual. And here's another thing with homosexuals where now they are exposing all the homosexuals that are in office. Have you ever wondered why no one can do anything with the homosexual population and problems and practices? *Because too many in government secretly are!* They all know who they are. So, if they don't go along with that, then they'll expose them and they'll lose power. They're not concerned with ruling or citizens or people, *they're concerned with power!* That's all they're concerned with: whether they keep it. They don't care what's right.

Verse 12: "Though a sinner does evil a hundred times, and his days are prolonged, yet surely I know that it shall be well with those who fear God, who fear before Him. But it shall not be well with the wicked, nor shall he prolong his days, which are as a shadow; because he does not fear before God. There is a vanity which is done upon the earth: There are just men to whom it happens according to the work of the wicked..." (vs 12-14). In other words, innocent people are involved in things which are not true—isn't that right? Just like I mentioned some time ago: there was this young couple who refused to rent out their apartment to this homosexual couple back in Minneapolis. So, they made them go down, have a lecture on how good homosexuality was, said, 'Oh, by the way you can settle this, so we won't take you to court for \$1500. You can pay our bureaucratic regime over here.'

I'm not a pacifist, brethren, believe me. I would feel like, giving them a wad of money with a piece of dynamite in it and let them put it in there and blow the thing up, because that's extortion and an extraction to me.

"...there are wicked ones to whom it happens according to the work of the righteous. I said that this also *is* vanity. Then I commended pleasure, because a man has no better thing under the sun than to eat and to drink and to be merry; for that shall go with him in his labor through the days of his life which God gives him under the sun. When I applied my heart to know wisdom, and to see the business that is done upon the earth, for neither day nor night do men give sleep to their eyes. Then I looked at all the work of God, that a man cannot find out the work that is done under the sun; because though a man labors to seek *it* out, yet he shall not find it. Yea, further, though a wise man thinks to know it, yet he shall not be able to find *it*" (vs 14-17).

That's getting into scientific endeavors. Isn't it true today they are absolutely astounded; they don't know what to think about the universe now with all the things they have found out there.

Let's go back to this thing of capital punishment and while we're at it, let's touch a little

bit on insurance, because there's someone out there writing and saying that if you have insurance you are serving the devil. Did you know that? *Any kind of insurance, because you're not trusting in God!* Do you know that? *Nonsense!* It's not a matter of my lack of trust in God that I have insurance, it's because I don't I don't trust the other guy out there who doesn't believe in God—right? Got to have it for him—right? *Sure!*

Genesis 9 is the basis for capital punishment this side of the Flood. There has to be in any society that does not have capital punishment to execute the wicked, sooner or later they're going to be overwhelmed, especially in a country like America where you bring every nationality in the world here. You know why they're bringing them into in America, and especially into California? Can you believe it, the United States said we are going to take half of the Vietnamese refugees that are coming out of Hong Kong because we're so good and kind and loving that we don't want to see them go back to Vietnam.

There's a program on, brethren, to pack the United States with so many people that when it comes time for us to submit to the United Nations, they will do it willingly. That's what it's for. There are so many things going on, it is incredible! Makes me want to go to my cave in the Sawtooth Mountains. But you can't get away from them, because there may be an earthquake and then I'd be squished flesh between the stones in a cave. So can't have that.

Genesis 9:5: "And surely the blood of your lives will I require.... [the powers to be (Rom. 13)] ...At the hand of every animal will I require it, and at the hand of man. At the hand of every man's brother will I require the life of man. Whoever sheds man's blood, his blood shall be shed by man..." (vs 5-6). There you go. Who was Jesus before He became Jesus? *He was the God of the Old Testament!*

By the way, I got a letter the other day, which I'll have to bring a sermon on—these things cycle around—that the first creation of God was Jesus, and Jesus was not God.

This is not for Israel. This is not for the Jews, this was *for all nations*, because through Noah and his sons the whole earth was overspread—correct? Here's the first instruction given that God gives and he says, v 6: "Whoever sheds man's blood, his blood shall be shed by man—for He made man in the image of God." That's why! Because some human being had the audacity to murder someone who was made in the image of God, that's why their life is required. We've kicked that out, so all we have is evolution—right? So, maybe he'll evolve to be a better person while he's in jail. We're

all waiting for the evolution of Charlie Manson—right? I'm not going to hold one breath for him.

There it is right there. That's what He commanded everyone to do. Why? *God was interested in the welfare of human beings*, and you don't have murderers running around. This was given to Israel. We're going to see some things in here. We'll cover some of these judgments. We covered them several years ago, going over some of these things.

Exodus 21:12: "He that strikes a man, so that he dies, shall be surely put to death." Why? *Because he's made in the image of God*, that's why. In other words, *that is God's sentence*. How dare anyone take someone's life by premeditated murder that God has brought into existence into this world. So therefore God says that your life is going to be taken. That's it!

- Could a Christian then accept the death penalty in the community that he is in?
Yes, he could!
- Could you sit on a jury and deem someone worthy of death for a murder?
Yes, you could!

He makes it clear that this is premeditated murder where you lie in wait for him or you think about it or whatever and then you go and seek out and murder this person.

(go to the next track)

Verse 13: "And if a man does not lie in wait, but God delivers *him* into his hand... [What does this mean? Have you ever thought about that?] ...then I will appoint you a place where he shall flee."

Do you remember the case of this father in Texas whose son was kidnapped and raped and killed by this pervert? I'm sure you remember a little bit about it. They even showed it on television where this man knew that he (the pervert) was captured and being brought into the airport, handcuffed by the police, and he stood there and when he (the pervert) came by he shot him dead. I would say God delivered him into his hands. I think the jury in Texas agreed and did not put any penalty upon him. At least there are some people down there who agree a little bit with the Bible. God does allow, in the Old Testament, vengeance by a relative—not in the New Testament, but in the Old Testament—if you knew who did it, you could go get him.

"...then I will appoint you a place where he shall flee.... [They had to flee to these special safety cities and there they had the hearing. There is where the trial was to be conducted to determine the facts of the case.] ...But if a man comes presumptuously upon his neighbor to slay him with guile, you shall

take him from My altar so that he may die" (vs 13-14). Don't come to God, in the name of God and say, 'Oh, let's have compassion upon these poor criminals.' God says even if they are 'holding onto My altar,' you're going to rip their hands off of that altar and take them out and execute them. That doesn't give you much leeway—does it? To me, cruel and unusual punishment is to be in one of these cells and live your whole life in one of those cells.

Verse 15: "And he that strikes his father or his mother shall surely be put to death.... [That would sure change a lot of things today—wouldn't it?] ...And he that steals a man [person] and sells him, or if he is found in his hand, he shall surely be put to death" (vs 15-16). That's what you do with these kidnapers, and how many kids have been taken? We still have them. There's this Michelle right around here near Danville, she's still missing. A lot of these children end up being sacrifices for satanic services. Of course, the officials deny it because many of them are in on it.

How many saw that report that Geraldo Rivera did on the satanists? Did any of you watch that? Remember that? Oh, that was something! That was absolutely something! They have women who have testified that they gave birth to babies to be sacrificed on Satan's altar in these homes, and that they would go out and kidnap little kids and they would be sacrificed and eaten and then burned. And it's happening today! That is happening! Where have all the children gone? You separate out all of those that are in divorce problems and one of the parents take them and they're well taken care of by one of the other parent someplace else, but those are easy enough to find. That's the exception, that's not the rule. That's what they're doing. That's why God says put them to death so they don't do these things.

Verse 17: "And he that curses his father or his mother shall surely be put to death.... [You could save a lot of rebellious societies—couldn't you?—if that were the case.] ...And if men strive together, and one strikes another with a stone, or with *his* fist, and he does not die, but is confined to his bed; if he rises again and walks abroad upon his staff, then he that struck him shall be set free.... [That is from the death penalty, because he lived.] ...Only he shall pay for the loss of his time and shall cause *him* to be completely healed" (vs 17-19).

That's what it should be. There should be prisons only for holding tanks for those who are awaiting trial. Then they should go to someplace where they could work and repair the damage that they have done by their work and their labor and their pay to make restitution to the victim. That's the whole basis of God's law: *restitution to the victim!* And if you had that, you wouldn't have any need for

prisons. All those who had premeditated murder, who did things worthy of death, would be executed. That would be it.

Verse 20: “And if a man strikes his servant or his maidservant with a rod and he dies under his hand, he shall surely be punished. But if he continues a day or two, he shall not be punished, for he is his money. If men strive and strike a pregnant woman...” (vs 20-22). We could get into this concerning abortion, and why is it that these maudlin people, who do not believe in killing the criminals, *believe in killing the unborn* that have not even had a chance to live a life whether good or bad? Because of their own inherent selfishness, destroy them. I’m so glad that Idaho passed that law here, good for them. Hooray for Idaho!

“...If men strive and strike a pregnant woman, so that there is miscarriage, and no harm follows... [the baby lives and the woman lives] ...he shall surely be punished, according as the woman’s husband will lay upon him.... [The victims have a right in the judgment—right? *Yes, indeed!* So, we have victim’s rights.] ...And he shall pay as the judges *determine*” (vs 20-22).

There should be payment for those things, but today we have it all backwards. It’s not you and I against the murder of our children, it is the state *vs* so-and-so and you don’t have a say so in it. The state has taken over your right. The state gets the fine. The state gets the penalty—right? *Not you!* Today women get raped, have to go on the stand and testify, nothing is made to make their life right again, but they have to go through all this nonsense with this rapist. A lot of them out there taking drugs and different things so they have essential power beyond belief. I don’t know how these guys can go out and rape these women. It’s just beyond me. Any man that has that kind of activity while he’s hurting someone else, there’s something wrong up here [in the mind] with him. That’s why God says they need to be executed.

Verse 23: “And if *any* injury occurs, then you shall give life for life... [it’s based upon life] ...Eye for eye, tooth for tooth, hand for hand, foot for foot, burning for burning, wound for wound, stripe for stripe” (vs 23-25). As the judge determines, you shall pay. If you lost a limb, you don’t want someone else to lose a limb, but you want it to be made right because now you can’t use your limb. That’s why we have insurance. And you read it: so much for the loss of an arm, so much for the loss of a hand, for two legs, for two arms. Insurance is not ungodly; *insurance is a Godly thing to do* so that you not only protect yourself from other people, but that you have a means to protect others in case you do something. What if your car goes out here and

something just goes haywire with it, you can’t control it and you can’t stop it, and you run someone over? Aren’t you glad you have some insurance to pay, to make restitution for that person? Generally, it goes to the victim. The insurance company has the right means and it generally goes to the victim, unless you get it all tied up in litigation and courts, and things like this, and then it goes to the attorney. Then some goes to the victim.

Then it talks about ox goring, it talks about many other things here that should be done. It talks about theft and it talks about the repayment of that.

Exodus 22:2—if you steal you restore. “If a thief is found breaking in, and is struck so that he dies, no blood *shall be* shed for him. If the sun is risen upon him, *and he lives, there shall be* blood *shed* for him. He shall make full restitution.... [Isn’t that interesting? *Full restitution!*] ...If he has nothing, then he shall be sold for his theft” (vs 2-3).

Believe it or not, brethren, God is for indentured servitude to make it right for your victim. God is for that. I’m for that. I think that would be a great system. Get these people out of these stupid prisons where they stay at these bars and guards, and if they’ve done nothing unto death, make them get out and work. Make them make full restitution. That would work good, not turn it into the mean gang, of some of these things like you’ve seen with these prison gang movies where they go out and work on the railroad and they’re beaten and they’re abused. No, I’m not talking about that. Let them work, let them learn. They did one thing over here, in Santa Rita, they’re having some of those who are in for lesser crimes get their diploma. I think that’s a good thing; teach them some skills. I think that is good, absolutely. Let them work. Let them make full restitution. Let them work for the government for ten years and let the government make payments out of their salary toward these people’s injury or whatever it may be.

Verse 4: “If the theft is certainly found in his hand alive, whether it is an ox, or a donkey, or a sheep, he shall restore double. If a man causes a field or vineyard to be eaten, and shall put in his animal, and shall feed in another man’s field; he shall make full restitution from the best of his own field, and the best of his own vineyard” (vs 4-5). That’s a good law. You have some jerk over here, doesn’t take care of his farm. Looks over here and here’s a guy working real hard and he’s got good fodder, he’s got good hay, he’s got good crops. So, he opens the gate and let’s his sheep run in there and his cattle run in there and they get fat on the other guy’s grass. Well, God says you’re not going to get fat on someone else’s grass. You go get the best of your grass and you go make it right. Good law!

Speaking of grass: I think they should do one thing, now this is one of my own little pet peeves to save the environment and that is, instead of going around spraying for weeds and trying to put out all these forest fires—there are a few places where they have it that you have either sheep or goats. You have a temporary fence that you move along with it, but you let them eat everything down where all this high grass grows. They have cheap meat—right? Then you stop all these forest fires. You could have some of these criminals make their money, go on out and pick up the dead wood and the dead branches, and all the stuff that falls to the forest floor, keep the forest clean.

Verse 7: “If a man shall deliver to his neighbor silver or stuff to keep, and it is stolen out of the man’s house; if the thief is found, let him pay double. If the thief is not found, then the master of the house shall be brought to the judges, whether he has put his hand to his neighbor’s goods” (vs 7-8). Nothing like a little S & L scandal—huh? Now they’re trying to come back and stop all the thievery that’s been going on by declaring that the appointment of the new director to save the S&Ls was not constitutionally appointed correctly, so therefore, now we’re going to give all of these back to them and all these thieves are going to be let go.

“...whether he has put his hand to his neighbor’s goods; for every case of trespass, *whether it is* for ox, for donkey, for sheep, for clothing, for any kind of lost thing, *which another* claims to be his, the cause of both parties shall come before the judges. Whom the judges shall condemn, he shall pay double to his neighbor” (vs 8-9). You’d have a nice neighborhood watch—wouldn’t you? Don’t have to worry about thieves coming. Everybody would be watching out for everybody else—wouldn’t you? *Yes, indeed!* Don’t you think the parents would take care of their dirty thieving kids? *Yes, they would!* And don’t you think that every lawn mower that has been borrowed would be brought back? *Yes, it should!*

I had pity on a man, he came over, it was a man I knew long years ago, he came over and he was a poor man, and he said, ‘Do you still have your rotor tiller?’ I said, ‘Yes, I have my rotor tiller.’ He said, ‘Well, could I borrow it? I want to work up my garden.’ I said, ‘Yeah, you can borrow my rotor tiller, just take care of it,’ and so forth. He brought it back and everything. I didn’t use it all that year, because he did it in the fall. But next spring guess what? He blew out the head gasket. The motor was gone. I didn’t know where he lived. And guess what? My wife said, ‘I told you, I told you.’ It cost me \$240. I should have two brand new rotor tillers—right? According to this.

Verse 10: “If a man delivers to his neighbor a donkey, or an ox, or a sheep, or any animal to keep, and it dies, or is hurt, or driven away, no one seeing, an oath of the LORD shall be between them both, that he has not put his hand to his neighbor’s goods. And the owner of it shall accept it, and he shall not make *it* good. And if it is stolen from him, he shall make full restitution to the owner of it. If it is torn in pieces, let him bring it for witness, *and* he shall not make good that which was torn.... [if it’s not his fault] ...And if a man borrows it from his neighbor, and it is hurt, or dies, and the owner of it *is* not with it, he shall surely make full restitution. If the owner of it is with it, he shall not make restitution.... [because he was there and could witness how the animal was being treated. So, my rotor tiller should have been made good, because I was not with it and it was brought back injured.] ...If it was hired, it came for its hire” (vs 10-15).

The cost of the hire takes care of it. If it breaks down, then it’s okay. If you hired out an ox and you plow and it drops dead in its tracks, come and pick it up, I hired him.

But if he loans it to you and he’s not there with it and he drops dead in his tracks, then you’re going to make it good. How many have seen these huge oxen? How many have seen these tall, tall oxen, just about two feet below this ceiling right here? That’s where the shoulder is, huge! Boy, can they work. There was a pair of them when we lived up in Poulsbo, Washington. There was one guy that did everything with oxen, and we heard stories about how big these things were. So, as kids we went up there one day to watch them, and those things are gigantic. They could go up and they’d just toil right along and do everything with the oxen. I was scared to death. I was 9-years-old and I looked up and here’s this great huge oxen. You get up on a fence and you look in there and this big old head comes up to you, breathing on you. I used to use horses to plow, so I was used to animals, but that thing was huge. Can you imagine repaying that? Can you imagine if you had one of those and it dropped over dead in your field, repaying that? Wow!

Verse 16: “And if a man lures a virgin who is not promised, and lies with her, he shall surely endow her to be his wife... [You could stop all this welfare stuff. There was one man who went around and bragged that he brought 47 children into this world. ‘Where are they? Are you married?’ *No, they’re all on welfare, man!* And you and I pay for it! if there’s hanky-panky, marry him. Stop a lot of hanky-panky—wouldn’t it?] ...If her father utterly refuses to give her to him, he shall pay money according to the dowry of virgins” (vs 16-17). So, the father has some say so here.

Verse 18: “You shall not allow a sorceress [witch] to live... [That’s another whole topic there and you can see why.] ...Anyone lying with an animal shall surely be put to death... [Why? *Because he’s got a perverted mind!* You can’t have perverted minds running around in the society.] ...Anyone sacrificing to a god, except it is unto the LORD only, he shall be utterly destroyed. You shall neither vex a stranger nor oppress him, for you were strangers in the land of Egypt. You shall not afflict any widow or fatherless child” (vs 18-22).

I saw a thing on child labor on the Discovery Channel. Don’t think I’m sitting watching TV all the time, I’m not, but when I do watch it a lot of it I remember because it’s noteworthy of remembering. It was showing the child labor in this world that they talked to one poor kid down there in Columbia. He had never gone to school, he was 12-years-old, and had been working in his family brick factory for six years and that’s all he knows—making bricks, carrying bricks, lifting bricks. And other kids working in different places in the world that they don’t know anything but that one little thing that they’re taught and they’re brought into it right away. That really got to me. Those poor kids, they don’t even have a chance to do anything.

Then on the other hand, we take kids away from their parents and throw them into these state schools and make them brainless nincompoops worth nothing. It’s happening in the society today. They don’t believe in God, they don’t believe in what is right. When they hit about that junior year in high school, look out, you’ve got your hands full. That’s just the way it is. I’ve had mine full, so I’m not telling anything new. I hope you understand that.

Verse 23: “If you afflict them in any way, and they cry at all to Me, I will surely hear their cry. And My wrath shall burn, and I will kill you with the sword, and your wives shall be widows, and your sons fatherless. If you lend money to one of My people who is poor among you, you shall not be to him as a money-lender...” (vs 23-25).

I just had one experience with that. These people have to come in and they have a note that they have to pay off by the 13th of April. I said, ‘Well, bring me a copy of the note, because I have to have it so we can put it in with the application to show,’ and everything like that. So, they brought this note down and it was for \$11,000, zero interest for one year unrecorded. Now, whenever you have an unrecorded note that’s against a piece of property and it’s zero percent, you ought to have your antenna up. And I did, so I nicely asked them, ‘Well, oh, this was something, he didn’t charge any interest for one year.’ But he also had him sign all kinds of disclaimers. They know that in signing this note that they could lose their home, that they could have their

salary garnished and everything. They had to initial about ten different things like that accompanying the note.

So he said, ‘Well, we were in trouble a year ago. It was a one-year note for no interest and they loaned us \$5,000 and we signed the note for \$11,000.’ ***That is usury!*** These poor people are having a hard time. I hope I can rescue them and get them out from underneath it. I hope they have enough income, but their credit is really pretty lousy. Today you ask people, ‘How’s your credit?’ ‘Oh, it’s good.’ To them that means maybe the last six months. It’s all relative. Lenders want to know has it been good for two years or more. I hope I can help them, but I really felt sorry for those people. Here they have this note with zero percent and you look at that, ‘Boy, that was nice of that person to lend you \$11,000 at no interest for one year.’ No, we got \$5,000. That would be a 120% interest.

Verse 25: “If you lend money to one of My people who *is* poor among you, you shall not be to him as a money-lender, neither shall you lay upon him interest. If you at all take your neighbor’s clothing as a pledge, you shall deliver it to him by the time the sun goes down; for that *is* his covering only, it is his clothing for his skin. In what shall he sleep?.... [In other words, you’re not going to take the clothes off a man’s back. That’s where the saying comes.] ...In what shall he sleep? And it will be, when he cries to Me, I will hear, for I *am* gracious. You shall not revile God’s *judges* nor curse the ruler of your people. You shall not delay to *offer* the first of your ripe fruits...” (vs 25-29).

Then he gets into other things concerning day-to-day things. Exodus 23:1: “You shall not raise a false report. Do not put your hand with the wicked to be an unrighteous witness.... [If you know anything about Masonry at all, you’ll see how that violates that tremendously.] ...You shall not follow a multitude to do evil. Neither shall you testify in a cause in order to side with many so as to pervert *judgment*” (vs 1-2). God is telling you the majority *are not right*.

When you stop and think of it, why was the Constitution of the United States given? Why was it originally conceived the way it was conceived? Ever thought of that? ***Keep control on things!*** On whom? Toward whom? ***It was to control the government*** to keep it from doing the rottenness against us that they are doing. But it has been changed around so badly and you hear the word *democracy*. The Constitution was not for democracy, because as it says here the mob is always wrong. ***It was to protect you against the majority!*** That’s what it was designed for and God’s Word is designed to protect you against the majority, to protect the individual.

Verse 4: “If you meet your enemy’s ox or his donkey going astray, you shall surely bring it back to him again.... [Even if you don’t like that old neighbor down the road there, you better take care of his stuff. That doesn’t give you the right to steal it or take it.] ...If you see the donkey of him who hates you laying under his burden, and would hold back from helping him, you shall surely help him.... [You’re not going to say, ‘Oh, he deserves it.’] ...You shall not pervert the judgment due to the poor in his cause. Keep far from a false matter, and do not kill the innocent and righteous; for I will not justify the wicked” (vs 4-7).

I will just summarize it and review it. That is go to Lev. 18 and 22 and you find the commands for the different sex sins. With that I will just say that,

- those people in charge of the government
- those people in charge of movies
- those people in charge of the courts
- those people in charge of everyone

are doing what Balaam did to the children of Israel to seduce them through fornication *and bring upon the society the punishments that those evil perpetrators know will come because of it.*

Scriptures from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order, A Faithful Version*
by Fred R. Coulter

Scriptural References:

- 1) Luke 13:1-3
- 2) 1-Timothy 1:3-10
- 3) Romans 13:1-4
- 4) Revelation 21:8
- 5) Matthew 5:21-22
- 6) Ecclesiastes 8:6-17
- 7) Genesis 9:5-6
- 8) Exodus 21:12-25
- 9) Exodus 22:2-29
- 10) Exodus 23:1-2, 4-7

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Romans 1
- Leviticus 18, 22

What is the Administration of Death?

Fred R. Coulter

What is the administration of death? *and* The administration of the Spirit? Traditional Protestantism says, or claims that, because we are under the administration of the Spirit, therefore we don't have to keep any of the laws of the Old Testament, in particularly the laws of Moses. Is that true? First of all, what is the administration of death? Let's begin in Romans 4, because we will see something here; Romans is very important. Let's remember this: Here are some basic Scriptures to start with, which are New Testament Scriptures as well. 'Sin is the transgression of the Law,' or a literal translation is 'sin is lawlessness.'

Here in Romans 4:15 we find this, which is true in every case: "For the law works out wrath... [Why does the Law work our wrath? That is *because there is the penalty of death*. We are going to see that even though there is the *administration of the Spirit*, that does not eliminate the ultimate *administration of death*.] ...because where no law is, *there is no transgression*." That's a key thing to understand. If there's no law, there's no transgression. You can just look at any law and know that it is true. If you break the law, you're subject to whatever the law says the penalty is.

Romans 5:13: "For before *the law*... [this means *the covenant given to Israel*] ...sin was in the world. However, sin is not imputed when law does not exist.... [So therefore, if there is no law, there is no sin. And if there is no sin, there is no judgment.] ...Nevertheless, death reigned from Adam until Moses, even upon those who had not sinned in the likeness of the transgression of Adam, who was a type of the *one* Who was to come" (vs 13-14). Adam sinned; his sin affected the whole world, and all human beings down to this time. Now if you don't have the sermons we've given on *The Law of Sin and Death*, be sure and write for it.

Now we're going to cover some basic Scriptures so that we get a sense of what is happening here. Romans 6:23: "**For the wages of sin is death**... [there is death] ...**but the gift of God is eternal life through Christ Jesus our Lord**." We're looking at the administration of death. We'll see how that applies.

But first of all, let's look at the *administration of death*. Let's come to the book of Genesis, and let's see right from the very beginning that God told Adam and Eve that if they ate of the tree of the knowledge of good and evil, which then would be transgressing the Law. Is that not a law? *Anything God says virtually is a law*—isn't it? If God says, Genesis 2:17: "But you shall not eat of the

tree of *the* knowledge of good and evil, for in the day that you eat of it in dying you shall die." It doesn't mean that they die instantly, as some translations may have it. That is not so, because Adam lived to be 930-years-old—didn't he?

We have the death penalty from the beginning. The serpent said, 'You shall not surely die.' Let's just understand something here. We'll just do it by review coming up to Noah. God did not execute the death penalty against Adam immediately, rather He exiled him from the Garden of Eden and He placed at the east entrance of the Garden of Eden two cherubim. This is probably where we get the design in the tabernacle and later the temple of the two cherubim in the Holy of Holies and other parts of the tabernacle, and so forth.

There was probably an altar out there where they would come and meet God. They couldn't go into the Garden of Eden anymore, but God would come and meet them at the entrance to the garden. Now we see that when Cain killed Abel God did not execute the death penalty against him. In this account what we find is this: When there was sin—and in this case Cain sinned killing his brother—God exiled him further away into what is called the land of Nod, which is east of Eden, or far east of Eden.

Where did Cain get his wife? Genesis 5:3: "And Adam lived one hundred and thirty years and begat a son in his own likeness, and after his own image, and he called his name Seth." This is the replacement for the death of Abel. So it was approximately 130-years from the time that Cain and Abel were born until the death of Abel. *Josephus* records that Adam and Eve had 56 children.

Now notice what it says here, v 4: "And the days of Adam after he begat Seth were eight hundred years.... [that's how we get 930-years for Adam] ...And he begat sons and daughters." Apparently God placed in Adam and Eve a great divergence of genes. It was possible for the brothers to marry their sisters at that time to get the human race started. So, that's where Cain got his wife.

When did God give the law of sacrifices? *At the very beginning!* You read the account there of Abel bringing his firstlings and the firstlings then tells us God defined firstlings, male and female, firstfruits, tithes, offerings, sacrifices, and probably the exact same category of offerings that were later given to Israel, because God does the same thing all the time.

Let's understand that the only ones who were faithful to God, really faithful, were the line

that came down through Seth. Before the Flood it talks about two men who walked with God, one being Enoch and the other being Noah. It shows you how rare it was for people to obey God. During this time before the Flood, all those who were righteous had access to God at the east entrance of Eden. They lived by God's laws, they offered the sacrifices and whatever they did there, though we don't have that all in great detail, we don't need to. It says here that Enoch walked with God and Noah walked with God.

What God did was this, the same thing He has done today. He let the nations go their own way and that developed in all the sin that took place. And we've seen that here in Gen. 6, so God determined that they would all die, man and beast. We're not told all the details there except that the earth was filled with violence, and they corrupted God's way, and *'the thought of their heart was only evil continually.'*

After they get into the ark and they come to the other side, God does something differently. He makes a covenant with those sons of Noah, and this is the covenant that goes from that time to this time for all nations.

Genesis 9:1: "And God blessed Noah and his sons, and He said to them, 'Be fruitful and multiply, and replenish the earth. And the fear of you and the dread of you shall be upon every beast of the earth, and upon every bird of the air, upon all that moves on the earth, and upon all the fish of the sea. Into your hand they are delivered.... [we can look and see that's exactly true] ...Every moving thing that lives shall be food for you, even as the green herb I have given you all things'" (vs 1-3). The *green herb* is this: *you shall only eat that which has the seed in itself*, showing that there is a condition to it.

And we know in Genesis 8:20 that we have clean animals: "And Noah built an altar to the LORD and he took of every clean animal, and of every clean bird, and offered burnt offerings on the altar." They understood the clean and the unclean.

When He says here He's not changing the clean and the unclean, the phrase. Genesis 9:3: "...*even as* the green herb I have given you all things" means that it must be defined between clean and unclean, because not every green herb is good. Try a little hemlock and foxglove and others; yes, even mistletoe, poison oak and poison ivy. You wouldn't want to eat that. It might not necessarily kill you, but, boy, it would sure do you in for a long time. There are *restrictions* to it.

He also says this, v 4: "But you shall not eat of the flesh with the life in it—which is its blood." You should not eat anything with the blood in it. Therefore, whatever is to be eaten should be

slaughtered in the correct way, properly bled, and so forth, because the blood has the life in it, but the blood also has all of the sickness and disease that is in it and that's why *God says do not eat the unclean food*. They are unclean by creation! Refrigeration makes absolutely no difference whatsoever. And *God gave those laws!*

Before the Flood, apparently God is One Who administered the death penalty. Here's the change, v 5: "And surely the blood of your lives will I require. At the hand of every animal will I require it, and at the hand of man. At the hand of every man's brother will I require the life of man. Whoever sheds man's blood, his blood shall be shed by man..." (vs 5-6). Here is the giving of the *administration of death* to the sons of Noah in the covenant that He made with the sons of Noah. Now we're going to see from them came all the nations of the earth. This covenant is to *all nations* of the earth.

Verse 7: "And you, be fruitful and multiply. Bring forth abundantly in the earth, and increase in it." Then He says He establishes His covenant with you, going on down and reading that covenant, a perpetual covenant, guaranteed by a rainbow. Whenever you see it you know that God's covenant is still in effect.

Now let's come over here to Genesis 10; this gives the genealogical breakdown of the descendants of Shem, Ham, and Japheth. This is called *the table of nations*. Genesis 10:31: "These *are* the sons of Shem, after their families, after their tongues, in their lands, and after their nations." God gave to all the nations of the world the *administration of the death penalty*. In other words, capital punishment, life for life.

Now we will see, when we come to the covenant with Israel, how He expanded upon that and differentiated, v 32: "These *are* the families of the sons of Noah, after their generations, in their nations; and from these were the nations divided on the earth after the Flood." God let them set up their own government, which was a patriarchal government to begin with. The government was to administer the death penalty; that was their responsibility. How they administered the death penalty then would be shown in the different nations; God left it up to them. The whole world in Gen. 11 went after their own way and *Josephus* records the reason that they built the tower, whose top was to reach unto heaven, was because they knew they were rebelling against God as they were before the Flood and they didn't want God to flood the earth again and kill them, so they built this tower and they made it as waterproof as they could, so if a flood started they could all run into the tower and avoid being drowned.

God had a different a thing in mind. He scattered them, confounded their languages. Not only do they have their nations, but now they have different speech. Genesis 11:7: “‘Come, let Us go down and there confuse their language, so that they cannot understand one another’s speech.’ So the LORD scattered them abroad from that place upon the face of all the earth. And they quit building the city. Therefore, the name of it is called Babel, because the LORD confused the language of all the earth there. And from there the LORD scattered them abroad upon the face of all the earth” (vs 7-9). Babel is probably in Iraq. And isn’t it interesting that that is such a bloody piece of real estate down through history. The only other place that is more bloody is the so-called Holy Land and it’s still going on today.

This side of the Flood: the Garden of Eden was destroyed, the continents changed, and the rivers changed so you go back in Gen. 2 and read about the rivers; you don’t know how they connect, because the whole geography was changed. When the Flood occurred, God changed the geography of the land substantially, and with the water coming and going and so forth.

Now let’s jump clear ahead to Israel, because all these nations followed the laws of God variously. Let’s come to Romans 1; let’s see something here about how Paul explains about the Law. All these nations were left to administer their own laws, live their own lives, and a lot of them knew and understood the laws of God. You can find going back in ancient languages that Sabbath is in every ancient language. They understood the Sabbath Day. You can read here in the book of Romans what happened; this is talking about the very time of the scattering of the nations.

Romans 1:19: “Because that which may be known of God is manifest among them, for God has manifested *it* to them; for the invisible things of Him are perceived from *the* creation of *the* world, being understood by the things that were made—both His eternal power and Godhead—so that they are without excuse; because when they knew God, they glorified *Him* not as God, neither were thankful; but they became vain in their own reasonings, and their foolish hearts were darkened. While professing themselves to be *the* wise ones, they became fools and changed the glory of the incorruptible God into *the* likeness of an image of corruptible man, and of birds, and four-footed creatures, and creeping things” (vs 19-23).

That’s what happened to all the nations when they were scattered, because as you read in the book, *The Two Babylons*, they were worshiping Nimrod and Semiramis and so forth. That’s when

idolatry really started off, and that’s why God called Abraham out of Ur of the Chaldees. He called him out of all of that idolatry that was going on there.

Romans 2:14 explains about the nations, or the Gentiles, and how they administered their laws. Now you can go into any nation or country today, any civilization back in history, and you are going to see aside from all of their idolatry and their various gods they still had various of the laws of God and they still had the administration of death. Sometimes the administration of death was carried to extreme as we see in dictatorial regimes, and so forth, like we’ve seen in our modern age with Hitler and Stalin and Mao tse Tung, and Sadam Hussein and Idi Amin and others. Whenever a nation sins so greatly like that, then God raises up armies to destroy them or correct them.

Let’s come to Romans 2:14 and let’s see the general principle on how Paul was talking about the *administration of death*: “For when *the* Gentiles, which do not have *the* Law...” That means *they were not given the Law of God at Mount Sinai*. That’s what it’s talking about. They did not have the Law of God written down. Many of the nations that came, for example like all the kings of the earth came to hear Solomon in his wisdom, and so forth, they got a lot of the laws of God and they had it in their national code of law.

Verse 14: “For when *the* Gentiles, which do not have *the* law, practice by nature the things contained in the Law, these who do not have *the* Law are a law unto themselves.” In other words, the application of the Law of God anywhere in the world, by anyone, and any part of that law, God will honor. That’s what he’s saying here. You just take that down through time.

Verse 15: “Who show the work of the Law written in their own hearts, their consciences bearing witness, and their reasonings also, as they accuse or defend one another;” Here’s the administration of law, the administration of the death penalty.

Now you have nations like in Europe where they don’t believe in administering the death penalty. We have seen that God had certain absolute restrictions on the death penalty. And we will see that even today those who administer the death penalty, themselves have evilly connived to convict innocent people. You read about it all the time. You hear of prosecutors and district attorneys and judges who twist and turn the law and convict innocent people.

It was so bad in Illinois that Governor Ryan—after finding that there were 12 innocent people on death row; proved to be innocent because now of DNA testing—pardoned all of those who

were given the death penalty because it was such an error. They had a 140 on death row and 14 or 15 of them were proved to be innocent, so you've got a ten percent margin. He said, 'My conscience'—just like it says here, their conscience, their reasoning—'cannot go along with the death penalty until we get a better method of doing it.'

This happens because the police and the district attorney are allowed to lie to get a conviction. That's another whole story, we don't want to get in all the details of that, but I'm going to bring a sermon on that a little bit later about a man who was convicted for shooting a policeman. And it wasn't he who shot the policeman, it was the policeman's own 22-pen, a pen that had a 22-caliber bullet in it that he would use for emergency, which he was forbidden to carry but he did. **They all lied!** We won't get into the details on that, but that just shows this kind of thing in action.

Now let's come back to the Old Testament again, Genesis 26. We're going to read this into the record, We know that there were the laws and commandments. And the silly religionists today say, 'Oh, there was no law between Adam and Moses.' That's as empty-headed of reasoning as can be and leads to the licentious grace that is in the world today, and therefore, is one of the seeds which leads to assuming that the laws of God have been done away. We're going to see that's not what has been done away.

Here is what God told Isaac when He appeared to him, Genesis 26:3: "Stay in this land, and I will be with you and bless you, for to you and to your seed, I will give all these lands; and I will establish the oath which I swore to Abraham your father. And I will multiply your seed as the stars of the heavens and will give to your seed all these lands. And in your seed shall all the nations of the earth be blessed, because Abraham obeyed My voice... [I just gave a sermon on that recently, *The Simplicity of Christ—Obey My Voice.*] ...and kept My charge, My commandments, My statutes, and My laws" (vs 3-5).

Now then, the religionists who want to argue against God say, 'Well, it doesn't tell us which ones.' Since God is 'the same yesterday, today and forever,' and since God is the One Who is the Lawgiver, these have got to be the same ones that He gave to Israel. They could not be any different.

Exodus 20—this is where the Ten Commandments were given. We all know that, we're not going to get into that, but that's the basis for all law. **The basis for all law given to all nations is the Ten Commandments of God,** and as we will see, the statutes and judgments. The statutes and judgments define what you should do when someone

transgresses or breaks a law. 'Sin is the transgression of the Law.' Just like in the laws of any land today, there are varying degree of transgressions.

Let's pick it up here in Exodus 21:12, here's the administration of death. Let's understand something that's important, which I haven't mentioned, which I need to mention at this point. When God established the different nations in the world wherever they are, God gave them what we call as sovereignty, meaning that within that nation, within the laws, within the administration of those laws that they were sovereign. God also has another principle. **He does not at any time put two sovereignties within one nation.** There's only one sovereignty and that is the government. That's why when Abraham was sojourning in the land, he did not administer the death penalty, because **his sovereign was God directly**—correct? *Yes!* God had not yet given him the land, so he had no sovereignty.

When God gave the land to Israel, He created the nation and gave them sovereignty. This becomes a very important point when we talk about the Church and why it doesn't have the death penalty administered by the Church.

Now let's see the administration of death. Exodus 21:12: "He that strikes a man, so that he dies, shall be surely put to death." *Administration of death!* What is the administration of death? The administration of death is not the Law, *the administration of death is carrying out the penalty of the transgression of the Law.* That's why it says: "He that strikes a man, so that he dies, shall be surely put to death." If you never kill anyone that administration of death cannot be brought upon you—can it?

Verse 1:13: "And if a man does not lie in wait, but God delivers *him* into his hand, then I will appoint you a place where he shall flee." There was what was called revenge killing. And in that place there were certain cities where he could go and they could not kill him—administer the death penalty—until there was a hearing, until there was a trial, until it was understood what this man had done.

Verse 14: "But if a man comes presumptuously upon his neighbor to slay him with guile, you shall take him from My altar so that he may die.... [In other words, if you do what is called premeditated murder, or presumptuously premeditated murder, you could not have your life spared even though you ran up to the altar of burnt offerings and grabbed hold of the horns of the altar and said, 'God spare me.'] ...And he that strikes his father or his mother shall surely be put to death. And he that steals a man and sells him, or if he is found in his hand, he shall surely be put to death" (vs 14-16). That's how you eliminate kidnappers, and so forth.

These are good laws, because you stop and think: Whenever these laws of God have been set aside by different laws within the nations, which they do because they accuse and defend or excuse one another, and change the laws—God gave them sovereignty to do so—then what do you do? *You fill the land with evil*—don't you?

Verse 17: “And he that curses his father or his mother shall surely be put to death.” This is more than cursing, this is more than sassing, this is actually violently coming against them. We're seeing the varying degrees here, but we see the *administration of death*. Now notice it is God who gave them the authority to put to death. Unless God gives the authority of the administration of death, no one can exercise that. But all the sovereign nations of the world, which God has given—land, territory, people, commerce, money, and all of these things—they are sovereign nations and they are the ones who are to administer the death penalty. We'll get to the Church a little later, but we need to understand what is the administration of death first.

Verse 18: “And if men strive together, and one strikes another with a stone, or with *his* first, and he does not die, but is confined to his bed; if he rises again and walks abroad upon his staff, then he that struck him shall be set free.... [he will not pay the death penalty] ...Only he shall pay for the loss of his time and shall cause *him* to be completely healed” (vs 18-19).

Stop and think about this. You're going to end a whole lot of this kind of stuff *if* you bring him to court, and *if* you publicly declare, ‘You will pay!’ When there was not the death penalty, then there was compensation. That's what we're going to see. That's how God made the laws. That's all the part of the *administration of death*. When there is not death, then there is a penalty and compensation for the crime.

Verse 20: “And if a man strikes his servant or his maidservant with a rod and he dies under his hand, he shall surely be punished. But if he continues a day or two, he shall not be punished, for he *is* his money. If men strive and strike a pregnant woman...” (vs 20-22). Now, what is the unborn, but a child, a human being!

Isn't it interesting that in the Lacy/Scott Peterson case they convicted him of second-degree murder of his unborn son Connor. Now that's going to start flying in the face with the third trimester live-birth abortion, because you can't declare one *not a child*, another one *a child*, and get a conviction and over here it is you can take and kill with live-birth abortion. This is a good example of when men leave the laws of God and go to their own devices—you have nothing but confusion. When you have evil

judges who pervert truth, who do not follow the basic laws of God, even as God gave to the nations, then you end up with confusion and mayhem and death.

“...so that there is a miscarriage, and no harm follows... [the baby lives] ...he shall surely be punished, according as the woman's husband will lay upon him.... [What are the costs?] ...And he shall pay as the judges *determine*.... [That's why with the administration of death God had them set up a civil system of judges.] ...And if *any* injury occurs, then you shall give life for life” (vs 22-23). *The administration of death!* You take a life; you give yours. Here's something that is misunderstood by everyone who reads this. We need to understand v 22: *If there is no mischief, he shall pay as the judges determine!*

Verse 24 means that the judge has to determine all of the following things as well. “Eye for eye...” This does not mean you go gouge out another person's eye, this means:

- *you pay* for the loss of an eye
- *you pay* for the loss of a tooth
- *you pay* for the loss of hand
- *you pay* for the loss of a foot
- *you pay* for burning
- *you pay* for wounding
- *you pay* for stripe.

So, the judges had various penalties and payments that they decreed would be paid. If you have to pay for your crime, not sit in some jail and just rot away, but you have to go out and work, and you have to pay and bring compensation, and you have to make it right! Boy! There's going to be a whole lot less crime, because people are going to say, ‘Man, I don't want to spend all my life working out here and paying because I did this.’ It was a good, a just, a right system. But nevertheless, this is the *administration of death*, and the varying degrees of the laws that would go with it.

Verse 28: “If an ox gores a man or woman so that they die, then the ox shall surely be stoned, and his flesh shall not be eaten. But the owner of the ox *shall be* clear.... [he doesn't give his life, but he has to pay] ...But if the ox was known to gore in time past, and his owner has been warned, but he did not keep it in, so that it kills a man or a woman, the ox shall be stoned, and his owner also shall be put to death” (vs 28-29). In other words, *knowledgeable negligence!* We have the same thing today in varying degrees with varying laws.

Verse 30: “If there is laid on him a sum of money, then he shall give for the ransom of his life whatever is laid upon him” He pleads for his life and the judge says, ‘All right, you should have known

better; however, because we are going to judge, we will not take your life. We are going to make you pay.' *All* of these things have to do with what the judge lays upon him to pay.

Verse 32: "If the ox shall gore a manservant or a maidservant, he shall give to their master thirty shekels of silver, and the ox shall be stoned. And if a man shall open a pit, or if a man shall dig a pit, and not cover it, and an ox or a donkey falls in it, the owner of the pit shall make *it* good and give silver to its owner. And the dead *beast* shall be his" (vs 30, 32-34). He's got to cart it away.

Same thing today. If you're driving down the highway and the highway crew does not put a big piece of plate steel over the hole that they just dug while working in the highway to repair something under the pavement and your car falls in, well then you take them to court and you sue them and the judge lays upon them the payment and the penalty—doesn't he? This is exactly what we're talking about. *God's laws are modern and up to date!*

Exodus 22:1; here's a way to stop stealing: "If a man shall steal an ox... [we can say a car, a motorcycle today, etc.] ...or a sheep, and kill it or sell it, he shall restore five oxen for an ox, and four sheep for a sheep." Now think of this: you go out and you steal \$100,000 Rolls Royce, and you sell it and chop it for parts and then they finally catch you, now you've got to buy five Rolls Royces—\$500,000! A lot of people are going to be thinking, 'Hey, I'm not going to steal.' Rather than put them in jail where they sit there and rot and they have no constructive thing to do, they are to learn the lesson by making payment *to the victim* and the court would oversee it.

Protecting your own property, v 2: "If a thief is found breaking in, and is struck so that he dies, no blood *shall be* shed for him.... [In other words, there's no sacrifice needed to cover that. The one who killed him, he's off scot-free. Today if you shoot a thief breaking into your house, you can be charged with attempted murder, twisting and perversion of the law.] ...If the sun is risen upon him *and he lives, there shall be* blood *shed* for him.... [In other words, he lives, there's going to be a sacrifice given for the sin of transgressing and breaking up the house and trying to steal.] ...He shall make full restitution. If he has nothing, then he shall be sold for his theft.... [indentured servitude] ...If the theft is certainly found in his hand alive, whether it is an ox, or a donkey, or a sheep, he shall restore double" (vs 2-4). Then you can go and read all of the rest of it. All of these things have to do with the administration of the varying degrees of the *administration of death*.

Verse 18: "You shall not allow a sorceress [witch] to live. Anyone lying with an animal shall surely be put to death. Anyone sacrificing to a god, except it is unto the LORD only, he shall be utterly destroyed" (vs 18-20). *Administration of death* all the way through. Now you can read Exo. 23 and where all of these things have been spelled out.

(go to the next track).

Let's understand a fact of life: The whole insurance system that we have in the world today—not only in America, but in every country—auto insurance, house insurance, accident insurance, home owner's insurance. If you're going to build a house you get construction insurance. If you're going to ship something that's valuable, you get insurance so, in case something happens, you have a way of compensating or being compensated for an accident, loss of a life, and so forth. If you haven't gotten out your auto insurance, get it out and see what they pay for loss of life, loss of hand, loss of foot, loss of two hands, two feet, two legs, loss of eye, and so forth, and you will see that there is compensation given.

It's stated there, and if you go to court and the judge agrees that more should be paid, then by court order there will have to be more paid by the company where you got the insurance. So, in effect what we are doing, we are following the same thing in the world today as sovereign nations with the administration of death and the administration of varying other penalties covering all facets of life that come before judges that require the death penalty or some other judgment.

Now let's come to Numbers 35 where it reiterates many of the same things here and then God gives some other definitions of what to do. Now today, we find things entirely different than what is said here. Today many of these false convictions are because of circumstantial evidence where they weave a story rather than the witnesses.

Number 35:29: "So these *things* shall be for a statute of judgment to you throughout your generations in all your dwellings. Whoever kills any person, the murderer shall be put to death by the mouth of witnesses. But one witness shall not testify against any person *to cause him* to die?.... [*Very important!* Today the courts go by one witness, sometimes even anonymous.] ...And you shall no ransom for the life of a murderer who *is* guilty of death. But he shall surely be put to death. And you shall take no ransom *for him* who has fled to the city of refuge to return to live in the land until the death of the *high* priest. So you shall not defile the land in which you *are*. For blood defiles the land. And the land cannot be cleansed of the blood that is shed in

it, except by the blood of him that shed it” (vs 29-33). And so those were the judgments that God gave.

Deuteronomy 17 shows, again, the whole judgment system. When you go back and you read how Moses organized the tribes of Israel by tens, by hundreds, by thousands, they were judges. They were not ministers with religious authority; they were to settle disputes. It’s like we have the Supreme Court—in the states and in the federal government; we have a Court of Appeals in states and the federal government; we have the district courts; and then we have the city courts, municipal courts, all the way down to traffic court. That’s the same kind of structure as by the thousands, the hundreds, and the tens. They were judges.

Let’s find out a little bit more about judging and the administration of the death penalty. Deuteronomy 17:2 “If there is found among you, inside any of your gates which the LORD your God gives you, a man or woman who does what is evil in the sight of the LORD your God, in breaking His covenant, and has gone and served other gods and worshiped them, either the sun, or moon, or any of the forces of heaven, which I have forbidden, and if it is told you, and you have heard and inquired diligently, and, behold, it is true and the thing is certain, that such abomination is done in Israel” (vs 2-4).

In other words, you’re not going to go out with a gang to have a lynching, such as they had with the so-called witches of Salem—which by the way, most of them were not witches. They were eating mildewed rye grain, which they ground up to make bread, and the mildewed ground rye caused them to have hallucinations. An amazing thing! God says you’re to have a diligent inquiry.

Verse 5: “Then you shall bring forth that man or that woman who has committed that evil thing to your gates, even that man or that woman, and shall stone them with stones until they. At the mouth of two witnesses or three witnesses shall he that is worthy of death be put to death. At the mouth of *one* witness he shall **not** be put to death.... [to make sure that the witnesses tell the truth]: ...The hands of the witnesses shall be *the* first on him to put him to death, and afterwards the hands of all the people. So you shall put the evil away from among you. If a matter *is* too hard for you in judgment, between blood and blood, between plea and plea, and between stroke and stroke, *being* matters of strife within your gates, then you shall arise and go up to the place which the LORD your God shall choose. And you shall come to the priests, the Levites, and to the judge...” (vs 5-9). We have three things here—don’t we?

- the priests

- the Levites
- the judge

This is like the Supreme Court. They have prayer every day to start the Supreme Court, ‘And may God be with us in this judgment.’ Amazing—isn’t it? And then you get a bunch of self-serving perverted-minded people sitting as judges to skew everything and make it evil.

So we have “...the priests, the Levites, and the judge that shall be in those days, and ask. And they shall declare to you the sentence of. And you shall do according to the sentence, which they declare to you from that place which the LORD shall choose. And you shall be careful to do according to all that they tell you. According to the sentence of the law, which they shall teach you and according to the judgment, which they shall tell you, you shall do. You shall not turn aside from the sentence, which they shall show you, to the right hand or the left. And the man that acts presumptuously and will not hearken to the priest who stands to minister there before the LORD your God, or to the judge, even that man shall die. And you shall put away the evil from Israel. And all the people shall hear and fear, and do no more presumptuously” (vs 9-13).

Those are some really strict laws that God gave to insure justice. But again, He left it to the people. If they appealed to God, He would be there with them in the judgment. If they did not appeal to God, then it would be their own judgment whether correct or whether perverse.

Now let’s come to Romans 13, and let’s see how the New Testament upholds the sovereignty of the civil government and the administration of the penalty of death. Then we will begin to understand 2-Cor. 3, the administration of death/the administration of spirit.

When you live in a sovereign nation as a citizen of that land—whether in the Church or not—but in the Church you still have to be subject to it because God gave the sovereignty. You cannot set yourself up as another sovereign entity within a sovereign nation. That’s why today we should not have Catholics as judges, because they serve their sovereign, the pope. We should not allow the nation of Islam to exist as separate; they’re assuming sovereignty. Farrakhan has demanded 3-million acres in the south to set up their own sovereign nation; you cannot allow that.

That will help you understand why God did not give the death penalty administration to the Church, because it would have to be a separate sovereign and God does not contradict Himself. We live in the civil countries and we are subject to the law of the land. We are not a sovereign unto

ourselves to ignore the laws of the land. What makes the Protestants think that they are sovereign unto themselves and they can ignore the Laws of God? It's incongruous, doesn't make any sense.

Romans 13:1: "Let everyone be subject to the higher authorities because there is no authority except from God; and those authorities that exist have been instituted by God... [we saw that, Gen. 9 & 10] ...so then, the one who sets himself against the authority is resisting the ordinance of God; and those who resist shall receive judgment to themselves. For rulers are not a terror to good works, but to evil works. Do you desire not to be afraid of the authority? *Then* practice good, and you will have praise from it; for he is a servant of God to you for good.... [if they become corrupt, that's a different story] ...But if you are practicing evil, have fear! For he does not wear the sword in vain because he is a servant of God, an avenger for wrath to the one who is practicing evil. Consequently, it is necessary to be subject to authority, not only because of wrath, but also because of conscience. For this cause, you are also obligated to pay tribute; for they are servants of God, continually engaged in this very thing" (vs 1-6).

Now let's come back to Deuteronomy 5 after God gave them the Ten Commandments. This is going to be a key to understand what it's talking about in 2-Cor. 3. After He gave the Ten Commandments, after the people said, 'We don't want to hear the voice of God. Moses, you go near.'

Deuteronomy 5:27: "You go near and hear all that the LORD our God shall say. And you speak to us all that the LORD our God shall speak to you, and we will hear *it* and do it.... [Exo. 24 where they ratified the covenant which had the Laws of God plus the *administration of death*.] ...And the LORD heard the voice of your words when you spoke to me. And the LORD said to me, 'I have heard the voice of the words of this people, which they have spoken to you. They have well *said* all that they have spoken.... [This is a key to understanding the *administration of death/the administration of spirit*, and what it's really talking about in 2-Cor. 3]: ...**Oh, that there were such a heart in them that they would fear Me and keep all My commandments always**, so that it might be well with them and with their children forever!" (vs 27-29). God never gave them the heart to understand.

Now we're going to look at some other Scriptures and see some things here that are important for us to understand, because it will talk about the reading of Moses. Isaiah 6:9 is going to give us a key, and then when we read 2-Cor. 3 it will become crystal clear.

Isaiah 6:9: God tells Isaiah, "He said, 'Go, and tell this people, "You hear indeed, but do not understand; and you see indeed, but do not perceive."... [that's sure true] ...Make the heart of this people fat, and make their ears heavy, and shut their eyes; lest they see with their eyes, and hear with their ears, and understand with their hearts, and return, and be healed'" (vs 9-10).

This is clear that God has blinded their minds. This is called a *veil* (2-Cor. 3). Here is an absolute key: ***You can never understand the Word of God unless you obey it!***

Isaiah 29:9: "Be stunned and amazed! Blind your eyes and be blind! They are drunk, but not with wine; they stagger, but not *with* strong drink. For the LORD has poured out upon you the spirit of deep sleep, and has closed your eyes; He has covered the prophets and your rulers, *and* the seers" (vs 9-10). We're going to see that's very important. And the very ones who read the false interpretation of 2-Cor. 3 have this very same problem and they read it and make the wrong conclusion.

Verse 11: "And the vision of all has become to you like the words of a book that is sealed, which they give to one who is learned saying, 'Please read this,' and he says, 'I cannot, for it is sealed.' And the book is delivered to him who is not learned, saying, 'Please read this,' and he says, 'I am not learned.' And the LORD said, 'Because this people draw near *Me* with their mouth, and with their lips honor Me, but their worship of Me is made up of the traditions of men learned by rote. And their fear toward Me is *taught* by the commandments of men" (vs 11-13). That's what we see in the world today. Just witness the craze of Christmas shopping all supposedly in the name of Christ. *They're all blinded!*

Verse 14: "Therefore, behold, I will proceed to do again a marvelous work among this people, *even* a marvelous work and a wonder, for the wisdom of their wise ones shall perish, and the wisdom of their intelligent ones shall vanish. Woe to those who go deep to hide *their* purpose from the LORD! And their works are in the dark, and they say, 'Who sees us? And who knows us?'" (vs 14-15). That's exactly what they've done to interpreting the Word of God and to change the Word of God.

Verse 16: "Surely, you have turned things upside down! Shall the potter be regarded as the potter's clay; for shall the work say of him who made it, 'He did not make me?' Or shall the thing formed say to him who formed it, 'He has no understanding?'" That's precisely where we are in the world today. And this has happened in every generation coming all the way down through time, this same exact thing.

A comment was made which is a valid comment: Look at the Indian tribes today who we have allowed to be sovereign nations within the United States. They can buy land, set up casinos, and tell the nation ‘take a hike.’ It shows the problems that happen with that. That is a penalty that is coming upon us because we did not follow God’s laws, and did not make them integrate into the society under the sovereignty of the United States. You cannot have two sovereigns within a territory.

Now let’s go through 2-Corinthians 3:1; with all this background we’ll be able to understand it a whole lot better.: 2-Corinthians 3:1: “Do we again begin to commend ourselves? Or do we, as some, need epistles of commendation to you, or *epistles* of commendation from you? You are our epistle, and are inscribed in our hearts, being known and read by all men; *for* it is manifest that you are Christ’s epistle, ministered by us; you were not inscribed with *pen and ink*, but with *the Spirit of the living God*; not on tablets of stone, but on *fleshly tablets of the heart*” (vs 1-3).

Stop here and analyze this for a minute. What is he referring to ‘the tables of stone’? *Ten Commandments!* “...but on the *fleshly tables of the heart*.” What is he referring to here? *Having the laws and commandments of God written in your heart and in your mind* (Heb. 10 & 8)—correct? *Yes, indeed!* If you have the laws of God written in your heart, is that not greater than written on a table of stone that you can look at? *Yes!* This means that you operate according to the laws of God inscribed upon your heart and your mind.

- you worship the true God
- you don’t commit idolatry
- you don’t take His name in vain
- you keep the Sabbath
- you honor your father and mother
- you do not commit murder
- you do not commit adultery
- you do not steal
- you do not bear false witness
- you do not covet

—and then all of the other things that Christ has given in the *administration of the Spirit*. But the first place the administration of the Spirit begins is *in the heart*. That’s what he’s saying here.

Verse 4: “Now we have this confidence through Christ toward God; Not that we are competent of ourselves, *or* credit anything to our own abilities: rather, our competency *is* from God; Who also made us competent *as* ministers of *the New Covenant*... [It’s the *covenant* that changes; it is the *administration of the covenant* that changes.]

...not of *the* letter, but of the Spirit; for the letter kills, but the Spirit gives life” (vs 4-6).

We’ll see how that works. We can just mention here. According to what we read before Paul was called while he was Saul and he was causing the death of Christians, he would be subject to the penalty of death—correct? *Yes, indeed!* But was he forgiven? *Yes, he was!* That is the *administration of the Spirit*; the Spirit *gives life* upon repentance! Whereas under the administration of death, it was death and even grabbing a hold of the horns of the altar of God could not relinquish you from the death penalty. That’s why it says the letter kills.

Verse 7: “Now if the ministry of death... [That could be translated administration, but ministry is better.] ...if the ministry of death, which was engraved in stones, came into being with glory, so that the children of Israel were not able to gaze upon Moses’ face because of the glory of his face, which *glory* is being set aside.” What is being set aside? The laws? *No! The glory of the Old Covenant is being set aside*—the glory of Moses. Remember his face shined and the children of Israel could not see his face. What did he have to do? *He had to put a veil over his face*, because they couldn’t look at him until eventually the glory wore out. After he had come from the presence of God he had all of this glory.

And this is referring to the second giving of the law, the second tables of stone, where he was up there with God for another 40 days and 40 nights, and tradition has it that when he came back down to bring those to the children of Israel that was on the Day of Atonement. That glory is being set aside, *not the laws*, because God is not lawless. Where are the laws to be written?

Verse 3: “...on *fleshly tablets of the heart*.” So it’s setting aside—and the way the *King James* has it is ‘doing away.’ That is a very poor translation, very misleading and very advantageous to Protestants to say, ‘The law is done away.’ It’s the glory of the giving of these laws, which Moses had glory on his face and had to put a veil on his face.

Now compared to that, v 8: “Shall not the ministry of the Spirit be far more glorious?” *Absolutely!* What is the result of the Old Covenant under Moses? Physical blessings and the physical land, living by the letter of the Law. What is the glory of the New Covenant?

- repentance
- forgiveness of sin
- begetting of the Holy Spirit
- eternal life in glory

Isn't that much more glorious than even the glory that Moses' face had?

Verse 9: "For if *there was* glory in the ministry of condemnation, to a much greater degree the ministry of righteousness overflows with glory.... [The ministry of righteousness includes the things I said: forgiveness of sin, gift of eternal life.] ...And even *the ministry of condemnation*, which had glory, was not glorious in this respect, because of the surpassing glory of *the ministry of life*. For if that which is being set aside *came into being* through glory..." (vs 9-11).

When the children of Israel were led of God—what happened? *They had the pillar of cloud by day and the fire by night showing the glory of God!* When the tabernacle was set up and dedicated, what happened? *The glory of God filled the tabernacle*, like a bright cloud that came in showing that God's presence was there in the Holy of Holies, and that is what is referred to in Jewish writings as the Shekinah.

When the temple was dedicated by Solomon, (2-Chron. 5), God filled the temple with His glory and it was so bright; it was like a great huge cloud coming into the temple and all the people saw it, that the priests couldn't minister because of the glory of God coming into the temple. And when Solomon finished his prayer that he gave, fire came down out of heaven and consumed all the offerings that were there in a show and a display of glory.

This is what we need to understand, v 11: "For if that which is being set aside *came into being* through glory... [God on the mountain giving the Ten Commandments, and so forth, and all the way down through the other things that I just explained.] ...to a much greater degree that which remains *is* glorious. Now then, because we have such hope... [Hope of what? *Eternal life and eternal glory!*] ...we use great plainness of *speech*; for *we are* not like Moses, who put a veil over his face, so that the children of Israel could not gaze to the end upon *the glory* that is *now* being set aside" (vs 11-13). It's the glory that's being set aside. *It is not the laws of Moses*. Remember the Scriptures that we read (Isa. 6 & 29).

Verse 14: "**But their minds were blinded...** [As God said, 'Oh, that they had such a heart in them that they would fear Me and keep My commandments always.'] ...for to the present hour the same veil *has not been* removed... [blindness is a veil over their minds] ...but remains at the reading of the Old Covenant..." When they read Moses, they don't understand it; that's why they reject it. If they've got this veil over their minds and over their hearts and their understanding, they don't understand the purpose of Moses. They don't

understand the reasons for God's commandments. They do not understand why we have to keep the commandments of God.

Now notice what happens: "...*but* remains at the reading of the Old Covenant; which *veil* is removed in Christ.... [Not the laws, *but the blindness*. Not the commandments of God, *but the veil*. That is removed in Christ. And isn't that what Christ said? *Yes!* We'll see how that is done.] ...For to this day, when Moses is read, *the veil* lies upon their hearts. But when *their hearts* turn to *the Lord*... [repentance] ...the veil is taken away" (vs 14-16). Not the laws, not the commandments, *but the veil*, which means when they read Moses now they understand the *Spirit of the Law*. So, you can plug in there Matt. 5, 6, 7, where Jesus said, 'You've heard it said of old time....' and so forth and so on.

That's why Jesus said, 'Do not think that I have come to destroy the Law or the Prophets, I did not come to destroy but to fulfill.' And when He fulfills and opens the minds of people to understand that, then the veil is taken away through conversion. {see Appendix H: *How Did Jesus Fulfill the Law and the Prophets?*}

- He fulfilled the sacrifices.
- He fulfilled the temple worship.
- He fulfilled the priesthood
 - ✓ with greater sacrifice
 - ✓ with greater priesthood
 - ✓ with a greater circumcision

So it is *the veil* that is done away **upon repentance!**

Look at the life of the Apostle Paul. Perfect example. What happened when Christ called him? He was knocked to the ground, he was blinded and for three days he was fasting and praying. Ananias came to him and baptized him, and as soon as he was baptized—because during that three days and three nights where he was blinded, he was *repenting, big time!*—and repented his sight came back and *the veil was lifted off* his eyes and his mind so he could understand the laws and commandments of God and the Spirit of the Law. He understood he was forgiven under the *ministration of Spirit* for murder. That's why he always remembered that. That's why God used the Apostle Paul for this particular thing to show the glory of the New Covenant **through repentance and forgiveness and the removal of the veil**. This applies to Jew and Gentile alike, without a doubt. So, it's *the veil* that is taken away (v 16), mark that. **Not the laws, the veil at the reading of Moses is taken away.**

Verse 17: "Now the Lord is the Spirit; and where the Spirit of *the Lord is*, there *is* freedom.... [Freedom from what? *Freedom from sin!* Freedom

from the *administration of death!*] ...But we all, with uncovered faces beholding the glory of *the* Lord as in a mirror, are being transformed *into* the same image from glory to glory, even as by *the* Spirit of the Lord” (vs 17-18). He’s showing that this whole thing comes out with personal growth, and so forth, knowledge and understanding. Read 2-Cor., chapters 2-5, which all has to do with the *ministration of the Spirit*.

Now let’s see what happens with the removal of this veil, John 5:33: “You have sent to John... [John the Baptist] ...and he has borne witness to the Truth. Now I do not receive witness from man, but I say these things so that you may be saved. He was a burning and shining light, and you were willing for a time to rejoice in his light. But I have a greater witness than John’s; for the works that the Father gave Me to complete, the *very* works that I am doing, themselves bear witness of Me, that the Father has sent Me” (vs 33-36).

Look at everything that Jesus did. Everything that Jesus did was to show the *administration of the Spirit*, beginning by living by every Word of God, coming all the way down to loving your enemies, praying for them that despitefully use you; that’s all the *administration of the Spirit*.

Verse 37: “And the Father Himself, Who sent Me, has borne witness of Me. You have neither heard His voice nor seen His form at any time. And you do not have His word dwelling in you, for you do not believe Him Whom He has sent” (vs 37-38). You apply that back there with the fleshly tables of your heart in 2-Cor. 3 and what is that? *That is the Word of God dwelling in you, written in your heart and mind!* And if it’s written in your heart and mind, it’s dwelling in you—isn’t it? No, they didn’t have the Word of God dwelling in them. What did they do? *They fenced it off with all of their traditions. They fenced it off with all of their laws.*

Verse 39: “You search the Scriptures... [not only just Moses, but the Scriptures] ...for in them you think that you have eternal life; and they are the ones that testify of Me. But you are unwilling to come to Me, that you may have life. I do not receive glory from men; but I have known you, that you do not have the love of God in yourselves” (vs 39-42). See what happens when you have the ministration of death, keeping by the letter, have the traditions, have your heart and mind closed, and do not understand Moses? *You are cut off from eternal life!*

Verse 43: “I have come in My Father’s name, and you do not receive Me; *but* if another comes in his own name, you will receive him. How are you able to believe, you who receive glory from one another, and do not seek the glory that *comes*

from the only God?” (vs 43-44). Are we not talking about the difference of glory of the Old Covenant and the New Covenant, the glory of being called to eternal life? That’s the glory they should be seeking. That’s what he’s talking about here.

Verse 45 becomes very important: “Do not think that I accuse you to the Father. There is *one* who accuses you, even Moses, in whom you have hope.” Let’s look at this a minute. The verb there is present tense, “...who **accuses** you...” Moses is the living Word of God—isn’t it? *Yes!* Those are the words of God, which Moses wrote, and they are active and living and alive, and in force today. If you sin, Moses accuses you. Now there’s repentance, of course!

Verse 46: “But if you believed Moses...” But they couldn’t—why? Because they had the veil *over their minds at the reading of Moses*, so they didn’t understand or believe Moses, though they touted Moses. Does that sound a little bit like the religions today? The Jews tout today that they understand God. *No!* They are mass confusion because of their traditions. The Protestants and Catholics claim that they know God, but they reject the laws of God. They don’t know Him; nothing new under the sun.

“But if you believed Moses, you would have believed Me; for he wrote about Me. And if you do not believe his writings, how shall you believe My words?” (vs 46-47). Now go back and tie that in with where He says, “...search the Scriptures...” (v 39), which then means that He’s talking not only about Moses, but the whole of the Old Testament. That’s why we have the Old Testament and the New Testament.

Now let’s see how the veil is done away, Colossians 2. {see sermon series on Colossians.} But let’s come to Colossians 2 and see how that veil is done away. It’s worded just a little bit differently here.

Colossians 2:6: “Therefore, as you have received Christ Jesus the Lord, be walking in Him; being rooted and built up in Him, and being confirmed in the faith, exactly as you were taught, abounding in it with thanksgiving. Be on guard so that no one takes you captive through philosophy and vain deceit, according to the traditions of men, according to the elements of the world, and not according to Christ” (vs 6-8). Then he goes in and shows angel worship, demon worship, as he’s covered in other places the traditions of the Jews, and so forth.

Verse 9: “For in Him dwells all the fullness of the Godhead bodily; **and you are complete in Him...** [you don’t need angels] ...Who is the Head of all principality and power In Whom you have also

Refuting Sunday-Keeping #14
What is the Administration of Death?

been circumcised with *the* circumcision not made by hands... [***That is the removing of the veil over your mind through repentance.*** Conversion is called the circumcision not made with hands, and it is the *circumcision of the heart* and not of the flesh.] ...in putting off the body of the sins of the flesh by the circumcision of Christ” (vs 9-11).

As the next sentence tells us that is accomplished by baptism, and as we know from other Scriptures the laying on of hands to receive the Spirit of God. Verse 12: “Having been buried with Him in baptism, by which you have also been raised with *Him* through the inner working of God, Who raised Him from the dead. For you, who were *once* dead in *your* sins and in the uncircumcision of your flesh, He has *now* made alive with Him, having forgiven all your trespasses” (vs 12-13). That’s the ministration of the Spirit; God’s Spirit being given to you.

Verse 14: “He has blotted out the note of debt against us *with* the decrees *of our* sins, which was contrary to us; and He has taken it away, having nailed it to the cross.” He nailed our sins to the cross and as it were *the note of debt*, which the religions of the pagans were, they were to write down all of their sins and they were to take those to the temple so they could have their sins forgiven.

Now let’s look at Romans 2 where Paul also talks about the circumcision of the heart. Romans 2:28: “For he is not a Jew who *is one* outwardly, neither *is* that circumcision which *is* external in the flesh; rather, he *is* a Jew who *is one* inwardly, and circumcision *is* of the heart, in the spirit *and* not in the letter; whose praise *is* not from men but from God” (vs 28-29). So that is what is the *ministration of the Spirit vs the administration of death.*

All the rest of the New Testament amplifies the *administration of the Spirit*. You can go back and review some of the things that we’ve done in the series in Hebrews, as we’ve been going. That shows in greater detail the *administration of the Spirit*. But remember, it’s not the removing of the laws of God, it’s the *removing of the veil* at the reading of Moses. And ***that veil is done away with Christ:***

- through *repentance*
- through *baptism*
- through *circumcision of the heart*

Scriptures from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter

Scriptural References:

- 1) Romans 4:15
- 2) Romans 5:13-14
- 3) Romans 6:23
- 4) Genesis 2:17
- 5) Genesis 5:3-4
- 6) Genesis 9:1-3
- 7) Genesis 8:20
- 8) Genesis 9:4-7
- 9) Genesis 10:31-32
- 10) Genesis 11:7-9
- 11) Romans 1:19-23
- 12) Romans 2:14-15
- 13) Genesis 26:3-5
- 14) Exodus 21:12-24, 28-30, 32-34
- 15) Exodus 22:1-4, 18-20
- 16) Numbers 35:29-33
- 17) Deuteronomy 17:2-13
- 18) Romans 13:1-6
- 19) Deuteronomy 5:27-29
- 20) Isaiah 6:9-10
- 21) Isaiah 29:9-16
- 22) 2-Corinthians 3:1-7, 3, 9-18
- 23) John 5:33-47
- 24) Colossians 2:6-14
- 25) Romans 2:28-29

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Genesis 6; 20
- Exodus 20; 23; 24
- Hebrews 10; 8
- 2-Chronicles 5
- Matthew 5-7
- 2-Corinthians 2-5

Also referenced:

Sermons:

- *The Law of Sin and Death*
- *The Simplicity of Christ-Obey My Voice*

Sermon Series:

- *Colossians*
- *Hebrews*

Books:

- *Josephus*
- *The Two Babylons* by Alexander Hislop

What Happens to the Uncalled?

Fred R. Coulter

Today we're going to study and answer the question: What about all the people that I know in Sunday-keeping churches? And a lot of them and even their ministers admit that the Sabbath is the day to keep. I got a hot email from someone about some of the things that he thought we were teaching and what I did. I said, 'Look, we just follow the Bible. We're Scripturalists and the seventh day is there. That's what God gave us and we do keep it. So here's some information which will help you understand what we're doing, where we're coming from.'

One of the reasons why in Protestantism that they don't understand is because they don't realize the difference between commandment-keeping from the Scriptures and Judaism. We've got a book coming out: *Judaism: Revelation of Moses, or Religion of Men?* That's one thing that is missing. Sunday-keepers say, 'Well, we don't Judaize.' And they don't know what Judaize means.

I'll just give you a quick summary. Judaize means to follow the traditions of the Talmud, which the Jews have made, which totally circumvents the Word of God. We're not going to cover that issue today, but that is one. What we want to do is ask the question: What is going to happen to people who are good and sincere in their trying to seek God and yet they go to Sunday-keeping churches?

I've got a book that I'm reading called, *Quitting Church*. In reading it so far, I've begun to see something that is very important which is this: that Sunday-keeping people only come so far. Then they begin to see the sins and problems and hypocrisies in the ministry and in the people, and they give up and quit. Today millions of people are leaving churches. So I called the gal who wrote the book, Julia Duin; she's a religion reporter for *The Washington Times*.

I talked to her for a few minutes and she said, 'Well, I'm so busy that if you send me any material, I won't have a chance to read it.' I thought, 'Yes, she's so busy writing about religion that she doesn't want to follow the Truth as found in the Bible.' This is what happens in the Sunday-keeping churches. They are given just enough of God's Word so they feel good, and they're given just enough allowance for the way that they behave in a lawless grace so they feel they're justified. And they are told that the Old Testament has been done away, when God says, 'Don't add to or take away from.' So, if you get rid of the Old Testament and you add your own traditions, you have taken away from, even though you carry the Bible. Isn't it ironic, you can

have the whole Bible, but if you don't read all the Bible, you don't know what it says.

What happens when that occurs? Who is the deceiver? We see it today. Let's look at lies in politics to where we can see and understand something really important which is this: We can have politicians beginning with the President and all the supposedly important people in government—not only federal government, but state government—that can now stand up and lie bald-faced lies. You can see their promises on back videos and you can hear their rhetoric and see their action today. I have a new description of Washington, D.C. It should be DLC—the District of Liars and Corruption. That also applies to many, many churches.

How does this happen? *Because Satan comes as an angel of light; he comes to deceive!* Revelation 12:9: "And the great dragon was cast out, the ancient serpent who is called the Devil and Satan, who is deceiving the whole world." That's active, present tense, ongoing. We will see what happens when people reject Truth "...deceiving the whole world."

Let's come back here to 2-Corinthians 4 and let's see how the process is, because God has given us all free moral agency and we are to choose. We're to choose whether we want to obey God or not, and God is also doing some choosing because, as we will see, 'many are called but few are chosen.'

2-Corinthians 4:1: "Therefore, having this ministry, according as we have receive mercy, we are not fainthearted... [Paul is talking about the attitude that he had—and Timothy and Silas—toward God and toward the brethren and in preaching the Word of God.] (Here's what needs to be done in everyone's life): ...For we have personally renounced the hidden things of dishonest gain, not walking in *cunning* craftiness... [having an agenda or political motive] ...nor **handling the Word of God deceitfully...**" (vs 1-2). If you handle it deceitfully, who is inspiring that?

1. Satan the devil
2. What is the human heart without God's Spirit? *Jer. 17:9: 'Deceitful above things and desperately wicked, who can know it.'*

In coming to God, we're going to see we have to come to God on *His terms*, not on our terms. We don't say, 'God, bless me because I really believe that Sunday-keeping is good.' You come to God and God says, 'Remember the Sabbath Day to keep it Holy.' What are you going to do? 'Oh, but one in seven is good enough.' Really? Nowhere in the

Bible does it say that. “...nor handling the Word of God deceitfully; but **by manifestation of the Truth...**” (v 2).

- What is the Truth? *It's the Word of God.*
Jesus said, ‘Your Word is Truth.

Sanctify them with Your Word.’ That really says a lot.

- What does sanctify mean? *Sanctify means to be made Holy!*

Of course, then we're also sanctified with the Holy Spirit on top of it—isn't that true? *Yes, indeed!*

Then in Psa. 119 we read, ‘All Your commandments are Truth. Your Law is Truth. All Your precepts from the beginning are true.’ This is how we need to approach the Bible and the Word of God:

- God is Holy
- God is righteous
- God is true
- He has inspired the Word of God for us

There may be some difficulties in some translations, but all of those can be discernable and understood if we go to the original language from which it was translated. And we can solve the problems if we are really looking for *the manifestation of Truth*.

“...we are commending ourselves to every man's conscience before God. But if our Gospel... [Which is the Gospel of Jesus Christ, the sound words of Jesus Christ. And also the Gospel going clear back to the beginning in Gen., because that's all part of it, because the Bible is one whole.] ...it is hidden to those who are perishing... [Why are they perishing? *Because they don't have the Spirit of God!* Of course, ‘it's given to every man once to die in Adam’—is that not true? *Yes, indeed!* So, unless we have the Spirit of God, look forward to the resurrection of life, we perish.] ...In whom the god of this world has blinded the minds of those who do not believe...” (vs 2-4).

Not only are we to believe *in God*, we are to *believe God*. Not only are we to believe *in God*, we are to *believe the Gospel*. That's what Jesus said when He began His ministry in Galilee. He came into Galilee after John the Baptist was put in prison, and said, ‘Repent for the Kingdom of God is at hand. Repent and believe the Gospel.’ So, they don't believe the words of God. They don't believe the laws of God. What happens to them? *They become deceived!* If a person is deceived, they don't know they're deceived—do they? Especially when they're told what they are doing is right.

Here's what happens: “...who do not believe, lest the light of the Gospel of the glory of Christ, Who is *the* image of God, should shine unto them. For we do not preach our own selves, but Christ

Jesus *the* Lord, and ourselves your servants for Jesus' sake. Because *it is* God Who commanded *the* light to shine out of darkness, Who shines into our hearts *the* light of the knowledge of the glory of God in *the* face of Jesus Christ” (vs 4-6). That's just a summary of what happens in conversion, once you understand the Word of God, and so forth.

Now let's look at something very interesting in Isaiah 29. This is what happens when you become blinded because you don't believe, and when you subject yourselves to the spirit and power of Satan. A lot of people say, ‘Oh, I don't do that.’ Well, Satan comes along appearing very nice, only to deceive. Think about this for a minute: What is the best way that Satan introduces sin into the world? We can see it now on television with humor. Everybody laughs at it, but the sin has been announced. Then people begin accepting it.

When we come to the Word of God and when we come to what people do and don't do, you hand them a Bible, and we find here, Isaiah 29:9: “Be stunned and amazed! Blind your eyes and be blind!.... [What did Jesus say? ‘*If the blind lead the blind, they're both going to fall in the ditch.*’ That answers what's happening in these churches.] ...They are drunk, but not with wine; they stagger, but not *with* strong drink, for the LORD has poured out upon you the spirit of deep sleep, and has closed your eyes; He has covered the prophets and your rulers, *and* the seers. And the vision of all has become to you like the words of a book that is sealed...” (vs 9-11).

That is true. They don't understand the Word of God. What happens when you come up to the central doctrine of Protestantism and Catholicism concerning the trinity? When they can't prove it, what is the final thing that you're told? *It is a mystery! We can't understand it.* The truth is you can't find it in the Bible.

“...like the words of a book that is sealed, which they give to one who is learned saying, ‘Please read this,’ and he says, ‘I cannot for it is sealed’” (v 11). ‘We don't understand it, oh, it's in symbolic language. It really doesn't mean what it says.’ You know how most of the experts dismiss the book of Revelation? *They say it was fulfilled beginning with the days of Nero.*]

Verse 12: “And the book is delivered to him who is not learned, saying, ‘Please read this,’ and he says, ‘I am not learned.’.... [‘What do you expect me to do?’] ...And the LORD said, ‘Because this people draw near *Me* with their mouth, and with their lips honor *Me*, but **their worship of Me is made up of the traditions of men learned by rote,** and their fear toward Me is *taught* by the commandments of men” (vs 12-13). That certainly

describes worldly Christianity, especially Catholicism and also Protestantism. But the truth is, upon repentance, that blinding can be removed. When people repent and turn to God and believe in Jesus Christ, a mental miracle happens, which is this: *The veil over their mind and over their understanding*—when they hear the reading of Moses—*is removed!* You have to start with Moses and then you progress to the Gospel. Jesus said to the Pharisees, ‘Had you believed Moses, you would have believed Me.’

A comment was made: Well, about a year ago ‘I started reading through the whole Bible analyzing the commandments and to see where I am, so I can understand God’s way.’ *That’s the place to begin!*

Let’s read the result of that, v 14: “‘Therefore, behold I will proceed to do again a marvelous work among this people, *even* a marvelous work and a wonder, for the wisdom of their wise ones shall perish... [Has that happened? *Yes!*] ...and the wisdom of the intelligent ones shall vanish.’ Woe *to* those who go deep to hide *their* purpose from the LORD! And their works are in the dark, and they say, ‘Who sees us? And who knows us?’ **Surely, you have turned things upside down!...**” (vs 14-16).

Of course, that’s in degree. You go back maybe a hundred years ago Protestantism wasn’t totally upside down, maybe a little eschewed. Today, it’s totally upside down and one of the leading bishops in the Lutheran Church says, ‘The Bible is not the final answer, especially for sexuality and homosexuality.’ But what did Paul write?

“...Shall the potter be regarded as the potter’s clay; for shall the work say of him who made it, ‘He did not make me?’.... [I’ve got a book that I’m going to use for atheists on Church At Home: *Nothing Created Everything*. Isn’t that wondrous? But what does it do? *It eliminates God and puts man in the pinnacle of authority, so man can decide what is right and wrong!* And when that happens, they blind themselves—don’t they?] ...Or shall the thing formed say to him who formed it, ‘He had no understanding?’” (v 16).

Now think of this: You make a watch, finest watch ever been made. You put it down on the bench after it’s all done and you’re admiring it. All of a sudden a voice comes out of this watch and says, ‘You fool, you idiot, you didn’t make this. I just happened.’ That would be ridiculous! Even an atheist would say that couldn’t be so. When they don’t believe God they become blinded.

Now let’s come back here to Matthew 13 and let’s see what Jesus said. Yes, there are

mysteries of the Kingdom of God, that is absolutely true, but those are secrets that God is revealing through Christ. To those who won’t believe God and believe the Word of God, it becomes a mystery that they cannot understand.

It’s like one man that I visited for the first time, who was contemplating keeping the Sabbath and he didn’t know too much about it. He asked, ‘What should I do?’ I said, ‘Well, why don’t you do this. Why don’t you for one month every Sabbath study on the Sabbath, and I’ll guarantee you that if you’re sincere and you’re seeking God, at the end of that month you’ll understand about the Sabbath.’ He didn’t understand it before, but when he studied it in the Word of God, seeking it with a right heart and mind and attitude—guess what? *I came back in six weeks and he says, ‘I understand the Sabbath!’* ***The veil was lifted!*** Now the veil can close back down again. But with the deception that is in the world, and especially with people’s regard toward the Word of God, they are blinding themselves and Satan is right there saying, ‘Yea, go ahead. I’ve got you.’

Jesus spoke to them in parables and here in Matthew 13:10 the disciples were puzzled as to why He spoke to them in parables. “And His disciples came to Him and asked, ‘Why do You speak to them in parables?’ And He answered *and* said to them, ‘Because it has been given to you to know the mysteries of the Kingdom of Heaven...’” (vs 10-11). That’s something. Once people turn to God in repentance and seeking the Truth, they will begin to understand. Since God is no respecter of persons, that can apply to anyone who would really sincerely do it.

“...but to them... [the ones He was speaking to, the ones He healed, the ones He fed, etc] ...it has not been given. For whoever has *understanding*, to him more shall be given, and he shall have an abundance; but whoever does not have *understanding*, even what he has shall be taken away from him”” (vs 11-12).

And that’s exactly what is happening to people in the world who consider themselves Christians today on a much more massive scale than in the past. They have caused the society—the preachers and teachers and followers—to reject God because of how they portrayed Him to them, because they don’t keep the Word of God, and they are blinded. And now we have a society filled with sin and lawlessness: murder, adultery, fornication, thievery, idolatry, occultism. Because of that, a lot of people are beginning to see, ‘Hey, I go to church on Sunday and I expect to be fed. I don’t! I go to church and I expect to see people who are converted, but they’re not. They’re just as carnal as people in the world. I go to church and I hear boring sermons.

Why should I waste my time and go? *They're beginning to get out from underneath the deception!* How far will they go to try and come to understand? **God will give understanding, but it has to come His way**, because as we read, 'That which is created is not going to tell the Creator what to do and how to do it.'

"...but whoever does not have understanding, even what he has shall be taken away from him" (v 12). These verses become a tremendous conundrum for people to try and understand what Jesus is doing—was doing then and is doing now.

Verse 14: "And in them is fulfilled the prophecy of Isaiah... [Which part of it we just read, which says:] ...'In hearing you shall hear, and in no way understand; and in seeing you shall see, and in no way perceive; for the heart of this people has grown fat... [with sin] ...and their eyes they have closed... [I've talked to people who said, 'Don't talk to me about the commandments.' A major step and reason for *being blinded!*] ...lest they should see..." (vs 14-15).

Here's the part that people can't understand. What is God going to do about this? *He's blinding them using Satan to do so!* In their refusal to understand what God wants, God also cuts them off even further and gives them over to their own devices.

"...and their ears are dull of hearing, and their eyes they have closed; lest they should see with their eyes, and should hear with their ears, and should understand with their hearts, and should be converted, and I should heal them" (v 15).

- Don't all churches tell you that the goal is to convert everybody in the world?
- They're supposedly following Jesus Christ—isn't that true?
- If that is true, why did Jesus say this?
- If He causes it to happen, and He doesn't call them and convert them, what on earth is going to happen to them?
- Are they lost forever?
- Did God just reject them?
- Is it like the fatalism of Calvinism? *You've been predestinated to hell from conception.*
- Is that true?
- What about free-moral agency?
- What about choice? 'Well, if you're with us, you've been predestinated to salvation.'
- What if you have pretenders in your midst?

God is in charge, not men!

But Jesus said this, v 16: "But **blessed are your eyes, because they see; and your ears,**

because they hear.... [How do our eyes see? *By willing attitude of wanting to serve and love God—right? Yes!* 'And your ears hear.' You hear the Word of God and you want to do it—isn't that correct? *Yes!* Today we have the whole Bible, that's true. We have special blessings that come from that if we're willing to yield to God to receive those blessings.] (Now here is the greatest blessing of all that comes): ...For truly I say to you, many prophets and righteous *men* have desired to see what you see, and have not seen; and to hear what you hear, and have not heard" (vs 16-17).

Do we know more about the prophecy of Daniel than Daniel did, the one who was inspired to write it? *Yes!* He was told it wasn't for him to understand. He was told at the end-time 'the wise shall understand.' The wise ones are the ones who believe God and keep His commandments and love Him with all their heart and mind and soul and being. Isn't that amazing?

Do we understand the book of Revelation more than the Apostle John who wrote it? *Yes!* What kind of responsibility does that give to us? *We better be faithful with the Word of God. We better keep His commandments and love Him—is that not true? Yes, indeed!* Let's see something that's important that Jesus said: Matthew 22:14 "For many are called, but few are chosen." Why? *Because few repent!*

Let's see what Jesus said about repentance. Repentance is the first step to God, repentance and continual repentance is the way that you understand the Word of God, the way that you understand the relationship of God. How is God going to solve this problem? Let's concentrate on what we need to do now.

Luke 13:1: "Now, at the same time *there* were present some who were telling Him about the Galileans, whose blood Pilate had mingled with their sacrifices. And Jesus answered *and* said to them, 'Do you supposed that these Galileans were sinners above all Galileans, because they suffered such things?'" (vs 1-2). Isn't that true, when we see a disaster happen, a lot of people say, 'Well, they deserve it. It's the wrath of God.' Really? Maybe they did, but is it your judgment to say so? *No!*

Verse 3: "No, I tell you... [They weren't sinners above all. What about little children who have done nothing and they die? What about all the babies that have been aborted?] ...but if you do not repent, you shall all likewise perish.... [We're going to see in a minute how important repentance really is.] ...Or those eighteen on whom the tower in Siloam fell, and killed them, do you suppose that these were debtors above all men who dwelt in Jerusalem? No, I tell you; but if you do not repent,

you shall all likewise perish” (vs 3-5). Very interesting—isn’t it?

Now let’s come back to Matthew 7 and we’ll look at several Scriptures here. This will help answer the question, and perhaps when you look at it, those who are supposed to be Christian, the greatest majority are deceived. They intend good. A lot of them, when you approach them about the laws of God, their minds are just cut off, they won’t hear it.

Matthew 7:12: “Therefore, everything that you would have men do to you... [This is New Testament doctrine, mind you, so you cannot say the New Testament does away with the Old, because what are you going to do with this statement?] ...so also do to them; for this is the Law and the Prophets.... [That ties in with what Paul said and what Jesus said, ‘You have to understand the Holy Writings, you have to believe Moses. If you do that, you’ll believe Christ.’] (As I read this I want you to think about the over one billion Catholics and Orthodox and probably the 100-200-million Protestants): ...Enter in through the narrow gate; for wide *is* the gate and broad *is* the way that leads to destruction and many are those who enter through it” (vs 12-13).

Aren’t people told today, ‘Well, salvation is simple. All you need to do is believe.’ Yeah, but remember this: you’re not to believe there is a God, ***you are to believe in God the Father and Jesus Christ and you are to believe God!*** What is the difference? If you ***believe God***, you will do what He says. If you believe *in* God, or believe there is a God as the demons do, *that’s not salvational*—is it? *No*, because it says ‘they fear and tremble.’

The only way to get you through the narrow gate is Christ, v 14: “For narrow *is* the gate and difficult *is* the way that leads to life, and few are those who find it.” Then He talks about false prophets and there are many warnings in it.

Let’s see then what God is going to do about it. Let’s pick up the story here, or the thread of understanding, by coming to Romans 2. As you look in the world, human nature is filled with good and evil—is that not right? Some people more good and less evil; some people more evil and less good. We know that God is going to judge everyone—don’t we? *Yes, indeed!* We know that everything that we do is recorded in the *spirit of man*, which we have. When we die, that spirit without the mind and body has no viable function unless it’s put back in a body again. One can’t function without the other. Just like I’m recording here on a digital recorder. I can’t record unless I put in a chip to record upon. And the chip is no good by itself. I could put it up on the shelf and leave it there for a thousand years and if someone would come a thousand years later and

have a machine to play it, put it in there, they would hear it—right? That’s what happens when people die. They go to the grave and are dead.

God knows everyone who has ever been, because He’s created them, He’s made them, He’s given them a special genetic code that’s unique to them. So God is keeping track of everything. Now let’s look at something here that is very important to grasp. This is one of these things in the writings of Paul that helps us understand what God is going to do with those that He has not called. Because ‘many are called, and many turn down the call. If you go to a, what you would call, a good, faithful Sunday-keeper and say, ‘Hey, come to church with me on the Sabbath.’ *Well, what kind of church is it? ‘It’s just a little church, but we study the Bible.’ Nah!* Because they have what they have in their church: they have the social affairs, they have all of these things, they’re well intended. Are they out there as desperate sinners, as robbers and crooks and murderers? *No!* Do they still have a deceitful nature? *Yes, of course!* Do they sin? *Yes, of course!* But they don’t understand the Word of God.

Let’s see how we can unravel this, Romans 2:11: “Because there is no respect of persons with God.” Does that not conflict with what we read, ‘Many are called, but few are chosen’? Is not God respecting someone somewhere along the line? This presents a problem. How do we solve that? If ‘God so loved the world that He gave His only begotten Son, that whosoever believes on Him may not perish, but may have everlasting life’—how does that square then with, ‘many are called and few are chosen’? How does that square with so many good, sincere people out there in the world who are trying their best and many of them, giving of their lives.

You look at the woman called Mother Teresa, who gave her life to the poor in India to help them, and she did. But what did the Catholic Church do? They used that as fundraisers and much of the money that they got that was raised by phone from New York City; they got millions and millions of dollars and very little went to her. It went into the coffers of the Roman Catholic Church. That wasn’t her fault. She was dedicated to her cause, but did she know God the way the Bible says we ought to know God? If she was doing that, and was a Sunday-keeper and a holiday-keeper, and the rosary, and all of this sort of thing—which is not found in the Bible—is God going to reject her? She was blinded and didn’t know any better. How can it be that ‘God is no respecter of persons’ then?

(go to the next track)

How is God going to solve the problem of blinding people? Since God is no respecter of persons (Rom. 2:11), how is He going to solve it?

Let's continue on here and we'll pick up on it and we'll get a key, which will help unlock this.

Romans 2:12: "For as many as have sinned without law shall also perish without law..." God didn't give the law to everybody in the world. He gave it to Moses to give to the children of Israel, and Israel was to take it to the world, and they didn't do that. There are a lot of people who live their lives and die; live in the society where they have been. They may have been good as far as they understood. There have been how many different kinds of societies down through all the span of history and all the human beings that have ever been?

"...and as many as have sinned within *the* Law shall be judged by *the* law." So if you know the Law and you sin, you're judged by the Law. God has given you a conscience and intends you to repent. Let's understand this: The Law judges everyone at all times everywhere, too, when you really grasp it.

Paul is coming to a point here, v 13: "Because the hearers of the law *are* not just before God, but the doers of the law shall be justified.... [What if you only have partial knowledge? What do you do then?] (Paul begins to answer the question): ...For when *the* Gentiles, which do not have the law..." (vs 13-14). Wasn't given to them.

A lot of the Gentile countries didn't have the Word of God until the Bibles were printed and distributed around the world. And how many other generations have come and gone. Think of those people down in the middle of the tropical forest in South America. People didn't even know they existed until 300 years ago, first came in contact with them. What about them? God cut them off; didn't give them understanding. How many generations have come and gone with those? How about the people that died in the Flood? Yes, they were given over to evil, that's true. Was God offering them salvation? *No!* What's going to happen to them? How about when we have war? Are innocent people killed? *Yes!* Are children killed? *Yes!* What is God going to do about them? They don't have the Law.

But notice, here's a clarifying statement, 14: "...For when *the* Gentiles, which do not have the law, practice by nature the things contained in the law..." (vs 13-14). Think about that!

I saw a special on the natives in New Guinea, and they run around naked. If you lived in that jungle you would, too, because it's hot and it's sweaty and it's humid. Another thing, too, most clothes rot because of all of that. But they enforce, 'you shall not commit adultery.' And they enforce, 'you shall not steal.' They've never seen a Bible;

they've never heard the Word of God. They've been blinded and yet they're doing some of the things that are contained in the Law.

"...these who do not have *the* Law are a law unto themselves..." (v 14). God will honor anyone who keeps the number of commandments that they know or don't know, but if they don't know and they still follow the things in the commandments, God will honor them because of it, though they're not called for salvation. Being called for salvation is a completely separate issue. God is the One Who has to call. He has to draw them. They have to repent, they have to be baptized, they have to receive the Holy Spirit in order to—in receiving the Holy Spirit—be accepted for salvation by God. That eliminates the vast majority of people. Did God create all these people in vain? What is He going to do?

Verse 15: "Who show the work of the Law written in their hearts, their consciences bearing witness, and their reasonings also, as they excuse or defend one another. In a day... [What is that day?] ...when God shall judge the secrets of men... [Because no one is going to have secret things that God does not know about.] ...by Jesus Christ, according to my gospel" (vs 15-16). What is that day? When is that going to happen?

Let's come to 1-Corinthians 15. What's going to happen to those who are truly converted and have the Spirit of God? When will they receive eternal life and how will they receive it, since the Bible says when you die you know nothing and Jesus said, 'No one has ascended into heaven except the Son of man who came down.' Also, that souls do not go to heaven: 'The soul that sins, it shall die.' You can't have any such thing as an immortal soul. There is a *spirit of man*, which we discussed earlier, which does go back to God when a person dies, but has no consciousness, because without a mind and a body it does not function.

What's going to happen to those who are converted. 1-Corinthians 15:20: "But now Christ has been raised from *the* dead; He has become the first-fruit of those who have fallen asleep. For since by man *came* death [Adam] by man [Christ] also *came the* resurrection of *the* dead.... [there's no salvation without the resurrection from the dead] ...For as **in Adam all die**, so also in Christ shall **all be made alive**.... [That doesn't say that **all shall be saved**.] ...But each in his own order... [there is an order] ...Christ the firstfruit... [He was the first raised from the dead.] ...then, those who are Christ's at His coming" (vs 20-23). That's when the first resurrection takes place. If they are Christ's, they are resurrected and receive eternal life.

What are they going to be doing after they are raised from the dead? Let's come to Revelation 20 and we will answer that question. So, before we can understand what's going to happen to all of the rest of the people, we need to understand what is going to happen to those who are in the first resurrection and receive eternal life. The real truth of the matter is this: Until the book of Revelation was written, to come to the understanding of what we are going to come to today, which we've understood for many years by the way, it could not have been understood.

Revelation 20:4: "And I saw thrones; and they that sat upon them, and judgment was given to them; and I *saw* the souls of those who had been beheaded for the testimony of Jesus, and for the Word of God, and those who did not worship the beast, or his image, and did not receive the mark in their foreheads or in their hands; and they lived and reigned with Christ a thousand years." *Those are all of those in the first resurrection.*

Let's understand this: The beast existed in various forms beginning when? *The Garden of Eden!* Did not Satan appear as a serpent? *Yes!* In the last days we're going to have the *mark of the beast*, which is another problem that we'll be confronted with, but we'll talk about it a different time.

Verse 4 talks about those who will be resurrected when Christ returns, v 5: "But **the rest of the dead...**" Who are the rest of the dead? *All of those who weren't Christ's, to be resurrected in the first resurrection!* What does the rest of the dead include? *All human beings who have lived and died and were blinded, never understood the Truth, were not called unto salvation!* In this mix, we have two categories:

1. Those who did not commit the unpardonable sin.
2. Those who committed the unpardonable sin.

The unpardonable sin, for those who commit that, we'll talk about that in a little bit, will be cast into the Lake of Fire and they will be burned up. Verse 5: "But the rest of the dead did not live again until the thousand years were completed....." So the rest of the dead wait until after the Millennial reign of the Kingdom of God. Verse 5 is parenthetical statement, because it's qualifying that not everyone's going to be in that resurrection when Christ returns.

He says, v 5 (referring back to v 4) last sentence: "...This *is* the first resurrection."

Verse 6: "Blessed and Holy is the one who has part in the first resurrection; over these the

second death has no power.... [What does this tell us? *The rest of the dead that are raised, the second death could have power over them!*] ...But they shall be priests of God and of Christ, and shall reign with Him a thousand years."

After the Millennium, when the rest of the dead are raised. {If you want to know about vs 7-10, listen to any sermon on the Last Great Day, which explains it.} Verse 11: "Then I saw a great white throne and the One Who was sitting on it, from Whose face the earth and the heaven fled away; and no place was found for them. And I saw the dead..." (vs 11-12). Who are those dead? *The rest of the dead!* Cannot be those who are in the first resurrection, because they are raised to eternal life when Christ returns. So this is the rest of the dead after the Millennium.

"...small and great, standing before God; and the books were opened... [Does that refer to understanding the Bible? *Could very well be!*] ...and another book was opened, which is *the book of Life*.... [What does this mean? *This means now they have an opportunity to have their names written in the book of Life*, because they never had it in their first life. We'll see how God is going to do that.] ...And the dead were judged out of the things written in the books, according to their works" (v 12).

If they were judged on their first life alone, before they died, because you have to have a first life; if you're raised, after you have died, that's a second life—is it not? *Yes!* In their first life since all men are sinners, if God judged them upon their sins, there would be no salvation—would there? So, these have to be the works that they do *after* they are brought back to life. There's a separate judgment for them. Let's see how Jesus explained that back here in Matthew 12. Jesus makes a differential with this. This is why if you believe in the immortality of the soul instead of the resurrection, you will never understand what's going to happen to the rest of the dead who are not raised when Christ returns.

Matthew 12:31: "Because of this, I say to you, every sin and blasphemy shall be forgiven to men... [What if you lived and died and never understood God, because you were blinded? When is sin and blasphemy forgiven? *When you repent!* Well, if you died and never had a chance to even understand it and repent of it, how's that going to be accomplished?] ...but whoever speaks against the Holy Spirit, it shall not be forgiven him, neither in this age nor the coming age" (vs 31-32). The *King James* says *coming one*. What is the *coming age* for those people? *After the thousand years were finished, the rest of the dead lived—right?* Is that another age for them? *Yes, it is!*

Let's see what else Jesus said. After they said *give us a sign*, v 39: "And He answered *and* said to them, 'A wicked and adulterous generation seeks after a sign, but no sign shall be given to it except the sign of Jonah the prophet. For just as Jonah was in the belly of the whale three days and three nights... [And that's not a day and a half, by the way.] ...in like manner the Son of man shall be in the heart of the earth three days and three nights. The men of Nineveh shall stand up in the judgment... [Now where did we read of a judgment of the rest of the dead? *Rev. 20*—right? *Yes!*] ...with this generation..." (vs 39-41). There's a 900 year separation between the men of Nineveh when Jonah went there and the generation to whom Jesus was talking to.

"...because they repented at the proclamation of Jonah; and behold, a greater than Jonah is here" (v 41). When they repented, were they granted eternal life? *No!* They were granted reprieve from the destruction of Nineveh and the invasion of armies that God was going to send as punishment against them for their sins. You can read the book of Jonah. Even the king took off his crown and his clothes and was in sackcloth and ashes and was repenting.

Even for people in the world, if they repent of their sins, will God honor that? *Yes, indeed!* What happened in history? *The destruction of Nineveh because of their repentance was deferred for 120 years!* God always honors repentance, whether it is unto salvation because of a calling of Christ, or whether it is acknowledgment of one's sin to avoid further punishment. 'Stand up' means *to be resurrected*. "...The rest of the dead lived not again until the thousand years were finished..." How are they going to live, except be resurrected?

Verse 42: "*The queen of the south shall rise up in the judgment with this generation...* [Again, over a thousand years difference in time.] ...and shall condemn it, because she came from the ends of the earth to hear the wisdom of Solomon; and behold, a greater than Solomon *is* here." This tells us that all those who *did not commit the unpardonable sin* will be raised *to a second physical life*. Obviously, they're not going to be raised to eternal life—are they? They never met any of the qualifications or the calling of God to receive eternal life. Since there are no immortal souls, and their souls aren't in heaven, they have to be raised back to another life. If that life is subject to death, it means that it is a life in the flesh, which means a second life in the flesh for a *first* opportunity for salvation.

You can study this: What is one of the proofs that we have that that's what Jesus wants and that's part of God's plan? *John 11, the resurrection of Lazarus*, whom He loved—right? He raised him

back to physical life again—right? He was dead, four days in the tomb buried—correct? Raised him back to life so that he could probably be part of the 120, receive the Holy Spirit of God so when he died again he would be able to be in the first resurrection, able to receive eternal life.

Ezekiel 37 is a very hard chapter for someone to understand if they do not have the New Testament and the book of Revelation. This is why the Jews, in rejecting the New Testament, cannot understand Ezek. 37. How are you going to have people be given salvation, given eternal life, and you're not going to live forever in the flesh? How can you understand what's going on here in Ezekiel 37 unless you first understand what we've covered leading up to it here. Ezekiel didn't understand it. Today the Jews can't understand it. The best they can do is say, 'Well, this is a prophecy of the return of Jews after the Holocaust in Europe.' Did people come back to life in the flesh again or not? *No, they didn't!* The ones who escaped were able to be there.

Let's read what it says and understand that if we put the Scripture together here a little, there a little, line upon line, compare them all together, then we can see the whole picture of what's going to happen. We saw in Matt. 12 the descendants of Judah were told that they would be raised in the judgment with the children of Nineveh and with those like the queen of Sheba—meaning *Jew and Gentile*—is that not correct? Have to be.

So what happens here in Ezekiel 37 is going to happen to everyone who ever lived and died and led, what we would call, a life that did not commit the unpardonable sin, including all of those who lived decent, honorable lives, but God never called. Or were blinded, because they did not repent, and God did not remove the blinding. Here are all of those of the children of Israel who were never given salvation, because the covenant under Moses was not unto salvation; it was unto physical blessings.

Ezekiel 37:1: "The hand of the LORD was on me, and brought me by the Spirit of the LORD and set me down in the midst of a valley, and it *was* full of bones." How do you get bones? *People die!* What do they leave? *Bones*—right? What does this tell us? *They were alive once*—right? They died.

Verse 2: "And He made me walk among them all around..." That must have been kind of eerie. Here's the whole valley full of bones. You see this every once in a while when you see it on television, the history of Holocaust, destruction, and the Pol Pot took all the heads of the people that they had slaughtered over there in Cambodia and they just racked up the skulls; same way with the Aztecs. When Cortez came, he saw the racks of skulls of those who had been killed.

“...And lo, *they were* very dry.... [Showing they’ve been dead a long time. So God has to do this in vision to teach him a lesson, which is answered (Rev. 20).] ...And He said to me, ‘Son of man, can these bones live?’... [What would you do if you were asked that question, standing out there looking at those bones?] ...And I answered, ‘O Lord GOD, You know.’ Again He said to me, ‘Prophecy to these bones, and say to them, “O dry bones, hear the Word of the LORD”’” (vs 2-4). Ezekiel didn’t rebel. He didn’t say, ‘What do you mean, Lord, how are these bones going to live again?’ No, God continued to explain to him.

Verse 5: “Thus says the Lord GOD to these bones, ‘Behold, I will cause breath to enter into you, and you shall live. And I will lay sinews on you, and will bring up flesh on you, and cover you with skin, and put breath in you, and you shall live. And you shall know that I am the LORD.’” (vs 5-6). Amazing thing—*isn’t it?* Is this a second physical life in the flesh? *Yes*, it says so, right here. “...I will lay sinews on you, and will bring up flesh on you, and cover you with skin, and put breath in you, and you shall live. And you shall know that I am the LORD.”

- What does this tell us?
- How do you really know the Lord?
- *If you’re converted and have the Spirit of God!*

This tells us these people died never having been converted. Part of those who died without knowledge that Jesus was talking about in Matt. 12.

So Ezekiel was obedient, v 7: “So I prophesied as I was commanded. And as I prophesied, there was a noise. And behold, a shaking! And the bones came together, a bone to its bone. And as I watched, behold the sinews and the flesh came upon them, and the skin covered them above. But *there was* no breath in them” (vs 7-8). Just like after God created Adam, there he was whole and complete, but he wasn’t alive yet; same thing here.

Verse 9: “And He said to me, ‘Prophecy to the wind, prophecy, son of man, and say to the wind, “Thus says the Lord GOD, ‘Come from the four winds, O breath, and breathe on these slain that they may live.’”’... [Second life in the flesh—right? *Yes!*] ...So I prophesied as He commanded me, and breath came into them, and they lived and stood on their feet, an exceedingly great army.... [Just like it says back there in Rev. 20, there were so many there was no place found for them.] ...And He said to me, ‘Son of man... [He identifies who they are—right?] ...these bones are the whole house of Israel....’” (vs 9-11). What did Jesus tell the Jews? *‘That you will be raised with the generation of the Ninevites and*

the queen of the south and stand in the judgment’—right? The whole house of Israel—remember, there were twelve tribes.

“...Behold, they say, “Our bones *are* dried and our hope is lost; we ourselves are completely cut off”” (v 11). They knew they were sinners, but they never had an opportunity for salvation. It really is fantastic, because this answers: **What is God going to do with all of these people that He never called? They’re living—**is that not correct? *Yes!*

Verse 12: “Therefore, prophecy and say to them, ‘Thus says the Lord GOD, “Behold, O My people, I will open your graves... [Meaning *they were dead and buried*—right? Even though the vision was many bones.] ...and cause you to come up out of your graves, and will bring you into the land of Israel. And you shall know that I *am* the LORD when I have opened your graves, O My people, and have brought you up out of your graves”’” (vs 12-13).

For what purpose? They already lived once, but they died without the knowledge of salvation. They died with their minds closed, although they didn’t commit the unpardonable sin. How many people out in the world commit the unpardonable sin? *Very few, indeed, very few!* But how many have had their minds opened to salvation? *Again, very few indeed!*

“And I shall put My Spirit in you...” (v 14). Meaning, an opportunity for salvation—*isn’t that correct? Yes!* Repent and be baptized and you shall receive the Holy Spirit—correct? *Yes!* Do we see signs of repentance here with these people? *Yes!* They say, “...Our bones are dried and our hope is lost and we ourselves are completely cut off” (v 11). When they’re resurrected, they’re going to say, ‘What has happened? What is this? How could this be?’ And they’re going to look around and see millions and millions and millions of people. Also they’re going to see millions and millions of *saints who were in the first resurrection*—right? They’re [the saints] going to help bring them salvation. This is going to be salvation on a mass scale, unheard of, and ***it’s going to be God who’s going to do it.***

The sons of God and all of those who enter into the Kingdom of God during the Millennium will all be there together to handle these billions and billions and billions of people down through history who lived and died and were not called unto salvation, because salvation did not really begin—with the exception of a few of the prophets, etc., from the Old Testament—until Christ came. That’s why Jesus said that their minds are closed, ***lest they should see with their eyes and hear with their ears and be converted and I would heal them.*** Here in this resurrection, which is referred to as the second

resurrection—because the first resurrection is when Christ returns—when they receive an opportunity for salvation.

Verse 13: “And you shall know that I *am* the LORD when I have opened your graves, O My people, and have brought you up out of your graves.” They’re going to understand that this is a second physical life. Just like when a person goes to the hospital and dies and is brought back to life. A lot of them after they realize that they really died and were brought back to life, change their lives. They say, ‘Boy, I’m going to change the way I’ve been living.’ Well, so are these people.

Verse 14: ““And I shall put My Spirit in you... [conversion] ...and you shall live... [Have a time to live, keep the commandments of God and show that you want salvation, which they will.] ...and I will place you in your own land. And you shall know that I the LORD have spoken it and have done it,’ says the LORD” (vs 13-14).

Quite a tremendous prophecy—isn’t it? So that answers how God is going to take care of all of this. A lot of evangelicals think, ‘Well, it’s our job to evangelize the world.’ Well, yes, we need to go out and preach the Truth and evangelize as much as we can, but it is God who calls—is it not? It is God who chooses for salvation—is it not? *Based upon repentance!* That’s why ‘many are called, and few are chosen,’ but the rest are not left out. They are not called for salvation to the first resurrection, which Hebrews says is a better resurrection.

- The first resurrection is to eternal life.
- The second resurrection is to a second physical life for the first opportunity for salvation.

The blindness will be removed, Satan will not be around, everything will be there to teach them, to help them, and so forth.

If you want to have more details about it, go online and you can download any sermon that I’ve done on the Last Great Day and that will fill in some other details for you. This is how God is going to take care of it. Quite a tremendous thing—isn’t it?

Think of this: Protestants who say that everything in the Old Testament has been fulfilled—what do they do? *They cut themselves off from the knowledge of God!* Then if you try and talk to them about it, they say, ‘Well, no one gets a second opportunity.’ What about if they never had a first? This should help clarify it and answer the question: **Lord, what are You going to do about it?**

Scriptures from *The Holy Bible In Its Original Order a Faithful Version*
by Fred R. Coulter

Scriptural References:

- 1) Revelation 12:9
- 2) 2-Corinthians 4:1-6
- 3) Isaiah 29:9-16
- 4) Matthew 13:10-12,14-17
- 5) Matthew 22:14
- 6) Luke 13:1-5
- 7) Matthew 7:12-14
- 8) Romans 2:11-16
- 9) 1-Corinthians 15:20-23
- 10) Revelation 20:4-6,11-12
- 11) Matthew 12:31-32,39-42
- 12) Ezekiel 37:1-14, 11, 13-14

Scriptures referenced, not quoted:

- Jeremiah 17:9
- Psalm 119
- Revelation 20:7-10
- John 11

Also referenced: Books:

- *Judaism :Revelation of Moses, or Religion of Men?* by Philip Neal
- *Quitting Church* by Julia Duin
- *Nothing Created Everything* by Ray Comfort

Rome's Challenge

- Can Satan tell the truth?

or

- Does he always lie?

If he tells the truth

- Why does he do it?
- What is his motive?

I am sure we are not going to cover a single Scripture we haven't covered in the past. But what we are going to cover today I think is going to absolutely amaze you; it is going to be astounding!

Revelation 12:9: "And the great dragon was cast out, the ancient serpent who is called the Devil and Satan, who is deceiving the whole world; he was cast down to the earth, and his angels were cast down with him."

The best deception is this: it is so thorough, so good, so complete and so awesome that over a period of time that when people are told it *they don't believe it! We are living in that time right now!* There are so many different conspiracies going on, there are so many things that need to happen and take place, and you can realize and understand that most of the news you see, read and hear is really not the news, it is just what *they want you to hear*. Occasionally some news gets out.

But can Satan tell the truth? *He's a slick conman!* Let's see what Jesus says about Satan:

John 8:41: "You are doing the works of your father.' Therefore, Jesus said to them... [the scribes and Pharisees], ...'If God were your Father, you would love Me, because I proceeded forth and came from God. For I have not come of Myself, but He sent Me. Why don't you understand My speech? Because you cannot *bear* to hear My words" (vs 41-43).

Something happens to people when they absorb so many lies that they can no longer hear.

Verse 44: "You are of *your* father the devil, and the lusts of your father you desire to practice. He was a murderer from *the* beginning, and has not stood in the Truth because there is no Truth in him. Whenever he speaks a lie, he is speaking from his own *self*; for he is a liar, and the father of it. And because I speak the Truth, you do not believe Me. Which *one* of you can convict Me of sin? But if I speak *the* Truth, why don't you believe Me? The one who is of God hears the words of God. For this reason you do not hear, because you are not of God" (vs 44-47).

Let's see what else Satan does. We know how he appears and we will look at that, too. There's

a reason that I'm bringing this out; we're going to cover at least one place where Satan tells the truth. Why does he tell the truth?

- *if* he is the great conspirator
- *if* he is the master liar
- *if* he is the 'father of lies,' and there is 'no truth in him'

What purpose does he have for using truth?

2 Corinthians 4:1: "Therefore, having this ministry, according as we have received mercy, we are not fainthearted. For we have personally renounced the hidden things of dishonest gain, not walking in *cunning* craftiness... [not having an agenda] ...nor handling the Word of God deceitfully..." (vs 1-2).

You *can* handle the Word of God deceitfully! Even though the Word of God is Truth, you can handle it in a deceitful way to come up with false doctrine. So, unless you are really sharp and on top of it, you can be deceived by people quoting Scripture that sounds true, but *their purpose and motive* is something else.

"...but by manifestation of the Truth, we are commending ourselves to every man's conscience before God. But if our Gospel is hidden, it is hidden to those who are perishing; in whom **the god of this age has blinded the minds of those who do not believe**, lest the light of the Gospel of the glory of Christ, Who is *the* image of God, should shine unto them" (vs 2-4).

We're going to talk a little bit later about Protestants and Sunday-keeping. This fits into them, because the light has shined, the witness has been given. Lo and behold, we're going to see that there is even a true witness from one of Satan's greatest organizations on earth to witness against them that they do not follow the Bible. It's amazing! This witness was given well over 100 years ago. So, this is going to be astounding!

2-Corinthians 11:1: "I would *that* you might bear with me in a little nonsense... [foolishness or stupidity] ...but indeed, do bear with me. For I am jealous over you with *the* jealousy of God because I have espoused you to one husband, so that I may present *you as* a chaste virgin to Christ. But I fear, lest by any means, as the serpent deceived Eve by his craftiness... [it comes subtly] ...so your minds might be corrupted from *the* simplicity that *is* in Christ. For indeed, if someone comes preaching another Jesus, whom we did not preach, or you receive a different spirit, which you did not receive, or a different Gospel, which you did not accept, you

put up with it as *something* good. But I consider myself in no way inferior to those highly **exalted so-called apostles**" (vs 1-5).

Verse 13: "For **such are false apostles**—deceitful workers..." It's interesting, we're going to see that the Roman Catholics are calling the Protestants 'deceitful workers' for keeping Sunday! This is worse than 'a kettle calling the pot black'!

"...who are transforming themselves into apostles of Christ.... [that is what Catholicism and Protestantism has done] ...And *it is* no marvel, for Satan himself transforms himself into an angel of light. Therefore, *it is* no great thing if his servants also transform themselves as ministers of righteousness—whose end shall be according to their works" (vs 13-15).

Let's look at an example where Satan told the truth. Why did he tell the truth? *Well, Satan will tell the truth if it increases his power!* When he tells the truth it is not to use it rightly, it is to use it to *increase his power!*

Matthew 4:3—the devil said to Jesus: "... 'If You are the Son of God, command that these stones become bread.' But He [Jesus] answered *and* said, 'It is written, "Man shall not live by bread alone, but by every word that proceeds out of *the* mouth of God'" (vs 3-4). That is really quite an important thing and a real testimony.

Verse 5: "Then the devil took Him to the Holy city and set Him upon the edge of the temple, and said to Him, 'If You are the Son of God, cast Yourself down; for it is written'..." (vs 5-6). We will check it and we will see that Satan quotes it fairly accurately. He adds a couple of words to it but that doesn't take away from the Truth of the Scripture.

"... 'He shall give His angels charge concerning You, and they shall bear You up in *their* hands, lest [at any time (KJV)] You strike Your foot against a stone'" (v 6). The words *at any time* were not there in the original. So, he didn't quote it 100%, but he quoted about 98%. And threw in just a little bit—*at any time*—to try and trap Jesus into believing that if He did it God was bound to help Him.

Verse 7: "Jesus said to him, 'Again, it is written, "You shall not tempt *the* Lord your God.'" Let's analyze that statement for just a minute. If you take the Scriptures and you quote them improperly, or apply them improperly though quote them correctly, you're tempting God because you are putting an application on it He never intended to be.

Psa. 91—we will see he added *at any time*. It is interesting that a lot of people go to Psa. 91 to prove that God is going to take them to a place of

safety, and it doesn't mean that at all. So, there is a misapplication of it, and a lot of them really think that they are going to go Petra. As a matter of fact one man went over there to finish off negotiations to get space at the Petra hotel.

Psalms 91:9: "Because you have made the LORD, Who is my refuge, even the Most High, your habitation, no evil shall befall you, nor shall any plague come near your dwelling... [here is the quote that Satan quoted]: **...for He shall give His angels charge over You to keep You in all your ways**" (vs 9-11). Verse 11 corresponds to the part in Matt. 4:6 "...He shall give His angels charge concerning You... [that is correct] ...to keep You in all your ways"—he left that out.

Verse 12: "They shall bear you up in their hands, lest... [*at any time*] ...you dash your foot against a stone." So, even when it was necessary to quote the truth, he couldn't bring himself to do it! It's *almost* true.

Let's see another tactic of Satan. We will see some of them used in *Rome's Challenge to the Protestants*. But the ultimate purpose of this—given over 100 years—I think was to threaten them with an inquisition. Let's look at the tactics of Satan again.

Genesis 3:1: "Now, the serpent was more cunning than any creature of the field which the LORD God had made. And he said to the woman... [here again is partial truth] ... 'Is it true that God has said, "You shall not eat of any tree of the garden?"'"

Genesis 2:16: "And the LORD God commanded the man, saying, 'You may freely eat of every tree in the garden, but you shall not eat of the Tree of *the* Knowledge of Good and Evil, for in the day that you eat of it in dying you shall surely die.'" So, Satan comes along and he has the near truth, which is a lie. This is **deceitfully handling the Word of God**—though it's not handling a Bible.

Genesis 3:2: "And the woman said to the serpent... [What is it that human beings like to do? *Always like to correct an error!* That's what he did.] ... 'We may freely eat the fruit of the trees of the garden, but of the fruit of the tree which *is* in the middle of the garden, God has *indeed* said, "You shall not eat of it, neither shall you touch it, lest you die.'" Satan has already got her going!

Verse 4: "And the serpent said to the woman, 'In dying, **you shall not surely die!**'" I'm sure that Satan knew that she wouldn't die instantly that day. You know they lived quite a few hundred years after that. But what happened was that 'the law of sin and death' entered into them. When they took of that fruit their whole nature changed, because they were not created with the flesh, they were not

created with a sinful nature. They were created with a nature that was not against God, was not for God. They had to make the choice and determination, a course that set the whole course for the whole civilization of mankind from then until now.

Verse 5—Satan continues: “For God knows that in the day you eat of it, then your eyes shall be opened...” I want you to think of the many Sunday-keeping arguments that have been given: you are free from the Law, you don't have to keep the harsh Sabbath.

“...and you shall be like God...” (v 5). Here this means *making the judgments of God*. Obviously, they didn't become as God, and they didn't become as Satan and the demons in the sense that they became like them in existence, but they became like them in thinking.

“...deciding good and evil.’ And when the woman saw that the tree *was* good for food, and that it was pleasing to the eyes... [there was a lot of covetousness; looks good] ...and a tree to be desired to make *one* wise, she took of its fruit and ate. She also gave to her husband with her, and he ate” (vs 5-6).

So, both of them sinned! A lot of people blame the woman because Eve did it, but the man was right there! And since he was to be the head, he should have said, ‘Look Eve, get away from the tree.’ But he sat right there and went along with it.

Now then, let's move with some of the things with Sunday-keeping, and let's see how they used the same kind of argument.

From *Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction: 25 Biblical Reasons Why the Christian Church Worships on Sunday* by Russell K. Tardo

Chapter 1, Jesus Rose on Sunday

In addition, church history unbiasedly records the belief of the Christians from the second century onward who observed Sunday worship because it was universally held by them that Christ rose on the first day of the week. This, too, is seemingly ignored by sabbatarians, bringing to mind the old adage, “Don't confuse me with the facts, I know what I believe.”

It is really just the opposite. He doesn't want to be confused with the facts, because he knows what he believes. Then he quotes several people concerning the first day of the week.

Chapter 4—Jesus Cancelled the Sabbath

Here is an absolute twisting and turning of

the Scriptures. You see, the Protestants are more guilty of twisting the Scriptures than the Catholics. Now, that may sound strange to you, but they are, because the Protestants insist that they follow the Bible and the follow the Bible only, whereas the Catholics are at least honest and say, ‘we follow the traditions of the fathers, and the church has the authority to impose anything it desires.’ So, at least in that they are more honest than the Protestants.

Jesus healed on the Sabbath; John 5:8: “Jesus said to him, ‘Arise, take up your bedroll and walk.’ And immediately the man was made whole; and he took up his bedroll and walked. Now, that day was a Sabbath. For this reason, the Jews said to the man who had been healed, ‘It is *the* Sabbath Day. It is not lawful for you to take up your bedroll’” (vs 8-10). The bed was a bedroll, a sleeping bag.

Verse 11: “He answered them, ‘The One Who made me whole said to me, “Take up your bedroll and walk.”’” Who is the Lord of the Sabbath? *Christ!* So, He can tell them what to do.

Verse 12: “Then they asked him, ‘Who is the One Who said to you, “Take up your bedroll and walk?”’ But the man who had been healed did not know Who it was, for Jesus had moved away, *and* a crowd was in the place. After these things, Jesus found him in the temple and said to him, ‘Behold, you have been made whole. Sin no more, so that something worse does not happen to you.’ The man went away and told the Jews that **it was Jesus Who had made him whole**. And for this cause, the Jews persecuted Jesus and sought to kill Him, because He had done these things on a Sabbath” (vs 12-16).

Isn't that an awful thing? healing someone? telling him to carry his sleeping bag? Verse 17: “But Jesus answered them, ‘My Father is working until now, and I work.’”

Now let's just talk a little bit about something that's very important.

- Does the earth still turn on the axis on the Sabbath? *Yes!*
- Does the sun still shine? *Yes!*
- Does the wind blow?
- Does the water flow?

All those things are the works of God—aren't they?

So, in the physical realm there are things going on that God created, which still go in motion and God does not stop it. That's why the silliness of the Jews, such as don't light a fire on the Sabbath is absolutely silly today. Today all you have to do is flick the switch. The argument that you can't carry a bedroll is ridiculous. That is why Jesus said ‘My Father works and I work.’ What kind of work was

done on the Sabbath? *Healing, teaching, releasing from sin!*

- the Sabbath Day sanctifies us
- the Sabbath Day brings us redemption
- the Sabbath Day brings us healing, spiritual and physical

That is a spiritual work, which is of greater consequences than the slight physical exertion to carry your bedroll.

Verse 18: “So then, on account of this *saying*, the Jews sought all the more to kill Him, not only because He had **loosed** the Sabbath...” That’s when they say that the Greek word here ‘*eluen*’—which really means *to loose*.—they say it means Jesus abrogated the Sabbath. That’s a twisting of the Scripture! He **loosed** it of the *Law of Judaism*.

“...but also *because* He had called God His own Father, making Himself equal with God” (v 18).

Now then, let’s see where Satan tells the truth. And sometimes, God even inspires it to be done. But before we go there here is God’s indictment on the false prophets.

Jeremiah 23:20: “The anger of the LORD shall not return, until He has executed and until He has performed the purposes of His heart; in the latter days you shall understand it perfectly.” In other words, you will know and understand then.

Verse 21: “I have not sent these prophets, yet, they ran; I have not spoken to them, yet, they prophesied. [to show you how important the Word of God is]: ...**But if they had stood in My counsel and had caused My people to hear My words**, then they would have turned them from their evil way and from the evil of their doings” (vs 21-22).

Protestantism did that with the exception of Sunday-keeping and society was much better. But that does not mean they were from God. That meant that they preached those words of God and people listened and people heard, so things were better.

Verse 23: “‘*Am I a God Who is near,*’ says the LORD, ‘and not a God afar off? Can anyone hide himself in secret places so that I shall not see him?’ says the LORD. ‘Do I not fill the heavens and earth?’ says the LORD” (vs 23-24).

That doesn’t mean He has no body, that He is spread out over the whole heavens and earth. That just means His power and everything that He did fills heaven and earth. **He** filled heaven and earth. It doesn’t mean He bodily fills heaven and earth.

Verse 25: “I have heard what the prophets said, who prophesy lies in My name, saying, ‘I have

dreamed, I have dreamed.’ How long shall *this* be in the heart of the prophets who prophesy lies and who are prophets of the deceit of their own heart? They scheme to cause My people to forget My name by their dreams which they tell, each one to his neighbor, as their fathers have forgotten My name for Baal. The prophet who has a dream, let him tell a dream. And he who has My Word, let him speak My Word faithfully....” (vs 25-28).

If he doesn’t speak the Word faithfully, it’s going to come crashing down on him just like it says here. We’re going to see one of the instruments that God used to make it come crashing down on the Protestants is the church they hate: the Roman Catholics.

“‘...What *is* the chaff to the wheat?’ says the LORD. ‘*Is* not My Word like a fire?’ says the LORD, ‘and like a hammer *that* breaks the rock in pieces? Therefore, behold, I *am* against the prophets who steal My words each one from his neighbor. Behold, I *am* against the prophets who use their tongues and say, “He says,” *when I did not say*”’ (vs 28-31).

That is what Russell K. Tardo did in his book *Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction*. {note sermon series Refuting Sunday-Keeping} And he keeps saying God said, when God didn’t say! And now the master harlot—you know sometimes harlots speak truth—stands up and says that God didn’t say! And they say, ‘**We** ought to know because **we** created it’!

Verse 32_[transcriber’s correction]: “‘Behold, I *am* against those who prophesy false dreams and tell them, and cause My people to go astray by their lies and by their wantonness. Yet, I did not send them nor command them; therefore, they shall not profit this people at all,’ says the LORD.”

Rome’s Challenge—It’s really quite a thing! This is public domain information. There are websites where you can get it yourself. But I am going to include this full verbatim in the Sabbath booklet, because it needs to be there {found at cbcg.org}

Rome’s Challenge to the Protestants

Why Do Protestants Keep Sunday?

Most Christians assume that Sunday is the biblically approved day of worship. The Roman Catholic Church protests, that indeed, it is not!

That is it protests the statement that Sunday is the Biblically approved day of worship.

The Roman Catholic Church itself without any Scriptural authority from God

transferred Christian worship from the Biblical Sabbath (Saturday) to Sunday...

...and that to try to argue that the change was made in the Bible is both dishonest and a denial of Catholic authority.

What they want is the authority. They will tell the truth when it increases their authority. There's another book: *There is no Salvation Outside the Roman Catholic Church*. You wait, once this thing gets enforced that is exactly what is going to happen. And if you read carefully all the ecumenical things, they do not recognize Protestant churches as churches. They are ecclesial groups.

If Protestantism wants to base its teachings only on the Bible, *it should worship on Saturday*.

Over one hundred years ago the *Catholic Mirror* ran a series of articles...

Which is what this is. The Seventh Day Adventists put out a booklet where they have *Rome's Challenge to the Protestants* in it, but you cannot copyright public domain material 100-years-old.

For example, if you write an article or a booklet and you quote the *King James Version* and you say copyright all rights reserved, well what **you** wrote is copyrighted and all rights are reserved for it, but you can't copyright the King James Version of the Bible because it is public domain.

So it is the same way with *Rome's Challenge*, this is public domain.

The Churches of God could have been privy to this information years and years ago. As we go on, this will answer the question as to why all of the admissions of the Catholics and Protestants frame around the time of the 1880s-90s and the first part of the 1900s. Remember it was in 1878 that they proclaimed the pope infallible, and they proclaimed the doctrine that Mary was bodily 'assumed' into heaven. In other words, she never saw corruption. As we get in here they are exercising a little bit of their authority.

Over one hundred years ago the *Catholic Mirror* ran a series of articles discussing **the right** of the Protestant churches to worship on Sunday—exposing their claim that the New Testament taught Sunday-keeping to be false.

Notice *the right*. We are discussing *a right*, a *privilege that is granted*.

The articles stressed that unless one was willing to accept the authority of the Catholic Church to designate the day of worship, the Christian should observe

Saturday... Those articles are presented here in their entirety.

What they do is go through and show all the places that the Lord's Day and the first day of the week are found in the Scriptures. We have already done that in the sermon series: *Refuting Sunday-Keeping*..

It shows a picture of James Cardinal Gibbons, and he is the one who wrote *The Rise and Fall of the Roman Empire*. He didn't live very long. He died at age 44 (1877-1921). Here's how the whole thing began:

FEBRUARY 24, 1893, the General Conference of Seventh-Day Adventists...

Remember the Seventh-Day Adventists came out of the Church of God, Seventh-Day over the name of the church. Church of God Seventh-Day, (1830s/1840s) wanted to retain the name Church of God, Seventh-Day. While the split off came because certain ones including Miller at that time—Ellen G. White came on the scene a little later—wanted to call it the Seventh-Day Adventist Church.

...adopted certain resolutions appealing to the government and people of the United States from the decision of the Supreme Court declaring this to be a Christian nation, and from the action of Congress in legislating upon the subject of religion, and remonstrating against the principle and all the consequences of the same.

In March 1893, the International Religious Liberty Association printed these resolutions in a tract entitled *Appeal and Remonstrance*. On receipt of one of these, the editor of the *Catholic Mirror* of Baltimore, Maryland, published a series of four editorials, which appeared in that paper September, 2, 9, 16, and 23, 1893. The *Catholic Mirror* was the official organ of Cardinal Gibbons and the Papacy in the United States.

The Catholic Mirror, Saturday, September 2, 1893—Five Cents!

After the introduction, they make some profound statements:

The Adventists, therefore, in common with Israelites, derive their belief from the Old Testament, which position is confirmed by the New Testament, indorsed fully by the life and practice of the Redeemer and His apostles' teaching of the Sacred Word for nearly a century of the Christian era.

Numerically considered, the Seventh-day Adventists form an insignificant portion of the Protestant population of the earth, but,

as the question is not one of numbers, but of truth, and right, a strict sense of justice forbids the condemnation of this little sect without a calm and unbiased investigation; this is none of our funeral.

They're saying that we're going to have *hands off* of the Seventh-Day Adventists.

The Protestant world has been, from its infancy, in the sixteenth century, in thorough accord with the Catholic Church, in keeping "holy," not Saturday, but Sunday. The discussion of the grounds that led to this unanimity of sentiment and practice of over 300 years, must help toward placing Protestantism on a solid basis in this particular, should the arguments in favor of its position overcome those furnished by the Israelites and Adventists, the Bible, the sole recognized teacher of both litigants, being the umpire and witness....

It is a rather wordy way to put it, but it's saying if it doesn't square with the Bible they're *dead ducks*.

...If however, on the other hand, the latter furnish arguments, incontrovertible by the great mass of Protestants, both cases of litigants, appealing to their common teacher, the Bible...

So, they are being a little sarcastic with the Protestants who say that they follow the Bible and 'it is our teacher alone.'

...the great body of Protestants, so far from clamoring, as they do with vigorous pertinacity for the strict keeping of Sunday, have no other [recourse] left than the admission that they have been teaching and practicing *what is Scripturally false for over three centuries*, by adopting the teaching and practice of what they have always pretended to believe an apostate church, contrary to every warrant and teaching of sacred Scripture. To add to the intensity of this Scriptural and unpardonable blunder, it involves one of the most positive and emphatic commands of God to His servant, man: "Remember the Sabbath day, to keep it holy."

You talk about 'the kettle calling the pot black.'

No Protestant living today...

That is any Protestant who is in main stream Protestantism living today

...has ever yet obeyed that command, preferring to follow the apostate church referred to... [the Catholic Church] ...than his teacher the Bible, which, from Genesis

to Revelation, *teaches no other doctrine*, should the Israelites and Seventh-day Adventists be correct. Both sides appeal to the Bible as their "infallible" teacher....

That is the Protestants saying, 'We believe in the Bible only and that's why we keep Sunday.' Hence all the false things of Russell K Tardo and his nonsensical book *Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction*.

Isn't it interesting that the ones who created Sunday as a day of worship know the difference—know the truth and understand the Scriptures—are so arrogant in their authority that they flaunt it before the Protestants. ***They call the Protestants to repent and keep the Sabbath, but they won't!*** This is amazing stuff! And to think we never knew this!

...Let the Bible decide whether Saturday or Sunday be the day enjoined by God. One of the two bodies must be wrong, and, whereas a false position on this all-important question involves terrible penalties, threatened by God Himself, against the transgressor of this "perpetual covenant," we shall enter on the discussion of the merits of the arguments wielded by both sides. Neither is the discussion of this paramount subject above the capacity of ordinary minds, nor does it involve extraordinary study. It resolves itself into a few plain questions easy of solution:

1. Which day of the week does the Bible enjoin to be kept holy?

(go to the next track)

Isn't it interesting that the conspiracy was so clever from within the Worldwide Church of God that they have gone back to Sunday-keeping? That's amazing!

2. Has the New Testament modified by precept or practice the original command?

3. Have Protestants, since the sixteenth century, obeyed the command of God by keeping "holy" the day enjoined by their infallible guide and teacher, the Bible? And if not, why not?

To the above three questions we pledge ourselves to furnish as many intelligent answers, which cannot fail to vindicate the truth and uphold the deformity of error.

Sunday as Day of Worship is Catholic Creation

1. The Christian Sabbath [Catholic Sunday], [is] the genuine offspring of the union of the Holy Spirit with the Catholic Church His spouse.

2. The claim of Protestantism to any part therein proved to be groundless, self-contradictory, and suicidal.

Isn't that amazing? Suicidal in what way? Well, they are killing themselves spiritually because they make all these silly arguments that God said and God didn't say. That God changed and God didn't change. The ones who initiated Sunday-worship, the Catholics, make it very plain. *'No, we didn't use Scripture to do it, we just did it!'* In other words, they are saying it very clearly.

The Catholics believe that salvation is within the Roman Catholic Church. So, they are saying to the Protestants, 'you are committing spiritual suicide; you have no eternal life.' Isn't that amazing?

...Protestantism recognizes no rule of faith, no teacher, save the "infallible Bible."... [solo scriptura] ...As the Catholic yields his judgment in spiritual matters implicitly, and with the unreserved confidence, to the voice of his church...

They are saying it's the voice of the church which is tradition

...so, too, the Protestant recognizes *no teacher but the Bible*. All his spirituality is derived from its teachings. It is to him the voice of God addressing him through his sole inspired teacher. It embodies his religion, his faith, and his practice. The language of Chillingworth, "*The Bible, the whole Bible, and nothing but the Bible, is the religion of Protestants,*" is only one form of the same idea multifariously convertible into other forms, such as "the Book of God," "the Charter of Our Salvation," "the Oracle of Our Christian Faith," "God's Text-Book to the race of Mankind," etc.

Now he quotes Gen 2. Let's understand something about the blessing and sanctifying of the Sabbath. Because many Protestants say, 'You read this and you don't see where there is any other day between there and Mount Sinai.' Well the truth is, this has the same exact meaning as all the rest of the creation. The creation started it: *Let there be light, let there be day and night, let the waters be separated, let the waters bring forth!*

- Do they still bring forth?
- Is it still been perpetual since then?
- *Yes!*

All of the creeping things, all of the animals, everything that God created after their kind, mankind male and female after their kind, He

blessed them and said 'to be fruitful and multiply,' and after Adam and Eve had Cain and Abel everything stopped, nobody else had anymore children. Now, that doesn't make any sense does it? *No, because the human race goes on!*

Genesis 2:1: "Thus the heavens and the earth were finished, and all the host of them. And by *the beginning of the seventh day* God finished His work, which He had made. And He rested on the seventh day from all His work, which He had made. And God blessed the seventh day... [just like He blessed all the rest of his creation] ...and sanctified it because on it He rested from all His work, which God had created and made" (vs 1-3).

This was to satisfy the seventh-day perpetually into the future; that what it was to do. The Catholics don't necessarily bring it out here in this particular case, but they go to Exo. 31 to show that it was a perpetual covenant.

I tell you what, you think about the position that the Catholics are in, knowing the Scripture, and knowing what they had done. The Protestants are in bad enough condition, but the Catholics have got to be in far worse condition because they know the Truth, they know the Bible, and yet, they mock it! That's worse! That is absolutely worse! The people in the Church of God going back to Sunday-keeping is worse! Yes that is worse, because they knew the Truth and left it. *Yes, absolutely! A perpetual covenant!*

We've covered Exo. 31 many times in both *The Holy Sabbath* and *Refuting Sunday-Keeping* sermon series.

Exodus 31:12: And the LORD spoke to Moses saying." Let's understand something concerning Moses: Moses never spoke anything on his own. God always said, 'Moses, *you* tell the children of Israel this:

Verse 13: "Speak also to the children of Israel, saying, 'Truly you shall keep My Sabbaths...'"—plural in the Hebrew and in the Greek Septuagint. For it involves not only the weekly Sabbath but the Holy Days, as well

"...for it is a sign between Me and you throughout your generations...[and the Catholics make it very clear that Sunday-keeping is the mark of *their* authority] ...to know that I am the LORD Who sanctifies you" (v 13).

So, *the Sabbath and the Holy Days keeping* "...is a sign between Me and you throughout your generations to know that you know that I am the LORD Who sanctifies you." This tells us that if you don't keep the Sabbath, *you don't know the Lord*—period! If you don't keep the Holy

Days, you don't know God or His plan. Also, the Sabbath Day because it was blessed, means that when you keep it you receive a blessing, because it was sanctified. ***You are sanctified with the Word of God!***

By the way, Sabbath-keeping requires faith! It is easy to keep Sunday. Everybody can do that. Just open the phonebook and pick a church and go; no one is going to stop you from going. But you start telling someone you are going to start keeping the Sabbath, that takes faith, because:

- you may loose your job
- you may loose your marriage
- you may loose your children
- you may loose your family

which all ties in with what Christ said will happen!

Verse 17: "It is a sign between Me and the children of Israel forever; for in six days the LORD made the heavens and the earth, and on the seventh day He rested, and was refreshed."

It is true when you keep the Sabbath you never loose sight of Who is Creator. You never loose sight of Who is the true God. The Jews lost sight of the true God when they rejected Christ! Now you have to add Christ into it. The last statement is modified by the coming of Christ. But if you believe God—Old Testament and New Testament—and you follow the Sabbath, then you **know** Him, and you do believe in creation.

I would have to say this, though, that even in spite of the fact that the Jews do not have the true God because they rejected Christ, the majority of them believe in creation, those who are religious Jews. You can't just make a blanket statement, because there are many Jews who don't believe in any God, and they do believe in evolution. As a matter of fact, there are some of the most vociferous proponents of evolution. So, they've rejected the Old Testament, as well.

Verse 16: "Therefore, the children of Israel shall keep the Sabbath, to observe the Sabbath throughout their generations *as* a perpetual covenant." Even the Catholics bring that out very clearly in this article, that it means *perpetual*.

(continuing in Rome's Challenge)

Saturday Always the Sabbath

In the Old Testament, reference is made one hundred and twenty-six times to the Sabbath, and all these texts conspire harmoniously in voicing the will of God commanding the seventh day to be kept, because God Himself *first kept it*, making it obligatory on all as "*a perpetual*

covenant." Nor can we imagine any one foolhardy enough to question the identity of Saturday with the Sabbath or seventh day...

Yet, they do it today. They say, 'Time has been lost, how are we to know which day it is? I have heard that, too.

...seeing that the people of Israel have been keeping the Saturday from the giving of the law, A.M. 2514 to A.D. 1893, a period of 3383 years. With the example of the Israelites before our eyes today, there is no historical fact better established than that referred to; viz., that the chosen people of God, the guardians of the Old Testament, the living representatives of the only divine religion hitherto, had for a period of 1490 years anterior to Christianity, preserved the weekly practice, the living tradition of the correct interpretation of the special day of the week, Saturday, to be kept "holy to the Lord," which tradition they have extended by their own practice to an additional period of 1893 years more, thus covering the full extent of the Christian dispensation.

You talk about a noose around the Protestants, that sure is one there—isn't it?

Having secured the absolute certainty the will of God as regards the day to be kept holy, from His Sacred Word, *because* He rested on that day, which day is confirmed to us by the practice of His chosen people for thousands of years, we are naturally induced to inquire *when and where* God changed the day for His worship; for it is patent to the world that a change of day has taken place, and inasmuch as no indication of such change can be found within the pages of the Old Testament, nor in the practice of the Jewish people who continue for nearly nineteen centuries of Christianity obeying the written command, we must look to the exponent of the Christian dispensation; viz., the New Testament, for the command of God canceling the old Sabbath, Saturday.

Then they show there is no Divine authority for canceling it. This is the way the Protestants do away with all of it, this is the epitome of lawlessness!

from Russell K. Tardo's book *Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction* by Russell K. Tardo:

There is no Biblical distinction between a "moral" law and a "ceremonial" law. "It must be understood that the Mosaic Law is viewed by the Scriptures as a unit.

The word Torah, 'Law', when applied to the law of Moses is always singular, although it contains 613 commandments. The same is true of the Greek word nomos in the New Testament. The division of the law of Moses into ceremonial, legal, and moral parts is convenient for the study of the different types of commandments contained within it, but it is never divided in this way by the Scriptures themselves. Neither is there any Scriptural basis for separating the Ten Commandments from the whole 613 and making only the ten perpetual. All 613 commandments are a single unit comprising the Law of Moses."

When they say that the Law is done away, they are saying *all* of the Law. **All of it!**

(continuing in Rome's Challenge)

Protestants Have Never Kept God's Sabbath

The most glaring contradiction...

Being that the Jews of old kept the Sabbath but the Christians never kept the true Sabbath, while Christ and the apostles *ever* kept it. Now compared to the Protestants:

The most glaring contradiction involving a deliberate sacrilegious rejection of a most positive precept...

They are also indicting themselves because they rejected it.

...is presented to us today in the action of the Biblical Christian world. The Bible and the Sabbath (Catholic Sunday) constitute the watchword of Protestantism; but we have demonstrated that it is *the Bible against their Sabbath* (Protestant Sunday). We have shown that no greater contradiction ever existed than their theory and practice.

Where they say, 'We believe the Bible but practice Sunday.'

We have proved that neither their Biblical ancestors nor themselves have ever kept one Sabbath day in their lives.

The Israelites and Seventh-day Adventists (and Sabbath keeping churches of God) are witnesses of their weekly desecration of the day named by God so repeatedly, and whilst they have ignored and condemned their teacher, the Bible, they have adopted a day kept by the Catholic Church.

So, you can say that all Protestants are no more than reformed Catholics; that is all they are. They are the 'grace branch' of Catholicism. This is like Balaam

and the ass, and Balaam going up to curse, but all he could do is bless. In this sense that's correct. By the way, the pope is a successor of Balaam of Pethor.

...What Protestant can, after perusing these articles, with a clear conscience, continue to disobey the command of God, enjoining Saturday to be kept, which command his teacher, the Bible, from Genesis to Revelation, records as the will of God?

Now don't ever accuse me again of being harsh on the Protestants, *please*. Not after that!

The history of the world cannot present a more stupid, self-stultifying specimen of dereliction of principle than this. The teacher demands emphatically in every page that the law of the Sabbath be observed every week, by all recognizing it as "the only infallible teacher," whilst the disciples of that teacher have not once for over three hundred years observed the divine precept!

That immense concourse of Biblical Christians, the Methodists...

That's why you had all those admissions at that time.

...have declared that the Sabbath has never been abrogated, whilst the followers of the Church of England, together with her daughter, the Episcopal Church of the United States, are committed by the twentieth article of religion, already quoted, to the ordinance that the Church cannot lawfully ordain anything "contrary to God's written word."

Yet, they do!

God's written word enjoins His worship to be observed on *Saturday* absolutely, repeatedly, and most emphatically, with a most positive threat of death to him who disobeys.

So there, take that Catholic lump and swallow it!

All the Biblical sects occupy the same self-stultifying position which no explanation can modify, much less justify.

How truly do the words of the Holy Spirit apply to this deplorable situation! "Iniquitas mentita est sibi"—"Iniquity hath lied to itself."

What a self-condemnation! This is unreal! To imagine all the years that we have been in the Church of God and we have kept the Sabbath and have written Sabbath books, booklets and articles, we never once had this available to us. And it was

available all of the time. That blows my mind! Isn't that something?

...“Iniquity hath lied to itself.”

We have had some good discussion here that since “Iniquity has lied to itself,” it won't open it's eyes to the truth.

Proposing to follow *the Bible only*...

that is Protestants

...as teacher...

Let me say two things:

1. The man who wrote *The Understandable History of the Bible* says that the *King James Version* of the Bible is perfect word-for-word the way that it is, and if the Protestants only follow the Bible.
2. Eric Jon Felps wrote the book *Vatican Assassins*, proudly proclaims that he is a Calvinist Baptist. He did a good job in exposing the Jesuits, true! But he is no more than a reformed Catholic, because they keep Sunday.

Proposing to follow *the Bible only* as teacher, yet before the world, *the sole teacher* is ignominiously thrust aside...

Don't they do that by saying that God didn't mean this, and Christ didn't mean that? *Yes!*

...and the teaching and practice of the Catholic Church—“the mother of abomination”...

They know who they are!

...when it suits their purpose so to designate her—adopted, despite the most terrible threats pronounced by God Himself against those who disobey the command, “Remember to keep holy the Sabbath.”

They have adopted the teaching and practice of the Catholic Church, in spite of the facts. That's why it is self-contradictory and suicidal that they claim to follow the Bible.

Before closing this series of articles, we beg to call the attention of our readers once more to our caption, introductory of each; viz., 1. The Christian Sabbath...

And so forth.

The first proposition needs little proof. The Catholic Church for over one thousand years before the existence of a Protestant, by virtue of her divine mission, changed the day from Saturday to Sunday.

Yet, in their own words they say that no man can change it, but ‘we changed it.’

We say by virtue of her divine mission, because He who called Himself the “Lord of the Sabbath,” endowed her with His own power to teach, “he that heareth you, heareth Me”...

What a perversion of Scripture so “iniquity is lied unto itself” again. This shows that the Catholic Church—whose god is Satan—Satan is saying here in so many words, ‘We’re going to win!’

...commanded all who believe in Him to hear her, under penalty of being placed with “heathen and publican”; and promised to be with her to the end of the world. She holds her charter as teacher from Him—a charter as infallible as perpetual [which is a lie]. The Protestant world at its birth found the Christian Sabbath [Catholic Sunday] too strongly entrenched to run counter to its existence; it was therefore placed under the necessity of acquiescing in the arrangement, thus implying the [Catholic] Church's right to change the day, for over three hundred years. The Christian Sabbath [Catholic Sunday] is therefore *to this day*, the acknowledged offspring of the Catholic Church as spouse of the Holy Ghost...

Being Satan the devil!

...without a word of remonstrance from the Protestant world.

This is strong stuff! This needs to be understood!

Let us now, however, take a glance at our second proposition, with *the Bible alone* as the teacher and guide in faith and morals. This teacher *most emphatically forbids any change in the day for paramount reasons*. The command calls for a “*perpetual covenant*.” The day commanded to be kept by the teacher *has never once been kept*, thereby developing an apostasy from an assumedly fixed principle, as self-contradictory, self-stultifying, and consequently as suicidal as it is within the power of language to express.

Nor are the limits of demoralization yet reached. Far from it. *Their pretense* for leaving the bosom of the Catholic Church was for apostasy from the truth *as taught in the written word*. They adopted the written word as their sole teacher, which they had no sooner done than they abandoned it promptly, as these articles have abundantly proved; and by a perversity as willful as

erroneous, they accept the teaching of the Catholic Church in direct opposition to the plain, unvaried, and constant teaching of their sole teacher in the most essential doctrine of their religion, thereby emphasizing the situation in what may be aptly designated "a mockery, a delusion, and a snare."

[EDITORS' NOTE (Written by Michael Scheifler)—It was upon this very point that the Reformation was condemned by the Council of Trent. The Reformers had constantly charged, as here stated, that the Catholic Church had "apostatized from the truth *as contained in the written word.*" "The written word," "The Bible and the Bible only," "Thus saith the Lord," were their constant watchwords; and "the Scripture, as in the written word, the sole standard of appeal," was the proclaimed platform of the Reformation and of Protestantism.

The long and the short of this part here is that even the Catholics thought about dumping tradition and going to the Scripture, but they didn't do it.

"The Protestants claim to stand upon the written word only. They profess to hold the Scripture alone as the standard of faith. They justify their revolt by the plea that the Church has apostatized from the written word and follows tradition. Now the Protestant claim, that they stand upon the written word only, is not true. Their profession of holding the Scripture alone as the standard of faith is false. PROOF: The written word explicitly enjoins the observance of the seventh day as the Sabbath. They do not observe the seventh day but reject it. If they do truly hold the Scripture alone as their standard, they would be observing the seventh day as is enjoined in the Scripture throughout. Yet they not only reject the observance of the Sabbath enjoined in the written word, but they have adopted and do practice the observance of Sunday, for which they have only the tradition of the Church. Consequently the claim of 'Scripture alone as the standard,' *fails*; and the doctrine of 'Scripture *and* tradition' as essential, is fully established, the Protestants themselves being judges."

By that very act they proclaimed the Catholic Church correct, which is true.

Appendix 1:

These articles are reprinted, and this leaflet is sent forth by the publishers, because it gives from an undeniable source and in no uncertain tone, the latest phase of the Sunday observance controversy, which is now, and which indeed for some time has been, not only a national question with the leading nations, but also an international question. Not that we are glad to have it so; we would that Protestants everywhere were so thoroughly consistent in profession and practice that there could be no possible room for the relations between them and Rome ever to take the shape which they have now taken.

In other words, they should never have left.

But the situation in this matter is now as it is herein set forth. There is no escaping this fact. It therefore becomes the duty of the International Religious Liberty Association to make known as widely as possible the true phase of this great question as it now stands. Not because we are pleased to have it so, but because it is so, whatever we or anybody else would or would not be pleased to have.

It is true that we have been looking for years for this question to assume precisely the attitude which it has now assumed...

Showing the patience of the Catholic Church. They wait because Satan knows if you reject part of the Truth you are going to fall into your own trap. And here the Protestants fell into their own trap, and now Satan is going to spring it on them!

...and which is so plainly set forth in this leaflet. We have told the people repeatedly, and Protestants especially, and yet more especially have we told those who were advocating Sunday laws and the recognition and legal establishment of Sunday by the United States, that in the course that was being pursued they were playing directly into the hands of Rome, and that as certainly as they succeeded, they would inevitably be called upon by Rome, and Rome in possession of power too, to render to her an account as to why Sunday should be kept. This, we have told the people for years, would surely come. And now that it *has* come, it is only our duty to make it known as widely as it lies in our power to do.

It may be asked, Why did not Rome come out as boldly as this before? Why did she wait so long? It was not for her interest to do so before....

Because the Protestants hadn't trapped themselves.

...When she should move, she desired to move with power, and power as yet she did not have....

up to that point

...But in their strenuous efforts for the national, governmental recognition and establishment of Sunday, the Protestants of the United States...

And I would have to say, I wonder how many Catholic infiltrators were in there pushing that to bring them to that point.

...were doing more for her...

the Catholic Church

...than she could possibly do for herself in the way of getting governmental power into her hands....

because it would have gone into the Catholic hands. And what do you think that George W. Bush did? He put Catholics in control of this government.

...This she well knew and therefore only waited. And now that the Protestants, in alliance with her, have accomplished the awful thing, she at once rises up in all her native arrogance and old-time spirit, and calls upon the Protestants to answer to her for their observance of Sunday. This, too, she does because she is secure in the power which the Protestants have so blindly placed in her hands. In other words, the power which the Protestants have thus put into her hands she will now use to their destruction...

And over a hundred years later, it is almost finished. You read the book, *All Roads Lead to Rome?* England is gone!

...Is any other evidence needed to show that the *Catholic Mirror* (which means the Cardinal and the Catholic Church in America) has been waiting for this, than that furnished on page 21 of this leaflet? Please turn back and look at that page, and see that quotation clipped from the New York *Herald* in 1874, and which is now brought forth thus. Does not this show plainly that that statement of the Methodist bishops, the *Mirror*, all these nineteen years, has been keeping for just such a time as this? And more than this, the Protestants will find more such things which have been so laid up...

Yes, they have, and they are coming out.

...and which will yet be used in a way that will both surprise and confound them.

They have openly declared war on Protestantism right here.

This at present is a controversy between the Catholic Church and Protestants. As such only do we reproduce these editorials of the CATHOLIC MIRROR. The points controverted are points which are claimed by Protestants as in their favor. The argument is made by the Catholic Church; the answer devolves upon those Protestants who observe Sunday, not upon us. We can truly say, "This is none of our funeral." If they do not answer, she will make their silence their confession that she is right, and will act toward them accordingly.

which they have

If they do answer, she will use against them their own words, and as occasion may demand, the power which they have put into her hands....

the Catholic Church

...So that, so far as she is concerned, whether the Protestant answer or not, it is all the same. And how she looks upon them henceforth is clearly manifested in the challenge made in the last paragraph of the reprint articles.

There is just one refuge left for the Protestants. That is to take their stand squarely and fully upon the "written word only," "the Bible and the Bible alone," and thus upon the Sabbath of the Lord. Thus acknowledging no authority but God's, wearing no sign but His (Eze. 20:12, 20), obeying His command, and shielded by His power, they shall have the victory over Rome and all her alliances, and stand upon the sea of glass, bearing the harps of God, with which their triumph shall be forever celebrated. (Revelation 18, and 15:2-4.)

It is not yet too late for Protestants to redeem themselves. Will they do it? Will they stand consistently upon the Protestant profession? Or will they still continue to occupy the "undefensible, self-contradictory, and suicidal" position of professing to be Protestants, yet standing on Catholic ground, receiving Catholic insult, and bearing Catholic condemnation? Will they indeed take the written word only, the Scripture alone, as their sole authority and their sole standard? Or will they still hold the "undefensible, self-contradictory, and suicidal" doctrine and practice of following the authority of the

Catholic Church and of wearing the sign of her authority?

In other words, they are threatened with an inquisition. That's what they are threatened with. The way I read it.

Will they keep the Sabbath of the Lord, the seventh day, according to Scripture? Or will they keep the Sunday according to the tradition of the Catholic Church?

Dear reader, which will YOU do?

Comment was made about how the Catholics put the pressure on. Since the Protestants believe in the Trinity, and that's not in the Bible, they believe in Sunday, and that's not in the Bible, then the Catholics are already saying, 'Look, the only thing that separates us is that you do not have the true sacrament of the Eucharist. So, if you get the true sacrament of the Eucharist, you can come home to Rome!'

That's what they are going to do. That's what they have done to the Worldwide Church of God. The Protestants are in bad shape, but I tell you what, those people in the Worldwide Church of God who have accepted Sunday and all these false doctrines, if you talk about anything that is self-contradictory and suicidal, *that belongs to them*, 'lock stock and barrel.' ***A double portion, because they knew better!***

All Scriptures from *The Holy Bible in Its Original Order, A Faithful Version* by Fred R. Coulter

Scriptural References:

- 1) Revelation 12:9
- 2) John 8:41-47
- 3) 2 Corinthians 4:1-4
- 4) 2 Corinthians 11:1-5, 13-15
- 5) Matthew 4:3-7
- 6) Psalm 9:9-12
- 7) Genesis 3:1
- 8) Genesis 2:16
- 9) Genesis 3:2-6
- 10) John 5:8-18
- 11) Jeremiah 23:20
- 12) Genesis 2:1-3
- 13) Exodus 31:12-13, 17, 16

Also referenced:

Books:

- *Sunday Facts and Sabbath Fiction* by Russell K. Tardo (faithfulword.com/tracts/Sunday_Facts.pdf)
- *The Rise and Fall of the Roman Empire* by James Cardinal Gibbons
- *The Understandable History of the Bible* by Samuel C. Gipp

- *Vatican Assassins* by Eric Jon Phelps
 - *All Roads Lead to Rome?* by Michael De Samlyen
- Articles: *Rome's Challenge to the Protestants*
(can be found at cbcg.org)

Sermon Series:

- *Refuting Sunday-Keeping*
- *The Holy Sabbath*

FRC:po/bo
Transcribed: 12/10/15

Christian Biblical Church of God Offices:

United States

Post Office Box 1442
Hollister, California 95024-1442

Canada

Post Office Box 125
Brockville, Ontario
K6V 5V2 Canada

Australia

GPO 1574
Sydney 2001
Australia

United Kingdom

Post Office Box 6144
Kings Langley WD4 4DY
United Kingdom

New Zealand

Post Office Box 8217
Cherrywood
Tauranga 3145
New Zealand

Republic of South Africa

Post Office Box 494
Frankfort 9830
Rep. of South Africa

La Verdad de Dios

www.laverdadedios.org
Post Office Box 831241
San Antonio, Texas 78283

www.truthofgod.org
www.churchathome.org
www.afaithfulversion.org